





# UPGRADE SPECIALIST IN ANOTHER WORLD

BOOK 08

*Endless Sea Of Clouds*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Upgrade Specialist in Another World

(异界之装备强化专家)

by

Endless Sea Of Clouds

(茫茫云海)

# Synopsis

---

Just as a gamer found an overpowered skill book called ‘Item Upgrade’ in the hottest virtual reality role-playing game on Earth, something happened to the game’s system, causing his soul to leave his body and go to another dimension. Common sense dictates that he would be born anew then become the greatest overlord of this world by making use of his advanced knowledge. Not in this case! He was already dead. Only some fragments of his soul and that skill book managed to get into that dimension and merge with an ordinary common youngster called Bai Yunfei.

This was the enormous Tianhun continent, where humans could be said to have no limits. There was a group of humans here who could cultivate the power of their own souls then control their bodies, the natural elements and even other people’s souls with that power! These special beings were called — soul cultivators. Come witness how the several fragments of the dead inter-dimensional traveler’s soul and that skill book, which was not governed by the laws of this plane, were going to help Bai Yunfei become a legendary soul cultivator and craftsman!

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Deceptioning @ [Wuxiaworld](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Book 6 - Pill Royale

# Chapter 701: Underground Chase

---

A sphere of fire was burning brightly in the otherwise pitch-dark hole to illuminate the surrounding four to five meters around it.

This place was the very bottom of the hole and was extremely far away from the surface of the earth. Bai Yunfei didn't even know just how long it had been since he first entered the hole, and to make matters even worse, all the twists and turns had caused Bai Yunfei to lose his sense of direction.

At first, Bai Yunfei thought it was a singular passageway he was chasing the tentacle down in. But the more he traveled, the more he came to realize this was actually a series of tunnel networks that branched off into multiple tunnels in complicated directions. If not for his soulsense latching onto the weak aura of the young girl, Bai Yunfei would've been lost in the tunnels.

The more he chased down the tentacle, the more grim Bai Yunfei felt about the situation.

His feet continued to take him deeper into the darkness after the unfocused aura. "What am I even chasing after, and where is it taking me....?" He muttered to himself.

Bai Yunfei was already more than well aware of how strange this area was. It was just ordinary soil around him, but at the same time there was a 'suffocating' feel to it.

He felt this type of feeling before—it was similar to when he was back in the illusion outside of the Capital!

There was an abundant amount of strange energy that was targeting his motions, senses, and even soul to hamper their max efficiency.

But the most important thing was the fact that the surrounding soil was capable of blocking soulsense from traveling through it!!

Bai Yunfei had realized then that he couldn't sense what was

going on around him! His soulsense was hardly able to spread even a hundred meters around him! Fearful that he might lose track of the enemy, Bai Yunfei hurried after them without stopping.

Everything had been far too strange since they arrived in Formagua City. With all things considered, Bai Yunfei had at least a few things figured out.

The inhabitants of Formagua City were gone somewhere unknown, causing the city to become what it was right now. And the cause of their disappearance had to be because of this ‘thing’. The countless auras in the city center was the doing of ‘that’, and even the little girl was used as bait for ‘its’ plan.

That didn’t mean to say the little girl was a fake. Bai Yunfei was definitely convinced she was an actual commoner and was actually in danger. She was just used by ‘that’ as bait to attract people like Bai Yunfei!

Whatever ‘that’ was, it was trying to avoid a battle out on the surface where it’d surely lose against any person. By dragging them underneath, the chances of victory for ‘it’ would be higher.

Or perhaps there was yet another comrade with this underground thing. Because of the strange properties of the earth, the underground thing was able to continue on with its actions unhindered. But the cause of the changes in the earth was most likely due to the actions of a second being.

.....

“Do you think you’d win against me even if we’re underground?”

Bai Yunfei snarled. Having the Cataclysmic Seal come to his side, Bai Yunfei had the fireseed inside of it melt into his own body and increase his strength!

Dual Flame Arts: ‘Coil’ Form!

Bai Yunfei knew better than to stick around and be led back to its nest to fight. The best course of action was obviously to take out



the thing right now, rescue the girl, and then leave as quickly as possible!

“Bang!!”

There was a sharp crack as Bai Yunfei’s foot kicked off against the ground. Shooting around a corner with so much force that the earth quaked, Bai Yunfei sped towards the retreating black shadow with the speed of lightning!

He didn’t attack in fear of accidentally striking the young girl somehow. Instead, he reached his right hand out to try and grab onto her and pull her away from the snake-like thing that was grabbing onto her.

Before he could even get within two meters of the young girl, three black shadows shot out from the left and right side of the girl at him!!

As it turned out, Bai Yunfei had turned the corner onto a fork in the road. With at least one tunnel on both sides of the one the shadow holding onto the girl was going through, Bai Yunfei was being attacked by the shadows in the other tunnels!

Startled, Bai Yunfei took the Cataclysmic Seal and pressed it forwards.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!!”

The three black shadows slapped onto the bubble of elemental energy around Bai Yunfei like whips of liquid. Though they weren’t strong enough to destroy the barrier, they did manage to exert enough force onto the barrier to divert Bai Yunfei into the roof of the tunnel.

“Boom!!”

There was an explosion as Bai Yunfei slammed into the roof. A large crater formed where he struck against the earth, causing dirt and stone to fall. A moment later, a crimson streak of light shot back towards the black shadow!

“It’s attacks aren’t too strong, but it’s clearly holding back too. I can’t find out just how strong this thing is, or what it even is....”

Bai Yunfei dropped the barrier after he was hit and rebounded back at the path of the shadows. Several thoughts were racing through his mind as he tried to think about the possibilities of what he was facing. Unfortunately for him, the three black shadows that attacked him were already gone from sight.

The only thing he was positive about right now was the fact that he was up against a soulbeast with an earth affinity. It had multiple tentacles just like an octopus as well, but aside from that, he wasn’t sure about anything else.

Even with this brief altercation, Bai Yunfei was moving fast enough to catch up to the shadows. In the blink of an eye, he was already back within two meters and just in time to be attacked by another two black shadows!

“Hmph!” Bai Yunfei was prepared this time. Coming to a stop for some reason, Bai Yunfei took a half step back with his right foot and clenched his right hand. Bringing it up to have the Flameblade Bracer shine, Bai Yunfei summoned a Winged Flame Blade tall enough to touch the roof of the cave.

“Whoosh!!”

The two black shadows were coming at him from two perpendicular angles now. With him at their center, the two shadows were forming an ‘X’ as they came at him.

In response, Bai Yunfei waved his right hand down to have the Flame Winged Blade shoot off down the center towards the ‘X’ attack!

“Pcht....”

There was a squelching sound as the Flame Winged Blade cut straight through the black shadows and left behind a trail of scorched earth before finally disappearing.

“Bang! Bang!”

Two black objects fell to the ground. An acrid burning smell pervaded through the tunnels as the two black shadows zipped back away from Bai Yunfei, leaving behind the tips of whatever had come forward.

“These....these really are the tentacles of an octopus!!”

At last, Bai Yunfei was finally able to see whatever those ‘black shadows’ were. He was a little surprised. Though scorched a bit, Bai Yunfei could see that the shadows were well and truly the tentacles of an octopus! He had guessed earlier that this strange beast was ‘like’ an octopus with how it had plenty of tentacles, but in the end, it really was an octopus he was dealing with!

But now wasn’t the time to be surprised about that. In the time Bai Yunfei stopped to deal with the tentacles, the little girl was already taken yet another hundred meters away. Picking up the pace, Bai Yunfei gave chase after the girl again.

“I’m here, Yunfei!”

A voice called out to him from behind. Straight afterwards, a streak of violet and green light shot through the tunnels towards Bai Yunfei. Without pausing, it flew past him to continue onwards!

# Chapter 702: Trapped

---

Xiao Qi is a class seven soulbeast. Fitted with the Wind and Lightning Feathers to accentuate his dual affinity for wind and lightning, Xiao Qi could fly faster than what Bai Yunfei could possibly hope to achieve even in his 'coil' form. Even as Xiao Qi flew, the wind pressure caused by his flight was tearing up the walls with blades like wind and leaving behind heavy scratches. Even Bai Yunfei had to bring up his arms to protect himself as Xiao Qi flew past him. As he brought his arms down, Bai Yunfei could see Xiao Qi was already nearly upon the tentacle holding onto the young girl.

“Be careful not to hurt the kid!”

Bai Yunfei communicated with Xiao Qi through their soulbond almost hastily.

“Got it.”

Xiao Qi responded as he came to a stop over the little girl. With his back practically touching the tunnel roof, Xiao Qi's entire body lit up with green light as it prepared to sever the tentacles with a blade of wind.

But somehow, the soulbeast had a seemingly infinite amount of tentacles. The surrounding tunnels trembled for a moment before three more tentacles shout out from the tunnels to strike down Xiao Qi.

“Chirp!”

Xiao Qi chirped once in response to this attack. Because of the size of the tunnel, Xiao Qi was the size of a small crane almost. Whipping his wings back and forth, the bird conjured several dozen blades of wind and scattered them everywhere.

“Pcht pcht pcht pcht....”

None of the tentacles were even able to come within half a meter

of the bird before they came apart in a gory mess of blood and flesh all around Xiao Qi.

None of the blades of wind touched upon the tentacle holding onto the young girl despite how chaotically they scattered around the place. But even despite his controlled actions, this didn't mean Xiao Qi wasn't ready to let down on his assault on the beast. Just as the tentacle holding onto the young girl was about to get any farther away, Xiao Qi's entire body lit up soulforce before sending a special blade of energy towards the tentacle.

The Spatial Edge.

This blade of nothingness wasn't meant to go directly after the tentacle. Instead, it was going at a forty-five degree downwards to sever the tentacle connecting from the main body with the tip holding onto the little girl.

The Spatial Edge came into contact with the tentacle without much trouble or noise. Without pausing after it phased through the tentacle, the Spatial Edge collided into the ground and left behind a dreadful lunar-shaped hole after it.

“Wuuuu.....”

A moment after the tentacle was severed, the tunnels all around Bai Yunfei started to tremble with sound. Even with the many tunnels there, Bai Yunfei could distinctly hear the echoing sounds of pain and anger coming from somewhere. Loose stone and dirt fell from the roof of the tunnels, making it seem like the place was ready to come apart.

Blood sprayed out from the bisected section of the tentacle in greater amounts than from when the other tentacles were hurt before. Image wise, it was as if this was a giant pipe that had burst, sending red liquid all over the place. Soon, blood covered the vast majority of the tunnel and filled the already stale air with its stench.

This tentacle was probably the manifestation of a large amount of energy from the soulbeast and was more particular than the other tentacles.

The tunnels shook for a moment before the earlier part of the tentacle disappeared into the darkness of the tunnels. The other half dropped down to the ground and squirmed a bit as if trying to drill into the ground to try to form another tunnel.

“Trying to run away?”

Bai Yunfei’s cold voice called out to it as he approached. Swinging his right hand, a red line flew out from his robes to wrap around the tentacle with a clattering sound.

“Clank.....” The red whip-like object coiled twice around the tentacle with the movement of a snake. Tightening after coiling twice, it went still long enough to be seen—links of metal as thick as one’s arms were held steadfast around the tentacle!

It was the Devouring Chains!

As if something about these chains were influencing it somehow, the tentacles began to trash around even more violently. But a dark red light was emanating through the chains and sending a large amount of energy back into Bai Yunfei’s body.

“There’s a large amount of soulforce for just one small segment of a tentacle.” Bai Yunfei remarked in surprise. Clenching his hand, he tightened the chains enough so that they would constrict even more around the tentacle.

“Bang!”

The wet sound of something being torn apart could be heard as the chains tore apart the tentacle. Since it had no bone, the tentacles looked as if it was being pushed inwards before it reached its limit and was torn apart.

This one small section of the tentacles had yet again been split into two sections.

It was near the tip of the tentacles Bai Yunfei was going for. Located not too far away from where the young girl was, the tentacle was ripped apart by the chains so it couldn't try to dig its way away. Without something to coil around, the chains loosened up and retreated back into Bai Yunfei's sleeves. Putting the weapon away, Bai Yunfei took the unconscious child into his arms.

“Time to go!”

Now that his goal was accomplished, Bai Yunfei knew what he had to do next. He didn't care to find out just what kind of soulbeast this was, he just wanted to leave this place. Even without careful observation, Bai Yunfei could tell the young girl's aura was extremely weak as if she was on the verge of losing her breath any second now. What Bai Yunfei wanted to do was to get to a safe spot where he could see what was wrong with her.

“Wuu.....wuuuuu.....”

An even louder wail of pain echoed through the tunnels again, accompanied by several heavy quakes. Almost as if a colossus of some kind was starting to stir from the earth, Bai Yunfei felt the entire area tremble violently. The bit of the tentacle trying to dig into the earth had already collapsed lifelessly onto the ground, but Bai Yunfei could sense the amount of elemental earth in the area start to churn violently.

“Boom!”

The ‘main’ tunnel Bai Yunfei was in finally started to collapse, bringing several large chunks of stone and dirt down into the middle of the tunnel!

“Damn! We're going to have to charge our way out.”

Bai Yunfei cursed to himself. There wasn't the time to go back the way he came. Looking up with the plan to break through the earth above him, Bai Yunfei leapt up.

The Cataclysmic Seal erected a barrier of around two meters wide

around Bai Yunfei and the little girl to protect them from any loose stone or dirt. Xiao Qi was already back to its normal pigeon size on Bai Yunfei's shoulder, since he was at a disadvantage if any falling stone were to hit him if he was large still.

Bai Yunfei's left arm held onto the little girl and his right hand was now free of the Devouring Chains. Looking up, he lifted his free right hand and shot out a large fireball. There was a loud explosion as the fireball tore through a good chunk of the earth around it. But moments later, the hole closed up as if healing from the damage.

“Let me try.”

Xiao Qi flew above Bai Yunfei's head in a flash and sent a blade of powerful elemental wind up to open a passageway.

But already the earth was seemingly starting to melt together with the stone. Growing thick and mucous, the tunnel felt more like a swamp of earth so when Xiao Qi's blade of wind went through it, the roof didn't crack at all. It swallowed the blade and then covered up the hole left behind by it.

“What's going on here?” Xiao Qi chirped in surprise.

Bai Yunfei stared hard at the roof and the 'liquid' seemingly moving around them with a suspicious and startled expression.

“We're....sinking.”



## Chapter 703: The Lair

---

All of the surrounding dirt was starting to turn into ‘mud’ and was also starting to churn violently as it flowed. The longer Bai Yunfei waited, the faster the mud started to flow downwards. Much to Bai Yunfei’s own surprise, the mud wasn’t the only thing flowing, he was starting to sink down with it!

Even within the barrier, Bai Yunfei felt like a bubble of air deep underwater. With all of the water flowing against him, Bai Yunfei was being battered around with the pressure of all the water on top of him trying to force Bai Yunfei and the barrier downwards!

The motions of the water and everything around Bai Yunfei would’ve sent any lesser person into motion sickness and black out. But after Bai Yunfei managed to recover from his shock, Bai Yunfei transmitted more of his soulforce into the barrier. A pulse of elemental earth was released from the barrier, stopping the water from pushing him down.

Bai Yunfei looked back to the roof with a curious light. Sending the Cataclysmic Seal back up, Bai Yunfei leapt up to try and force his way through the roof!

Before, the roof used to be as hard as stone and break apart when struck. But now that it was soft due to the surrounding liquid, the roof wasn’t exploding apart anymore. Still, Bai Yunfei was able to force his way through somehow!

Without enough strength, the current of the water flow would’ve forced any person to follow the tide. But for Bai Yunfei, who had enough strength, he could go against the ‘current’ and break free.

With Bai Yunfei’s previous act, Bai Yunfei was no longer inhibited by the downward current of the liquids in the tunnel. Like a motor going against the tide, Bai Yunfei was traversing upwards from the tunnel.

Bai Yunfei was paranoid that he'd be attacked again as he swam up the tunnels, but after several minutes of doing so, he had yet to be attacked. Aside from the current trying to force him downwards, Bai Yunfei was in no other danger.

“Is it afraid of us since we cut off one of its more special tentacles?” Bai Yunfei wondered to himself. “Doesn't matter I guess, it's best for us if that's the case. I should be back to the top in this case then? I should be safe from this mysterious soulbeast as long as I make it out from the underground.....”

He looked back up at the roof. The water around him was starting to grow lighter in color almost, and the sticky sensation he had been feeling was starting to ebb a bit. It seemed that he was getting closer to the surface.

“It was a surprising trip, but not a dangerous one....”

Bai Yunfei sighed in relief to himself.

But then Xiao Qi chirped in bewilderment, “Wait!! Yunfei! We're in trouble! We're....we're not going anywhere!”

“What?” Bai Yunfei turned his head towards Xiao Qi, unsure if he had heard correctly. “What did you say?”

“The direction! The direction's not right—we're not going up, but....”

“Blip....”

Before Xiao Qi could finish his sentence, a strange sound popped off into Bai Yunfei's ears. The area up ahead suddenly brightened up and the space around him seemed to lighten up. The pressure that previously been around him was now completely gone as well. Before he could fully comprehend the changes that was taking place, another sensation was starting to disseminate through his body....

His center of gravity!

His center of gravity changed, or perhaps it was better to say that the direction of ‘gravity’ had been suddenly altered!

It took only a split-second for him to realize he was suddenly ‘laying’ down on the ground.

The vertical direction that had been so clearly the ‘roof’ was now just horizontal to him to run parallel with his current resting position!

“What’s....what’s going on here?”

Bai Yunfei was completely shocked by the turn of events and took a moment before he was able to ‘rise’ to his feet.

Somehow, the changes that was taking place through the earth in the tunnel had done something: it managed to change the direction of gravity!

The initial torrent of liquid that previously swept Bai Yunfei up had disorientated him. Him reorientating himself by standing ‘upright’ was actually right, since the direction of gravity had changed then. Misguided by this new change in direction, Bai Yunfei traveled in the wrong direction of the tunnel to reach the center of it all without ever once being the wiser to it since he had never experienced such a thing before. Never did Bai Yunfei realize he was facing the wrong direction.

The direction he thought was ‘up’ was in fact the opposite direction of going down.

He thought he was getting close to the surface, but in reality, Bai Yunfei had been traveling in the opposite direction for a very long time.

This was a first for Bai Yunfei, he had never heard of such a thing happening before.

He had been tricked by the enemy’s plan! As surprised as he was, Bai Yunfei forced himself to calm down and held his barrier up. His soulsense was already gathering around the area to warn him

for anything.

Sweeping around the place, Bai Yunfei realized that he was inside of a body of water!

That was right—he was inside a body of ‘water’. Behind him was a body of turbid mud like the liquid he started from. Another ten meters behind that was something like an invisible barrier that prevented the mud from flowing over. And across that barrier was a body of pure liquid.

But it wasn’t ‘clear water’.

This type of liquid had a definite pigment to it.....a red pigment.

It was like a tremendous lake with liquid a deep dark red....like blood.

“What.....what is this place....?”

Bai Yunfei thought to himself in amazement. His eyes swept across the dark red liquid with his soulsense scanning the place vigilantly.

“Wuuuu.....”

Moments after his soulsense scanned the area, a heavy voice came out from the depths of the water. Then Bai Yunfei felt his soulsense be met with a powerful but murderous aura!

Simultaneously, a blue light started to shine from underneath the waters. The next thing Bai Yunfei knew, ten black shadows shot out from the waters to try and wrap around Bai Yunfei.

Bai Yunfei realized then right there with a start—this was the ‘real body’ of the mysterious soulbeast.

But from the aura he felt from the soulbeast, this was.... A peak late-stage class six soulbeast!! It was as strong as he was!!

Several tentacles as thick as his arm was already started to come for him from every direction by the time Bai Yunfei snapped back to awareness. Kicking against the water, Bai Yunfei propelled him

upwards to evade three of the closest tentacles. Another four tentacles followed before he managed to move out of the way fast enough. Circling around in the small area he was in, Bai Yunfei was able to just barely avoid most of the tentacles. But because he was holding onto the little girl still, Bai Yunfei was unable to attack the tentacles. And because Xiao Qi had never been in an ‘underwater’ battle before, Xiao Qi couldn’t think of what to do to fight.

“Bang bang....”

At last, two of the tentacles slammed against the barrier Bai Yunfei had. Like snakes, they wrapped around the barrier with amazing force and started to constrict and pull the barrier deeper into the center of the lake.

“Boom!”

There was a loud explosion from one of the tentacles as a loud spark popped out from it. In the next second, both tentacles exploded with a sizzling sound as a figure in red escaped from the tentacles and came to a stop underwater.

Completely enveloped by a bubble of elemental fire to press back the water, Bai Yunfei stared grimly at the direction ahead while Xiao Qi kept himself in a bubble next to him.

“Wuu.....”

There was another deep grumble as the tentacles writhed in the water. A mountainous thing started to rise from the depths of the water to slowly appear in front of Bai Yunfei’s eyes....

# Chapter 704: A Pool of Blood!

---

It was unknown just how deep the waters were here. There was no light down here, and visibility was very poor. The only thing that could be seen was the bright burst of elemental energy concentrated in one small area of the space. Since he was concentrating extremely hard at the task at hand, Bai Yunfei's soulsense was only four hundred meters in radius from him. But from that small area of coverage, Bai Yunfei could at least ascertain he was in a very dark red body of water.

There was a gigantic shadow rising from the depths of the water. Now just three hundred meters below the surface of the water, a circular outline of the thing could just barely be seen. A 'ball' about a hundred meters tall was visible now with two red 'slits' on one side of the sphere. As they drew closer, Bai Yunfei felt like they looked like a pair of gigantic red lanterns.

But then when he got a closer look, he realized they weren't 'lanterns', but a pair of furious red eyes!

Following the appearance of the eyes, a blue sheen of light started to emanate from the rest of the body. Thick tentacles sprung from the body one after another to form a network of tentacles.

At last, the mysterious soulbeast had finally revealed itself to Bai Yunfei.

Bai Yunfei felt his mouth drop open at the sight, "This...this really is an octopus!" He exclaimed!

That was right! Floating right in front of him was a gigantic octopus!

Animals known as octopuses are extremely rare in the Tianhun Continent. They existed only in the coastal areas of the continent, which were already quite rare compared to the rest of the

continental terrain. Only the ‘privileged’ members of the empire would even know what one was. Commoners could go their entire lives without ever once knowing what an octopus was. Even Bai Yunfei had only heard about these animals when he arrived in the Capital.

Obviously, the giant ‘octopus’ right in front of him wasn’t the little aquatic type of animal meant to be eaten. This was a soulbeast that was even more powerful than it was rare.

“An aquatic soulbeast....and with a water affinity. It sounds familiar....what is it called again?”

Bai Yunfei’s eyes flickered pensively as he thought about the compendium given to him by his master about the many soulbeasts. There were plenty of things he didn’t quite remember due to the sheer contents of it all, and he didn’t bother to read up on it after he left the Soulbeast Forest. He felt like he came across a soulbeast like this once before, but he just couldn’t put his finger on it.

Aquatic-type soulbeasts were rarer compared to the other soulbeasts, so information on them were a little limited. They had to live in the water and would become weaker if they were taken out of it. In some cases, some soulbeasts couldn’t even move. There were only a few large bodies of water in the Soulbeast Forest that could foster marine life, but other than that, aquatic soulbeasts were hard to find.

For example, there was the River Churning Rat ‘Xiao Tang’ that traveled with Hong Yin. It was a water-type soulbeast but wasn’t a ‘fish’ and didn’t have to live in water.

The rarity of an aquatic soulbeast was limited only to the Tianhun Continent, however. It was said that beyond the continent, such as the ‘Eternity Ocean’ to the south, an endless amount of water-type soulbeasts lived there.

.....

“How strange to see a water-type soulbeast like this here....and judging from before, it has a dual affinity with earth. Having two contrasting elements like that is super rare.”

Bai Yunfei thought to himself. He stared at the octopus to try and figure out what to do. “Fighting a soulbeast like this in the water is a stupid thing to do. It has an advantage in affinity over mine as well. Good thing I’ve Xiao Qi here, it shouldn’t be a problem to fight it. But aside from the octopus, it still remains to be seen if there’s anyone else....”

He wanted to leave this place at first, but now a battle was unavoidable since he was stuck here in the lair. His elemental fire was practically useless in this case, so he had to be careful and move with caution.

“Wu.....”

A low grumble came forth from the octopus’ ‘mouth’. Circles of vibrations passed through the air with such force that it was visible to the naked eye even. Water started to splash everywhere and churn violently so that some of the stones underwater started to swirl through the water, forcing Bai Yunfei to break them apart when they got too close.

“Bang!”

A beam of elemental fire shot out from Bai Yunfei’s right hand. It’s speed was slower than normal due to it being underwater, but it was still strong enough to break apart a large piece of stone. As they were sent reeling away from Bai Yunfei, a second black object was thrown at Bai Yunfei yet again.

Prepared to send this one scattering away, Bai Yunfei started to gather soulforce to his hand again. But right as he was about to fire it, he paused briefly, a surprised look etching itself onto his face.

This thing being thrown at him wasn’t a ‘stone’, but a....person!

Or actually, it was a ‘corpse’!!”



It wasn't a completely intact body either—there were bones sticking out from certain parts of it!

Ceasing his attack in favor to simply dodge it, Bai Yunfei looked back at where the body came from and focused. When his eyes adjusted to the dimness, Bai Yunfei nearly let out a gasp in shock!

There were....so many bodies here!!

As it turned out, all of the black shadows that came 'floating' up with the octopus weren't just giant boulders or botanical life. They were....corpses!

The blue energy radiating from the octopus was getting stronger and stronger. Finally, it reached a point where it was bright enough to illuminate the entire underwater area for Bai Yunfei to see clearly. Underneath the octopus wasn't just dirt, but a layer of corpses!

It was essentially a forest of white bones that covered the entire ground! The upper layers of the bones had a bit of meat to them still, and trails of blood mixing into the water could be seen coming from some parts of the flesh.

That was also when Bai Yunfei realized that when the octopus started to stir, the entire lake became even more concentrated in red light—or black.

'This....this is....'

Bai Yunfei's eyes were wide open now now that he understood what was going on. He knew why the waters was so red now. Furthermore, he also knew why there was such a pungent smell in the area.....

It was blood!!

The waters was mixed completely with blood! And the horrible odor in the air was due to the decomposing bodies in the water!

This was no lake he was in! The lake was more blood than it was

water!!

This....this was a body of 'blood'!!

Where the blood was coming from was easy enough to answer when he looked at the amount of bones. And the reason why Formagua was suddenly a ghost city was no longer a mystery. The answer was right there.....

“Bastard!!”

A myriad of emotions flashed across Bai Yunfei's face as all the puzzle pieces started to fit together. Shock, horror, denial, realization, and then.....anger!

This soulbeast had killed off an entire city! An entire city of people!

“Damn you!!!”

# Chapter 705: The First Battle Underwater

---

Bai Yunfei roared furiously, his face an extremely dark shade of anger. As his soulforce coursed through his body, Bai Yunfei took out his Fire-tipped Spear from his ring. Kicking off against the waters, he rushed towards the octopus!

“Look after the girl, Xiao Qi!”

His left hand released the young girl before he left. The Cataclysmic Seal stuck close to her and erected a barrier about a meter wide in radius to protect her within it like a bubble of air in the water.

Xiao Qi had wanted to fly forward to fight the octopus with Bai Yunfei at first. But with Bai Yunfei telling to stay behind, Xiao Qi froze up and returned to the young girl's side.

Through their soulbond, Xiao Qi was able to tell just how angry Bai Yunfei was about this situation. It wasn't as bad as the 'fury' Bai Yunfei went through back in the Capital where he lost all rational thought, but the soulbeast in front of them had well and truly angered Bai Yunfei into wanting to kill it.

It wouldn't take very long to kill the octopus if Xiao Qi and Bai Yunfei fought together. Bai Yunfei could do it himself if he went all out too though, so Xiao Qi decided to listen to him and stay behind to protect the young girl. They were in a very strange situation after all, and anything could really happen, so Xiao Qi needed to protect the young girl just in case.

Because of the sticky nature of the 'pool of blood', Bai Yunfei's movements were more sluggish than usual. Still, he was able to achieve the fast speed of a fish in water if he used the Flash Step to move. His body leaned forward. His left hand rotated in a circular fashion to have a cone-shaped burst of elemental fire form around it. Heaving the Fire-tipped Spear with him, Bai Yunfei launched himself like a torpedo towards the octopus a few hundred meters

away.

“Bang bang bang.....”

Any bodily fragment from the floating corpses were blown apart as Bai Yunfei shredded his way forward. He wasn't too concerned on their behalf since the corpses were already dead, and there was no way forward without doing so. He wouldn't be able to reach the octopus if he didn't. Killing this murderous soulbeast would resolve any grievances from the dead.

“Wuuu.....”

There was another deep grumbling from the octopus. The blood water around Bai Yunfei started to churn violently again as a gigantic tentacle shining with blue light tore through the countless bodies to come striking at Bai Yunfei!

Narrowing his eyes at the beam of light, Bai Yunfei continued onward rather than try to move to the side. His right hand clenched tightly around the Fire-tipped Spear as he spun it to stab at the tentacle. Without any fear, he moved forward to meet the tentacle head on!

"Pcht...."

There was a squishing sound as the Fire-tipped Spear stabbed into the meter-thick tentacle. It inserted itself halfway in before stopping like a needle in a pincushion before Bai Yunfei yanked the spear back out!

Before Bai Yunfei could swim around the tentacle, the tentacle froze up and started to emit a bright red light from it. Cracks traveled down the tentacle like a spiderweb, and soon, even more red light started to shine from between the cracks!

"Booom!!!"

The tentacle exploded in a muffled explosion due to the dampening properties of the water. And from within the bloody mess of tentacle flesh, Bai Yunfei came flying forward!

+10 Additional effect of the Fire-tipped Spear, activated!

"Wuuu....."

There was a pained gurgle from the octopus as its tentacle exploded. Clearly furious at its wound, the glowing-red eyes of the lantern flashed several times in response. Glaring, the octopus sent several more tentacles at Bai Yunfei from every direction!

Using the explosion of the Fire-tipped Spear on the tentacle had only been a test for Bai Yunfei. Now that he had his answer, Bai Yunfei drew away from the others. Kicking again and again against the water to swim away, Bai Yunfei dodged the incoming tentacles. Despite all the tentacles coming at him, Bai Yunfei had the advantage in that he was 'tiny' compared to the octopus. The gigantic tentacles left behind cracks in between each other whenever they tried to grab onto Bai Yunfei, and he was more than willing to swim through these cracks to escape. As diminished as the Flash Steps and the Wave Treading Steps were underwater, Bai Yunfei was still able to travel fast enough to evade the twenty-something tentacles underwater.

With each tentacle dodged, Bai Yunfei was able to progress just a little bit closer to the main body. And within ten seconds, Bai Yunfei was within a hundred meters of the octopus!

There was a considerable amount of pressure on Bai Yunfei though. Just traveling these several hundred meters had forced Bai Yunfei to use a decent amount of soulforce. Battling underwater made his elemental fire a lot weaker than they would be on land. And without replenishing his soulforce, Bai Yunfei was in a disadvantageous situation.

"Can't let this drag on any longer, I have to finish this soon!"

Focused at the task at hand, Bai Yunfei activated the Violet Soul Ring's effect. Reinvigorated by the flow of stockpiled soulforce into his body, Bai Yunfei kicked off against the waters with his right foot again. He swam forward like a scorching fireball, leaving

behind a trail of bubbles to get close to the right eye of the octopus!

“Wuuuu!!!!”

Since Bai Yunfei was taking on a different approach, the octopus did the same. Its entire body glowed bright blue again, and it was starting to gurgle, but higher pitched this time. A slit underneath the eyeballs opened up wide....was this its mouth?!

“Gurgle gurgle....”

Bubbles flowed forth from the 'mouth' in great droves. It looked like the giant body of the octopus was drawing in on itself for a moment before a dark red liquid came shooting out from its 'mouth'!

The waters around the octopus was already a very dark red from all the blood, but the liquid being spat out from the octopus was even more crimson somehow. It jettisoned through the water with even greater speed than Bai Yunfei was traveling. In the blink of an eye, it blew past the area between the octopus and Bai Yunfei and engulfed him in it.

With how fast and sudden it was, the beam of liquid was just too wide-reaching for Bai Yunfei to escape from!

Alarmed, Bai Yunfei had no other choice but to stop dead in his tracks. Looking as hard as he might, Bai Yunfei simply couldn't see anything past ten meters of him! Even worse, the liquid around him was stickier than before, making it even harder for him to even move!

That wasn't the only thing! The liquid around Bai Yunfei was seemingly corrosive to his elemental energy barrier, as it was dissolving it even more with each passing second!

As Bai Yunfei fed even more soulforce into his defenses, Bai Yunfei realized a black shadow was already coiling around him!

It was another tentacle, and a thinner one at that. It was only as thick as his legs were and didn't have a protective layering of blue

light around it. This one was a dark red color in fact, but the more important thing was that it was a lot faster than the others! And by the time Bai Yunfei realized that, it was already coiled tight around him!

”Hngh!!”

Bai Yunfei groaned in pain when it constricted onto him and felt his pupils dilate rapidly from how abrupt the attack was!

Somehow, the dark red tentacle had shattered his barrier as soon as they touched!

Its soft squishy flesh closed in upon Bai Yunfei's body, wrapping around his arms like a python constricting around its prey. There was a soft creaking sound from Bai Yunfei's body as his bones started to groan under the pressure.

Inexperienced because of the fact this was his very first underwater battle, Bai Yunfei was now in danger due to an unexpected development!

# Chapter 706: Blood Octopus

---

"Gurgle...."

The bones within Bai Yunfei's body started to creak even more as the pressure from the dark-red tentacles exerted even more pressure onto him. Even as a Soul Exalt, he was powerless to completely resist the constrictive force acting upon him. As the tentacles tightened even more around him, Bai Yunfei started to grunt with pain!

"What dreadful power....this octopus really is a peak late-stage class six soulbeast. It's even stronger than a class seven when underwater!"

Bai Yunfei's face was grim. His entire body was trembling a bit as he tried to resist the pressure on him. He gritted his teeth, trying his best to escape from the grasp of the tentacles.

But even as he was trying to gather up his soulforce, the tentacles around his body started to glow with a faint black light! Wrapped around Bai Yunfei's body, the tentacles seemingly started to bulge a bit. A crack opened up on the side of the tentacle facing Bai Yunfei, looking almost like an actual mouth!

The suction pads on the tentacle spat out a wisp of black light before they shrunk back down to their normal size to stick to Bai Yunfei!

"Urgh...."

A pained grunt erupted from Bai Yunfei's lips. For once, there was actual fear in his eyes! The soulforce he had been gathering had suddenly....disappeared!

Or in better words, drained away!

Something was acting as an absorbent force onto his body, sucking the soulforce from the many pores on his skin and draining it away!



And at the same time, the black light shining from the tentacle around him grew brighter, and the tentacle grew tighter!

Bai Yunfei realized then—this tentacle was draining his soulforce!

To add onto that, Bai Yunfei felt slightly dizzy with his soulforce being drained. His face was paling, and even his blood started to have a strange flow to it! Like his soulforce, a great amount of his blood was coming out from his body and pass his clothes to be sucked into the tentacles!

Not only was this tentacle draining soulforce, it was draining blood!

"This...." Bai Yunfei started to speak. He never thought that the octopus would be capable of something like this too!

"Damn!" Realizing his blunder, Bai Yunfei began to fight off the force acting upon him, "Xiao Qi!!" He called out.

"Chirp!!"

There was a piercing trill that sounded through even the waters from Xiao Qi. Following that trill, a series of ripples through the water could be seen bursting outwards! Xiao Qi couldn't attack the octopus with Bai Yunfei, so he did the next best thing—a soul attack!

"Wuuu....."

There was a low-sounding gurgle from the octopus. It flashed with a faint blue light several times as the soul attack started to wreck havoc on it. Just barely, Bai Yunfei could sense the tentacle around him start to loosen up under the influence of the soul attack.

But even with that soul attack....

It didn't do any significant harm to the octopus!!

"Hmph!" As surprised as he was by the octopus' might, Bai Yunfei

gritted his teeth and began to send soulforce into his Flameblade Bracer the moment he felt the tentacle loosen.

Amidst the cracks between the tentacles shined a bright red light. It shined out from where the tentacles failed to latch onto and started to burn and sizzle at the parts of the tentacle touching it. Being burnt by the light, the tentacles around Bai Yunfei started to loosen up again!

"Bang!!" At last, the tentacles could hold it no longer and were forced away from Bai Yunfei. An intense flame shot out from the right side of Bai Yunfei's arm to form a giant blade to go onwards!

"Whoosh!" The flames blossomed in the waters for only a moment before it disappeared. There was a brilliant scorch mark all over the tentacle around Bai Yunfei, expelling a dark shade of blood out from the wounds and adding to the murkiness of the water around Bai Yunfei.

"Wuuuu....." Finally, there was a distinct sound of pain from the tentacle. As if experiencing some sort of tremendous pain, the tentacle withdrew its tentacle away from Bai Yunfei.

And at the same time, another ten tentacles came forward to attack.

Bai Yunfei's breathing was a little labored. The crisis he was in a moment ago hadn't been a very painful one in the physical sense, but a great deal of soulforce and blood had been lost due to his negligence. His face was showing signs of blood loss as well, and his body was slightly red from being constricted. Thankfully, his armor had protected him to a certain degree, but the part of his robes around his arms and legs were dyed with a red tint—it was the result of the blood the octopus sprayed at him.

Taking two heavy breaths, Bai Yunfei immediately retreated away from the octopus with the Flash Steps. He dodged the several tentacles coming at him and bent his body just slightly. Both his arms came up in a cross formation as a shining blue tentacle came

forward to slam onto him. It connected with a bang, and Bai Yunfei was forced back a bit due to the blow. Though he managed to come out from the blow with only an aching pain in his arms, Bai Yunfei was helpless to stop himself from being thrust forwards!

"Bang! Bang! Bang...."

There were several colliding sounds as Bai Yunfei was sent flying back and forth like a ping pong ball from being hit by the many tentacles. Each time he was hit, there was a pained look on Bai Yunfei's face, though he managed to divert his trajectory in a 'Z' formation towards the octopus.

When another tentacle slammed painfully onto his back, Bai Yunfei felt as if his internal organs would burst. Suppressing a grunt, he gritted his teeth and shot forward. Looking ahead, Bai Yunfei's eyes caught notice of something and immediately straightened his body in response to it. Exploding with soulforce, he clenched his left fist tightly so that golden light started to emit from it, and with a powerful spin, he lashed a mighty punch onto an incoming tentacle!

"Bang!!"

Bai Yunfei's left hand practically embedded itself into the tentacle's flesh as he punched it. From where his fist touched the tentacle, there was a deep impression of it that only got deeper as time went on. Again and again, the impression grew even deeper before finally, the tentacle exploded with a bang!

Not at all caring for the extent of the damage he'd do to the octopus, Bai Yunfei borrowed the explosive power of his move to fly twenty-thirty meters away out of the 'dangerous' zone of the octopus' tentacles!

All there was left now was just fifty meters before he'd be right in front of the octopus!

The octopus had been so immersed in trying to thrash Bai Yunfei

with its tentacles that it had been almost far too late when it realized Bai Yunfei was out of the 'blood zone'. Furious, another ten tentacles came forward to try and corral Bai Yunfei back into it.

"Hmph!" Bai Yunfei sneered. He placed the Fire-tipped Spear back into his ring and crossed his arms in front of his chest again. Lighting up in a crimson-red light, Bai Yunfei's essence fireseed began to export a large amount of elemental fire from Bai Yunfei's body. Bringing out both arms in front of him, Bai Yunfei unleashed a two-meter large ball of elemental fire into the water. Like a miniature sun, the ball traveled through the waters before expanding in size when it got close to the tentacles!

"Booom!!!"

As if a volcano was erupting, there was a tremendous explosion from underneath the waters as red and blue light shot up into the air. There was a slight tint of purple light to be seen amidst the explosion, spiraling throughout the explosion like a bolt of lightning.

"Wuu!!" Came the shrill grumble of the octopus. Its gigantic frame trembled underwater for a moment before it brought its several tentacles back to its body. Most of the tentacles were charred black, and some of them had parts of their flesh blasted straight off.

With the end of the explosion, the water that had sprung up because of its force finally came falling back down. The brilliant gleam of lights from the explosion was no longer there as well. Bai Yunfei stood at the edge of where the explosion took place to stare at the mountain-sized soulbeast with a curious light. "An octopus that can suck blood and soulforce.....I think there was a deviant type called the 'blood octopus'...."

Blood octopus' were a very rare type of deviant soulbeasts. They had low intelligence but were especially prone to killing and were

supposedly said to be extinct by now. So it was surprising for Bai Yunfei to come across one here.

"What kind of person would bring a blood octopus here of all places, and what kind of goals do they have? And why haven't they shown up yet?"

Bai Yunfei swept his eyes around the area cautiously. The destruction that had been invited into Formagua City was definitely due to the hands of a soul cultivator. This blood octopus had a master. But where was this master now? After battling with the blood octopus for so long, it was suspicious that no one had come to see what was going on yet.

"Forget it. Let's just first kill the blood octopus. And if that person doesn't come then, then forget about it! Someone who can do something like this isn't any ordinary person anyways. If that person ends up being too strong, then it's only going to end up dangerous for me...."

The Fire-tipped Spear came back out into Bai Yunfei's hand. Stepping forward, Bai Yunfei shot forward like an arrow to charge at the blood octopus. As he charged forward, his left hand came forward to have the Charm Bracelet send a beam of light towards the octopus!

And in this moment, the two giant crimson eyes of the blood octopus could barely register Bai Yunfei's figure coming at it.....

.....

At this current moment within a haze of red, there was a single person sitting upon the many bones of the corpses underwater. His entire figure was shining bright red and his face couldn't be seen. It seemed that he was in the middle of training.

His entire person trembled slightly. Opening his eyes to reveal crimson-red pupils, the man looked already way too far gone into insanity.

"It's him! It's him! Bai Yunfei!! Bai Yunfei!!!" As if pumped full with adrenaline, the man started to tremble heavily. A terrifying aura started to exude out from his body, shattering the many bones into tiny fragments and dust around him!

"I'm going to kill him! I'll kill him!! Aahhhh!!!!!!!"

# Chapter 707: Boiling!

---

For once, the blood octopus looked a little agitated. Bai Yunfei coming at it from twenty meters away must've fired off its danger senses.

This was something of a rare event for the blood octopus. Back in its 'hometown', the blood octopus had been practically uncontested in strength for many hundred years. Then a few several years ago, someone amazingly strong had taken it away from its hometown to a strange new place. What came after that was a feast of magnificent proportions, and the octopus never felt better. It was living a life far better than what it had the first few hundred years of its life. Eating and gorging on the things brought to it, the octopus didn't even bother to think of anything else. All it knew was to eat and get stronger.

It knew that the person that brought it here was 'stealing' a part of the energy it was creating, but the blood octopus didn't dare say or do anything about it. The remaining energy was more than enough for it to digest. The limit it was unable to break for so many years now, the octopus was close to breaking it.

The blood octopus was happy. Even when it seemed like all the prey in the area was already corralled up and taken, even more prey would stumble into the area every so often. The people who brought it here taught it of a 'method'. A method the octopus wasn't really sure how it worked, but knew that other people would try to 'save' another human. The octopus did as it was instructed though, and it was only a matter of time before those prey were corralled up without any other problems.

The people today seemed a lot stronger than the ones from yesterday. Attacking them from underground did nothing to them. In fact, it was the only one who lost out from that brief interaction. Having lost some tentacles, the octopus tried to rely on its 'last resort' and split up the group. Thankfully, two of the people in the

group were led away and into its nest.

In the blood octopus' opinion, it was the strongest in this area. No enemy would be able to defeat it here.

Due to its cautious nature, the octopus decided it was best to focus completely on the battle here. The people in the main group on the surface could be ignored for the time being.

There was a completely terrifying factor in this current situation. This human in front of it was extremely powerful that could swim practically as fast as a fish inside of its blood pool. Even its attack with congealed blood didn't do a thing to the human. Aside from a burning sensation on its tentacles, the octopus also felt a 'tingling' feeling that it really hated.

"Wuu!!"

It gave a loud roar in indignation. Hundreds of tentacles came out from the blood octopus to try and tear the human in front of it into bits. Opening its mouth wide open, the octopus sent another torrent of blood water at Bai Yunfei!

"Again!" Bai Yunfei narrowed his eyes. He knew now just how annoying the blood water was and kicked off to ascend to higher levels of water.

The blood octopus let out another cry again. Its tentacles started to move even faster, and upon a closer look, Bai Yunfei could even see that the tentacles seemed to be....moving in a rhythmic dance for some reason!

Bai Yunfei swam several dozen meters up beyond the edge of the blood water to where the top of the blood octopus was. When he was about to turn direction and continue forward again, Bai Yunfei realized the area over his head was turning pitch-dark for some reason!

The abyss of the waters didn't have much light to begin with. The only sources of light throughout the battle were the explosions of



elemental energy from either Bai Yunfei or the blood octopus. Even without a tangible source, the elemental energy was still bright enough to light up the entire area, but not enough to light up every corner of the water. The area where Bai Yunfei was at now was an impenetrable area of darkness where no amount of elemental energy was bright enough to shine up!

But that wasn't all. Bai Yunfei soon realized this new entire area of the water was like this!

It was like a cage of darkness, and he was at its center. This feeling was just like how it was when he was in the attack of congealed blood earlier!

From the outside, it looked like a small portion of the lake was summoning all the blood in it to get ready to attack Bai Yunfei. The area around the bubble of blood was exceedingly clear and without blood.

Caught this time in the darkness caused by the blood, Bai Yunfei could feel the blood octopus concentrating all of its soulforce to try and end the battle with one final move.

"Damn!! It's so difficult to try and defeat this monster underwater!" Bai Yunfei cursed to himself. This octopus wasn't even a class seven soulbeast yet, but it was giving him as much trouble as he expected from a Soul King. He couldn't even fight with all his strength due to being underwater, so Bai Yunfei was fighting with double the handicap.

"Water.....Water....." Bai Yunfei muttered to himself. "If that's the case, then here's a strong move myself!"

The Fire-tipped Spear was put away to free up his right hand. Clenching both hands and placing them by his side, Bai Yunfei gave up the idea to run away. Flipping through several hand seals, Bai Yunfei's strength began to spike tremendously!

Dual Flame Arts: Berserk Mode and the False Soul King realm!

Now in his strongest possible state for battle, Bai Yunfei could begin to fight in earnest. Flipping through another series of hand seals, Bai Yunfei began to glow in a bright red light. A bubble of red expanded outwards from Bai Yunfei's body to evaporate the nearby water around him before traveling to both his arms!

This was....the Dual Dragon Burst!

Was he really going to use the Dual Dragon Burst underwater?!

There was the possibility that the blood octopus would dodge the Dual Dragon Burst. And even if it did hit, the Dual Dragon Burst would zap away a significant portion of his strength. In a prolonged battle like this, losing that much energy was foolhardy to do so!

But Bai Yunfei didn't have any hesitation on what he was doing. Still spiking rapidly, his energy was getting ready to launch!

"Roarr!!!"

Two gigantic dragons flew forth from Bai Yunfei's arms. Sailing out into the waters with a loud roar, they flew for the blood octopus!

"Pcht!!"

The two dragons made contact with the blood water a short moment after. Even with how fast it was traveling before, the two dragons slowed down by a decent amount afterwards.

The flames from the Dual Dragon Burst weren't made from ordinary flames, so they could exist without much trouble underwater. But the properties of the blood water were different. When one hit another, it was no longer a question of 'fire' hitting 'water', but more like 'elemental fire' vying with 'elemental water' for supremacy.

In the system of elements, the only way elemental fire could ever hope to beat elemental water was to simply have more power put into it. Or else elemental water would win.

So even after traveling just ten meters, the size of the dragons were already half of what they were before and their strength even less!

By the time it reached the blood octopus, the two dragons were only as thick as a relatively muscular thigh for the octopus to knock aside!

But then something unexpected happened when the blood octopus' tentacle tried to knock aside the Dual Dragon Burst!

"Wuu!!"

There was a miserable cry from the blood octopus shortly after it batted away the Dual Dragon Burst. The tentacle that hit it was brought back in no time at all and shrunk as if it had lost all semblance of energy in it to flop in the water! At a detailed glance, the latter half of the tentacle was a strange red color that was definitely different in color than the earlier half of it.

It was a little strange to look at, but it seemed as though the latter half had been....fried?!

The wailing from the octopus kicked up several notches as it started to writhe around in the water as if it was being assailed by an unknown danger.

All around the octopus, the water in the lake started to change somehow. The red water was starting to bubble, and there were even a few bubbles of air starting to make their way up to the surface.

The water was being....boiled!

That was right! The entirety of the lake seemed to look like it was being boiled!

Or actually, the lake was actually being boiled! There was no doubt about it!

Perhaps it was because of that fact that the blood water around

Bai Yunfei was starting to dim in color. Floating up above Bai Yunfei's head, bubbles of red and wisps of crimson started to make for the surface of the water.

Bai Yunfei's eyes were shining with excitement as he watched all of this take place. "It worked!"

This was his plan all along!

Fire might not be able to burn things in the water, but it could at least bring up the temperature and boil it!

Unlike in the air, heat wouldn't dissipate and be reduced to nothing inside the water. As poor as it was as a conductor of heat, water could still be heated up! A few degrees might not do much, but crank up the temperature just enough and even water could boil!

This entire lake was now a lake filled with boiling blood water!

# Chapter 708: Sudden Changes

---

The might of the Dual Dragon Burst was beyond strong. Under Bai Yunfei's control, he had the 'heat energy' of the Dual Dragon Burst transfer over into the water. And it worked! The water was beginning to boil!

Bai Yunfei could confirm the blood water around him already less than half than its original darkness. The pressure that had been forcing Bai Yunfei to move at sub-optimal speeds was growing less, and now Bai Yunfei could even send his soulsense to the surface of the water!

To which, there was one thing he noticed. The water level was dropping rapidly!

Somehow, the Dual Dragon Burst was evaporating a good portion of the lake water!!

Something as strange as this was actually within the realm of probability to Bai Yunfei's plans, and the Dual Dragon Burst was the key for him to put the plan into motion!! Even an early-stage Soul King wouldn't be able to export as much elemental fire as Bai Yunfei did without expending even more energy.

The boiling point of water was roughly around one hundred degrees Celsius, and that was just in the case of regular water. Special water like this had definitely a much higher boiling point. Someone on the level of a Soul Sprite would probably not be strong enough to withstand the temperature of the waters now. A great ways away, Xiao Qi was still protecting the little girl in the brick's barrier and a secondary bubble of elemental wind, else the little girl would've died a long time ago.

"Wuu!!"

There was an unprecedented level of pain and terror in the octopus' wail this time. It was still writhing around in the water

with its tentacles flying everywhere as it tried its best to shrug off the extreme heat. Never had it experienced a situation like this before. It didn't even know how to best handle the situation with its level of intelligence other than to try and use its elemental water to try and bring the temperature around it back to manageable levels.

But without the assistance of its special blood water the octopus was extremely hampered in what it could do. To make matters even worse, the panic it was in was making it even harder to control its elemental water. But with each passing second it couldn't, the temperature of the lake only grew even higher and the water levels even lower.

It took only another ten seconds before Bai Yunfei felt the pressure on him decrease by practically eighty percent. He smiled when he tilted his head up and saw the water levels significantly lower than before. Looking back to the octopus, Bai Yunfei calmed his soulforce and prepared to start the second round.

"Pcht....pcht...."

A series of bubbling sounds invaded the ears of Bai Yunfei, and the next thing he knew, the top of his head was popping out from the surface of the water. Looking up, he noticed then the starry canvas of the night skies above, followed by a kilometer wide surface area of water all around him.

There was another loud pop from a little farther away. Bai Yunfei turned his head in time to see a waterfall come pouring down from the night skies.

"Isn't this.....Mount Teapot??"

Bai Yunfei remarked. Wasn't this deluge of water coming from the 'spout' of Mount Teapot?

So they were in the back of Formagua City this entire time! The waterfall originating from Mount Teapot was crashing down into

the crater of the lake Bai Yunfei was in with a great rumble. From beyond the lake, a series of rivers was flowing into it from different areas.

Bai Yunfei scanned the environment he was in. Now that there wasn't any water to obscure his vision and nothing to stop his soulsense, he could scan the surrounding kilometer. There wasn't anyone, so that meant Bai Yunfei could focus on killing the blood octopus in front of him and then get back to the city to regroup with Zheng Kai and the others.

He was back in the air now to stand above the lake. Bai Yunfei looked down to the bloody waters, watching as the lake steamed a bloody red to enshroud the nearby area in a bloody mist.

"Xiao Qi."

Bai Yunfei spoke, still watching the giant writhing figure of bright blue down in the lake below.

"Chirp!" Xiao Qi called out in response. Wrapped in a green light, the bird flapped his wings and sent a fearsome gale through the area to sweep around the mist and allowing Bai Yunfei to see everything in the lake without distraction.

There was practically no water left in the lake. All there was was a 'block' of blood congealed black due to its age. There was also a sea of bony-white fragments at the bottom....

The sight of that of course only served to infuriate Bai Yunfei even more. Eyes like daggers, Bai Yunfei glared at the octopus.

There was something happening to the blood octopus he hadn't expected though. The hundreds of tentacles writhing about without energy was within expectations. But that the octopus was bent slightly at the side as if slightly drunk so it couldn't remain upright.

In a way, it looked kind of like a 'beached fish' that was halfway to death.

"Was it really that effective??" Bai Yunfei was slightly surprised. He hadn't thought that the blood octopus would be this easy to take care of when the blood water was all taken care of. As much of a good thing this was, Bai Yunfei hadn't much room to err still. He raised his right hand to have his palm face the octopus. Transmitting his soulforce to it, he powered up the Ardent Sun Glove and fired off a fireball three-meters large at it!

"Wuu!!" The blood octopus cried out loud. It didn't move, but it lashed out with one large tentacle to try and bash the fireball away from it.

"Booom!!!"

There was an ear-deafening explosion as the fireball exploded and reduced the octopus' tentacle to ashes.

"It really is a lot weaker now...." Bai Yunfei murmured after noticing just how weak the soulforce coming from the blood octopus was. "There's still too many tentacles to fight up close though. And with those feelers sucking up soulforce and blood, it's just not worth it. "If a close-combat battle is out of the question, then I'll just bombard it from afar and turn it into fried octopus!"

He backed up a bit to prepare for his next move. His hands moved through several hand seals with rapid speed to gather an abundant amount of elemental fire in both arms.

From the looks of it, he was going to use the Dual Dragon Burst again!

"Wuu!!!"

There was a very clearly terrified wail from the octopus. Its gigantic frame trembled violently as it tried to move away from the area. Glowing orange with light, the blood octopus lashed out with over a dozen tentacles towards Bai Yunfei. There were another hundred tentacles that drilled straight into the ground as if trying to excavate the area. Like drills, they dug at the ground in a way



that surprised Bai Yunfei with their efficiency.....

"Bang!!!!"

There was a mighty crash as the octopus suddenly flew up into the air like a bullet! Airborne, the octopus flew off into the skies to try and slam into Bai Yunfei!

It's leaping height was tall enough to shoot past even Bai Yunfei and come crashing back down like a mountain with a plethora of thorns!

Because he had been priming up the Dual Dragon Burst, Bai Yunfei lost his target for a moment and was immediately besieged by hundreds of tentacles!

Needless to say, this startled Bai Yunfei. Growing flustered for just a second, Bai Yunfei locked back onto the octopus and was right about to attack with the Dual Dragon Burst!

But the moment before he did came yet another distraction!

"Booom!!!"

There was a loud explosion from where the blood octopus jumped from. Casting his look down, Bai Yunfei saw the ground explode, sending both dirt and bone flying everywhere. A red light shot out like a beam of lightning from the storm to come straight at Bai Yunfei!

"Someone's here!!"

Bai Yunfei blanched. He hadn't thought that there really would be an enemy here, and hiding under the blood octopus no less!!

Traveling at unbelievably fast speeds, the figure was soon right in front of Bai Yunfei's eyes almost! This person's timing was impeccable, as Bai Yunfei was nearly done with aiming the Dual Dragon Burst!

"Damn!!"

He cursed to himself. Unable to cast his ultimate attack, Bai

Yunfei canceled it by disengaging his hands away from one another. As the elemental fire was still wrapped around his arms, Bai Yunfei borrowed its power to lash out with a punch at this person coming at him!

"Bang!! Crack!!"

There was a bone-cracking sound as Bai Yunfei's punch landed squarely onto the other person's stomach! The person didn't even bother to dodge!

"Keke....."

Whilst Bai Yunfei was trying to understand why this person didn't even bother dodging, a sinister croak started to play from the person. Something clasped around his right wrist before he could bring back his arm. Then Bai Yunfei felt another hand grapple onto his shoulder. Then the person began to laugh out loud right in front of his face!

Even after being hit with an Eighty-one Fold Fist Force, this person was completely unaffected by it!

When this person started to cackle with their face in front of Bai Yunfei, he could see a set of teeth sharp and pointy like a beast jutting out from their gums. Then the person.....snapped their jaw onto Bai Yunfei's throat!!

"Whoosh!!"

A gust of wind from overhead came as a black-colored tentacle came down like a sword to try and pierce his head from the top!

# Chapter 709: Who Is It?

---

“Pcht....”

The very distinct sound of teeth meeting flesh rang through the air before Bai Yunfei felt his right side start to hurt!

The two fangs of the person he was being held by had broken through his flesh and stabbed into one of his main arteries!

Bai Yunfei's face drained of blood at the pain and his pupils dilated somewhat in his surprise. Never did he think he'd be attacked with such a method!

But while he stood there in shock the enemy was already doing something else! The pain in his neck took only a second before it spread throughout to the rest of his body and brought his body to a slight sliver. Then.....like a balloon with a hole in it, blood started to flow out from the holes in his throat!

Or perhaps it was better to say that there was a strange sucking force taking place over those two holes as both his blood and soulforce was being drained out from him!!

This was the exact same sensation he felt from when the black tentacles of the blood octopus first touched him before!

It had only been a quick second when the fangs of the person he was fighting touched his throat, and it was only their fangs. Bai Yunfei shuddered to think what would've happened if the entirety of the person's teeth managed to break through his defenses and skin!

That wasn't the only thing affecting him though. From where his wrist and shoulder was being clamped, Bai Yunfei's soulforce was being drained out from those places too!

And the black tentacle from the blood octopus was still coming ever so closely to him. If Bai Yunfei didn't move, the tentacle would go straight through his head like a skewer....

“Chirp!!!!”

A loud chirp rang through the air in his moment of utter peril. A series of ripples traveled through the air with extreme speed before 'colliding' with the blood octopus! There was no physical reaction where they touched, but the blood octopus immediately came to a stop!

Xiao Qi was coming to the rescue with a soul attack!

“Bang!!”

Practically milliseconds after the blood octopus came to a stop, a sparrow-sized bolt of violet and green came bounding through the air to collide furiously with the octopus' head!

As tiny as Xiao Qi was, the colliding force enacted onto the octopus was still dreadful to behold. The part where the octopus was hit curled inwards a bit before the octopus was sent trailing away with a wind trail following it!

“Arghh!!”

Bai Yunfei howled in anger when he realized his momentary crisis was over. Gritting his teeth and allowing his eyes to bleed over with rage, he redirected his soulforce into his Charm Bracelet to emit a soft glow from it!

It was a pseudo-soul attack!

Though it was primarily aimed at the blood octopus, the soul attack managed to affect the person holding on Bai Yunfei as well. The fangs sucking on Bai Yunfei's throat paused for a moment before Bai Yunfei burst forth with a tremendous amount of power. The Charm Bracelet was beginning to pulsate wildly with light before it sent an incorporeal blade of light into the other person's head!

“Hmph!!”

There was a guttural growl from the fanged person's mouth as

the soul attack took hold. Bai Yunfei felt the pressure around his wrist and shoulder loosen just enough to step back and lash out with a vicious kick onto the person's throat!

“Bang!”

The two were thrust apart from one another when the kick landed. Holding a hand to his throat as he fled, Bai Yunfei widened the distance between him and the other person by a hundred meters.

It took only a sparse two seconds for Xiao Qi to knock the blood octopus away and Bai Yunfei to disentangle himself from the other person. Xiao Qi let out a chirp of relief when he saw Bai Yunfei escape before going after the blood octopus again.

“Whew.....whew....”

Bai Yunfei breathed in and out laboriously. Sweat drops were forming on his forehead as he pressed a hand to his throat. His face was abnormally pale.

“Soul....Refining....School!!”

Bai Yunfei spat out the three words with great indignation. This sinister way of stealing soulforce from their enemies was even more dangerous than the previous methods Bai Yunfei came across before in his life!

How long had Bai Yunfei been stuck to the other person? A mere three seconds, but in those three seconds, Bai Yunfei had at least a tenth of his soulforce and blood taken straight out from his body!

It was only natural for Bai Yunfei to assume this person was from the Soul Refining School with how they were able to drain soulforce. But a method of draining soulforce like that was completely unheard-of by Bai Yunfei.

“A peak late-stage Soul Exalt.....Is this person the one behind the blood octopus?? That's weird, even if the blood octopus was hiding their soulforce, I should've been able to sense their aura a lot

sooner than this....

“And judging from their aura.....this person's just like the blood octopus, are they both about to become Soul Kings?? Is that the reason? Is that why Formagua City was turned into a ghost city? So they could use a dastardly method like this to become Soul Kings?!”

Bai Yunfei was thinking to himself as he waited for the wound on his throat to heal. He did notice that the aura of the other person seemed to be fluctuating wildly as if unsettled. The other person was shining a dark red color to match with their blood-red robes, making them look as though they were blood-soaked. Even the bloody-stench of death could be smelt from their person.

“Eh?”

Bai Yunfei blinked. He had heard something just now. The other person was mumbling something just barely audible enough for him to pick up on.

“Bai....Bai....Bai Yunfei.....Bai Yunfei! Bai YUNFEI! Ahhhh!!!”

As Bai Yunfei was trying to hear what was being said, he suddenly realized that it was actually his name being spoken!!

“Bai Yunfei! I'm....I'm going to kill....kill.....kill you! Die! Die! Die!!”

The person threw their head backwards to scream out to the heavens. Stooping back down, the person kicked off against the sky with such force there was a ripple of wind in the air to come flying at Bai Yunfei!

“He knows me? Who is he??” Bai Yunfei was taken aback at the resentment this person seemingly had for him. The next thing he saw as a blur of light before he had to throw up both arms in front of him to protect himself. There was a clang of metal hitting metal and sparks flying everywhere before he was forced back several dozen meters.

The robes on his left arm were torn apart by something and his Flameblade Bracer had three white marks on it as if struck by an intense source of heat.

Bai Yunfei looked up. The other person was only just steadying themselves when Bai Yunfei honed in onto their right arm with his eyes. There was a dark-red glove made of metal on it, and jutting out from the spot above the knuckles were blades as sharp and cold as steel.

If it weren't for his Flameblade Bracer, Bai Yunfei probably would've lost his hand in that exchange.

“Kill! I'll kill you....Bai Yunfei! Die!!”

The other person garbled again. Eyes as furious as anything Bai Yunfei had ever seen before stared him down before the person started to go through a series of hand seals!

“Hand seals!” Bai Yunfei's eyes widened in shock. The usage of hand seals meant only one thing: there was a soul skill about to come into play!

“Pcht!!”

But then just a second later, the person spat out a mouthful of blood as if they were seriously harmed by something!

Before Bai Yunfei could even gather his thoughts on this latest development, the blood coming out from the other person's mouth was already disseminating through the air. Turning into a bloody mist, the blood spread to around the other person's being and started to shine red with light as if it was starting to become alive!

“This....this is....”

Bai Yunfei had no words to say almost as he watched the sight. The mist of blood had already formed a sphere around the man and continuing to grow in size with each passing moment. Before long, the sphere of blood had turned into a gigantic humanoid figure about ten meters tall!!

# Chapter 710: Blood Construct

---

“What kind of soul skill is this?!”

Bai Yunfei just had to scream when he saw the gigantic figure of blood in front of him. Never had he heard of such a soul skill before, and the appearance of a being like this was huge shock to his person.

The blood that came out from the other person had formed the upper half of a person about ten meters tall. The head and arms were the most distinguishable points to the blood construct, and only two bright red 'eyes' were formed on its 'face' as it stared Bai Yunfei down.

“Die!!”

It took less time for the blood construct to actually form than for Bai Yunfei to actually react to it. As he was standing there still, the blood-red robed person was already taking action. Brandishing their right arm, the person came flying at Bai Yunfei again!

There was something strange to the motions of the arm though. It looked as if the person was holding something that'd bisect Bai Yunfei in two from the waist across, but Bai Yunfei couldn't even see any elemental energy or soulforce forming there. But the more important thing was the blood construct above the person!

“Crash!”

At the same time the person was moving, the blood construct above their head was also....doing the exact same thing the person was doing!

But instead of being 'weaponless' like its master, there was definitely 'something' in the construct's 'hand'. The blood around the area was squirming and changing itself to elongate and form a crimson-red scythe about ten meters in length!!

The 'arm' was now the 'shaft' for the scythe, and the 'hand' was



the blade with a curved edge about four meters in width!

A being made of blood with a gigantic scythe.... This looked like the reaper of death himself!

Wielding the giant scythe, the construct swung it down with sickening speed to have it try to cut off Bai Yunfei's left shoulder!

Bai Yunfei right now was in a state of power almost equivalent to that of a Soul King. But there were a set of factors that made even that difference in skill slightly insignificant. The soul skill formed far too fast and was moving quicker than he thought. The other person was coming at him as well, so Bai Yunfei had to keep an eye on that. And Bai Yunfei had just never thought that the two would attack in such a way!

He leapt back with his left arm going up over his head to protect it from the incoming attack from above.

“Whoosh!!”

But in a completely strange twist, the blood scythe had....phased through Bai Yunfei's arm rather than be stopped by it!

This slash was completely out from left field. There had been no stoppage and no resistance when the scythe went past his arm. It continued onward through his left shoulder before through and out from the right side of his waist!

“Ahhh!!!”

There was a loud scream just a moment after the scythe came out!

It was from Bai Yunfei!!

He was still running backwards in an attempt to retreat from the other person and blood construct, but his hands were pressed to both sides of his temples and his eyes were wide-open as he screamed. His face was ashen-white as if he was experiencing an excruciating amount of pain!

It was a pain that Bai Yunfei had practically no tolerance for. It was also an injury that left no physical marking on his person. That meant only one thing. It was an attack onto his soul!

At that moment the scythe went through his body, his soul was experiencing the pain of what it felt like to be cut apart by a blade!

“Bzzz.....”

A soft humming sound started to play out in the depths of Bai Yunfei's mindspace and comfort his soul, decreasing the amount of pain he was feeling. It was also flowing through his body like a spring to rejuvenate his soul back to its normal condition.

The Soul Sentinel Scarf!!

Equipment Effect 1: Decrease damage taken by all spirit-related attacks by 50%.  
Equipment Effect 2: 200% Increase in healing from damage done to the soul.

“Whew....whew....whew....”

Like a fountain himself, Bai Yunfei was gasping for air. All over his body, sweatdrops started to formulate and cascade down from his face and back. When he was 'cut' by that scythe, Bai Yunfei felt as if his soul would've been extinguished if not for the Soul Sentinel Scarf!

As expected, this soul attack was a terrifyingly powerful one! The other person was only a peak late-stage Soul Exalt, but the soul attack was enough to kill even an early-stage Soul King!

“What a powerful soul skill.....I can't let them do that again!”

It took a second for Bai Yunfei to regain the right mindset for battle. As shocked as he was by the appearance and effects of the blood skill, Bai Yunfei couldn't afford to slack off again. Gritting his teeth, he waved his left hand towards the enemy!

“Hmph!!”

There was a sneer as he activated the Charm Bracelet. As the

bracelet activated, the Soul Sentinel Scarf on his head pulsed with light as well.

His actions were identical to what the other person did a moment before. The only difference was that the gigantic blood construct above the other person's head obviously didn't move with Bai Yunfei. But there was one other similarity, and that was in the aftermath!!

“Ahh!!”

Another loud roar erupted into the air, but this time.... It was coming from the mouth of the enemy!

A change was already starting to take place over in the body of the blood-red person. The person looked a little scrawnier than before now, and the aura was a lot weaker than what it was before they used the soul skill. Even the blood construct above their head was looking a lot more faint than before. The attack the two just did took a large amount of energy, it seemed, but that was of no importance to the person. The person was happy that the move even connected. The soul skill used was one the person normally liked to employ. The person hadn't expected Bai Yunfei to be hit by it, but since it did, the person fully expected Bai Yunfei to be without a life sooner or later, and his soul would be completely vanquished!

However! Just two seconds after the scythe finished its motions through Bai Yunfei, the other person saw Bai Yunfei lift his hand up towards them. A sharp piercing pain stabbed straight through their head and into their soul the very next moment!

Just like how Bai Yunfei didn't expect to be hit by that soul attack, the other person didn't expect Bai Yunfei to survive the encounter and counterattack with a soul attack of his own!

Those who weren't as strong as Soul Kings were essentially defenseless when struck by a soul attack. The only thing they could do when hit by one of those was to simply scream out in pain!

The gigantic blood construct over the person's head looked like it was in pain as well! Writhing about, the construct looked as though it was on the verge of fading away from sight.

Even a peak late-stage Soul Exalt would be rendered incapable for battle in that one moment when hit by the soul attack of Bai Yunfei. But the figure in red was no ordinary soul cultivator. The person screamed for another two seconds before they recomposed themselves. Their aura was nearly half of what it was before, but the person could fight! The person had managed to ward off Bai Yunfei's soul attack!

“Bang bang bang bang.....”

Yet while the person had only managed to recuperate from the soul attack of Bai Yunfei, a series of popping sounds snapped the person to attention. At some point, Bai Yunfei had pulled out two strange soul armaments in front of himself to fire off a series of pellets of elemental energy!

The person's pupils dilated at the sight. Leaping backwards, the person waved their right hand in front of their face to protect them from the incoming fire.

“Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang.....”

In the next moment, nearly a dozen bullets of violet energy exploded onto the person!

# Chapter 711: The Final Strategy

---

The pseudo-soul attack took a lot out of Bai Yunfei in his injured state, so it took him a second for him to catch his breath. Instead of getting up close to the enemy after the soul attack with his Fire-tipped Spear, he instead took out the Desert Eagles.

He fired six bullets from each gun first. And since the enemy was so startled by the soul attack, they hadn't enough time to make it away from danger before the twelve bullets broke past their defenses and exploded on contact.

It was a cacophony of explosions as the bullets exploded one after another. There were a few that didn't manage to hit the person, but at least seven or eight of them managed to make contact. Two bullets crashed into the metallic glove the person was wearing and was deflected aside while the others exploded on the other parts of the person's body. But none of them managed to pierce into their chest!

The blood-red robes of the person was burnt away in those spots where the bullet collided, revealing a dirt-gold plate of armor!

“Tsk!!”

Bai Yunfei clicked his tongue in disappointment. A strong soul cultivator like that would obviously have some defensive type of armor, and the Desert Eagles weren't nearly strong enough by themselves to pierce through the armor of what a peak late-stage Soul Exalt might wear.

But his attack wasn't without profit. The chest might've been protected by this piece of armor, but their thighs weren't. A fire bullet had only managed to create a superficial wound onto the left thigh, but a lightning bullet had managed to fire straight through the right thigh!

+10 Additional Effect: 8% Chance to fire a bullet twice as fast and strong.

---

“Urgh!”

The person grunted in pain as they took one staggered step behind. Their soulforce was looking a little disturbed, and before they could recover, a single spear was already coming up to stab them through the head!

Taking advantage of his small victories, Bai Yunfei replaced the Desert Eagles with the Fire-tipped Spear to chase down the person!

The other person had still their right arm in front of their head to protect them from the bullets when Bai Yunfei came forward. Eyes realizing the danger, the person used that hand to try to knock away the Fire-tipped Spear.

“Clang!!”

There was a spark of fire as the Fire-tipped Spear scratched onto the palm of the glove. Before the other person could relax, another two Fire-tipped Spears came at their heart and throat!

+12 Additional effect of the Fire-tipped Spear: Doppelganger!

Left with hardly any time to relax, the other person swung their right hand down to try to bring the spear he had just deflected down onto the other spears!!

As the spear came down, it scratched and left behind a bloody line onto the person's front.

The fact that the person was able to avoid the two potentially fatal blows with one swing of the spear was a testament to how fast the person was. But.....there wasn't only two spears to dodge, but three!

The two spears he managed to stop had only been doppelgangers and not the real ones! The real spear was the one that was coming for his heart!

“Clang! Pcht!”

There was a metallic clang, and then, the squelching noise of

flesh being penetrated!

The Fire-tipped Spear was a spear that even an early-heaven tier soul armament wouldn't be able to defend against. In other words, the armor the blood-robed person was wearing wouldn't be nearly enough to stop the Fire-tipped Spear. Helpless, the person could only watch as the spear stabbed five inches deep into their chest!

But it wasn't through the heart where the spear was going into, but the left shoulder! The person had been able to dodge at the very last moment to prevent the spear from being a fatal one.

The person was lucky in yet another way: the Fire-tipped Spear's additional effect hadn't activated either!

Disappointment bled in Bai Yunfei's mind for a moment, though he continued on with the attack. The Fire-tipped Spear was at the end of its momentum, so he stepped forward with his left foot to deliver a mighty punch with his left hand!

“Bang!!”

There was a metallic glint from his left fist as it landed squarely onto the abdomen of the other person!

+12 Additional effect of the Critical Glove: Consume soulforce to grant the ability to deal 400% damage with the next strike. Cooldown of 5 minutes.

But that wasn't all! The punch onto the other person had also managed to activate the +10 additional effect as well!

+10 Additional effect of the Critical Glove: 30% Chance to deal 300% damage with the next strike. Cooldown of 1 minute.

With power like that behind the blow, it was little wonder that the person came flying away like a kite without a string. A trail of blood was left behind as the person spiraled into the air and beyond.

“Booom!!!”

The person flew for another two hundred meters before finally crashing back into the body of the blood octopus!

.....

Xiao Qi had been battling the blood octopus at the same time Bai Yunfei was battling the blood-robed person. As the stronger one of the two soulbeasts, Xiao Qi had the advantage in dealing with the octopus, but the other soulbeast had a strange property to it that made battle with it difficult. Even as the weaker peak late-stage class six soulbeast, it was still able to fight on the same level of equity with Xiao Qi almost. And since Xiao Qi also had to mind the little girl not too far away, the bird wasn't able to fight to his fullest.

It was like describing night and day when talking about Xiao Qi and the blood octopus. The tentacles from the blood octopus were many and large, but Xiao Qi was impeccably fast. The octopus didn't have to worry about having any of its tentacles broken or anything, as it only cared about stopping Xiao Qi within the network of coverage it was making with its other ones.

With his innate advantage in power and speed, Xiao Qi was dodging each tentacle with relative ease. Raining fire, wind, and lightning onto the blood octopus, Xiao Qi was also resorting to using the Spatial Edges to try to gain a second advantage. It was working too, as the bird had already managed to fell several of the octopus' tentacles, including two of the special black-colored ones.

But while he was fighting the octopus, something suddenly came flying over to careen into the blood octopus.

Like a red eraser of some kind, the blood-robed person crashed into the blood octopus. In turn, the blood octopus was hurt and sent flying away into the ground where it created a crater upon impact.

“Yunfei!”



Xiao Qi turned around to look at Bai Yunfei. He was shocked at just how weak Bai Yunfei was looking right now. Hesitating for a moment, he flew back to Bai Yunfei and came to a stop above his head.

Bai Yunfei really was feeling very weak right now. Experiencing that soul attack and then attacking with one of his own did a heavy number onto him. So much energy was used that Bai Yunfei didn't even feel like chasing after the other person. Instead, he just stopped in the air to try to suppress the pain he was feeling from his soul and the usage of his soulforce.

Since he already gave the Yun's Soul Ring back to Tang Xinyun, Bai Yunfei was currently down a soulforce recovery item and was subsequently a little slower to heal.

“That....should be it....”

Bai Yunfei gasped out. That last punch he landed onto the person had been extremely powerful, and Bai Yunfei was sure he heard several bones cracking after it connected. There would surely be damage done to the internal organs from the sheer force of the blow as well, so Bai Yunfei was confident that the other person would at least be down for the count.

The blood octopus looked to be at the end of its rope as well. Xiao Qi would just need another few minutes and the octopus would be in just as bad a state as its master.

As Bai Yunfei was recovering his soulforce, he gripped onto the Fire-tipped Spear tightly to speak, “Xiao QI, lets....”

But then a loud roar interrupted him before he could finish his sentence!

“Ahhhh!!!!”

Having been stuck to the blood octopus when they collided into it, the blood-robed person came standing up. The very same person who should've been completely unable to fight!!

“Die.....Die.....Die!! I'll kill you!”

The person called out again and again, blood spraying from their mouth with just time they repeated themselves. There was bits of flesh being sprayed out from their mouth as well, but the person didn't quite seem to notice just how injured they were. The person was as angry as ever, and it didn't seem like they were capable of rational thought right now with all their screaming. Raising their right fist up, the person tried slammed it into their chest again!!

“Pcht....”

Another mouthful of blood came out from the person's mouth as they cackled with laughter. Not even caring for their own health, the person began to go through a series of hand seals again!!

“Again?!”

Bai Yunfei blanched when he saw the hand seals being formed. For some reason, the enemy was trying to do the same soul skill as before!

The soul skill was a powerful one, Bai Yunfei could admit that much. But for the person to do it again when they were in such a state already meant that the person was traveling the road to self-destruction for the sake of killing Bai Yunfei!

But just a second later, something else happened to cause Bai Yunfei to feel even more surprised than before....

# Chapter 712: Breakthrough by Devouring!

---

The blood construct over the person's head trembled for a second. The blood that came out from the person was seemingly replenishing the missing portions of its construct, allowing it to grow even bigger. Now fully restored and better than ever, the construct gave a loud 'roar' of happiness.

When the person raised their right hand outwards with their fingers forming a blade, the construct mimicked their actions, but its arm was actually a blade.

Bai Yunfei felt his heart skip a beat at the idea of the blood construct attacking him like it did before. Thinking that the person would come after him again, Bai Yunfei took off in a hasty retreat before either of the two could actually make a step towards him.

But the other person was already making a move. Their right hand was already coming down as Bai Yunfei was moving. It wasn't coming down onto him, however, but.....below his feet!

“Pcht!!”

Bai Yunfei watched in absolute shock as the blade arm of the other person came down onto the head of the blood octopus below them!

The person wasn't after Bai Yunfei but the blood octopus!

The person's right arm stabbed into the weakened octopus without resistance where they twisted their arm once inside. A little ways away, Bai Yunfei watched as a blood-colored energy started to crawl out from the blood octopus' head and onto the other person's arm.

And since that person was moving, so was the blood construct overhead! It roared as its right arm came up before plunging the sharp blade 'arm' into the blood octopus' body just like its master

had done!

The only difference was in the sound. The blood octopus didn't have a new wound onto its body when the blade came down, as the construct's 'arm' wasn't solid and phased through it without resistance.

The actions of both the person in bloody robes and the blood construct had been fast and quick. No one there knew what to expect, from Bai Yunfei to Xiao Qi, and even the blood octopus itself!

“.....”

The entire battlefield was plunged into silence for a moment before a miserable wail rang through the air!

It was the blood octopus!

Its giant eyes were beginning to grow hazy and its body started to bulge outwards with a violent tremble. The hundreds of tentacles connected to it danced frantically as elemental energy started to shine out from it!

A red light, an orange light, and a bloody light....

Then the elemental energy coming out from the blood octopus started to fluctuate erratically. As if getting ready to burst, the energy started to fly outwards!

The energy flew for a good dozen meters before it was attracted somewhere else. Converging together in one spot, it all came to rest right in the middle where the bloody-robed person was!

It was as if was a mysterious force acting as a vacuum for all that energy in the person as all the elemental energy coming out from the blood octopus went there! If there was a straw, then the person was using that straw to siphon every bit of energy from the octopus into themselves!

There was also a great deal of blood being drawn out from the

octopus and into the person. Following up the person's arm, all of its blood was being taken into their body!

There was also a transparent flow of energy being drawn out. It wasn't elemental energy or blood, but....soulforce!

The soulforce of the blood octopus was being sucked up by the blood construct!

.....

“What's....what's going on here?!”

Bai Yunfei was thunderstruck. He blinked a few times, mystified by what he was seeing. The enemy was killing its own blood octopus!

“He's....he's devouring it!”

He didn't know the reason for it, but the situation was as clear as day for him. The other person was clearly devouring the blood octopus!

Draining its elemental energy, its blood, and its soulforce....this devouring the soulbeast in all but body!

As Bai Yunfei watched the events go on, the blood octopus was starting to shrink in size as if losing water!

There was a loud wail of anger and shock from the blood octopus, though its body was already growing weaker by the second. Growing still like a statue, it could only stand there and watch as its lifeforce was rapidly flowing away. It wasn't even sure what was going on even, with its low intelligence. The human that had brought it here and 'helped' it hunt for a great deal of delicious prey. Why was the human now attacking it?

Now feeling most of its lifeforce already gone, the blood octopus trembled with fear. In one final desperation for its life, the blood octopus tried to struggle to move, but even as hard as it might, the blood octopus couldn't move.

“Wuuu.....wuuu.....”

The wails coming from the octopus now were a lot more miserable in tone. It was mourning for itself. The tentacles were gradually coming to a still and the last of its life force was nearly taken from it. It crumpled to the ground in a shriveled state. The mighty blood octopus was now as weak as it ever was, like a tiny candle on the verge of being snuffed out if even a weak gust of wind were to blow on it.

In contrast, the blood and other energy was being sucked up by the other person. Cloaked in a multi-colored light show, the person was bent at the waist as they let loose a strange cry of some sort. A short moment later, their aura exploded in strength almost as fast as a rocket!

The person was already a peak late-stage Soul Exalt prior to this. But now....the person was very close to becoming a Soul King!

“He's close to a breakthrough!!”

Bai Yunfei realized with a start. His backward retreat came to an abrupt stop before he ran straight ahead for the person!

Bai Yunfei didn't think it was likely for this person to become a Soul King, but there was one thing for sure: He couldn't just sit there and let the person try to do so without obstruction!

But it was already too late!

Bai Yunfei's actions had already caught the eye of the other person. Lifting their head up, the person cackled menacingly at him before their aura exploded again in intensity!

“Wuu!!!”

The blood octopus let out one final howl at the same time!

“Booom!!!”

A loud explosion followed right afterwards!

The blood octopus had....exploded!

Countless bits of flesh came flying everywhere to saturate the surrounding hundred meters with the rest of the blood-colored energy being sucked up into the person.

“Ah!!!”

A pained, but happy cry erupted from the person as they threw their head back. Like its master, the blood construct swung its head back and let out a tremendous roar that shook the heavens. So loud was its scream that the blood that made up the construct vibrated before expanding in size again!

Likewise, the ball of blood forming around its master was seemingly starting to split apart almost as quickly as it formed. Inside of it, an intense aura was still continuing to rise!

Then the person stood up. Eyes as crimson as the blood around them, the person glared hatefully at Bai Yunfei and growled. Stepping forward Bai Yunfei, the person then disappeared into a blur to fly after him!

“He....he really broke through!! How!!”

Bai Yunfei's eyes were as wide as dinner plates due to his shock. Now that he was too late, Bai Yunfei came to a stop and made an immediate backtrack to get as far away from the person as possible. The now even more gigantic blood construct was coming for Bai Yunfei now with its blade arm to come slice down onto him!

This time, Bai Yunfei was well and truly afraid. If this blade connected, Bai Yunfei had no doubts his soul would be torn apart for sure....

Just as Bai Yunfei was making his last-ditch effort to escape from the dropping scythe, a voice suddenly called out to the two!

“Gui Nu, stop!!”

# Chapter 713: One Wave Subsides, Another Rises!

---

This voice was completely unexpected and out of the blue. It chimed through the air clearly and without a direction. Then right besides the bloody-robed man, a space in the area warped in on itself to allow for a person draped in black mist to come walking out.

Teleportation!

“Soul King!”

Heart skipping a beat, Bai Yunfei flew back away from the two. In order to cover for his retreat, Bai Yunfei was about to have Xiao Qi send out a Spatial Edge at the two.

But rather than help the other person, the newcomer raised his hand to grab at the bloody-robed person. Was he stopping them for Bai Yunfei?!

“Is he not an enemy then?”

Bai Yunfei was suspicious now. This man did call out the name of the person he had just been fighting, so it was obvious they were companions or something. Him stopping the other was definitely not a gesture of goodwill towards Bai Yunfei, there had to be another reason for that.

“Die!!”

But it didn't even seem like the newly advanced Soul King even noticed the hand on their shoulder. Aura not even weakening in the slightest, the bloody-robed person continued to stalk towards Bai Yunfei.

“Hmph!!”

The other Soul King narrowed his eyes. Raising his right hand and stabbing a finger into the other person's flesh, the Soul King



had the black aura around the bloody-robed person!

“Refrain from using that move or you'll die! Your death is inexcusable to the young master, so stand down at once!”

The last few words of his command was accentuated with a burst of power only a mid-stage Soul King was capable of. In response to that outburst, the furious aura of the newly-advanced early-stage Soul King started to calm down. Even though it didn't seem like the person had heard the other Soul King, they were definitely looking a lot more restrictive in their movement. The indomitable aura that seemed raring to explode at Bai Yunfei was slowly starting to calm a bit, and the guttural growls was starting to grow silent. Even the blood construct was warping in on itself as the blood that made up its body started to fade or return to its master's body.

Then the bloody-robed person crumpled like paper into the arms of the other Soul King. The person was completely unconscious now!

Their aura was completely deflated now. From where it used to soaring to the skies, the person's aura was now at an all time low. With all the blood flowing out from the multiple wounds on their body, it seemed as if the person was a corpse rather than a deranged Soul King.

.....

Bai Yunfei watched everything happen in front of him with a dropped jaw. As surprising as it was though, he was finally starting to understand what had happened in the fight. That mysterious technique the bloody-robed person used to devour the blood octopus and increase their strength was powerful beyond belief, but not perfect by any means. An explosive spike in power like that was at the cost of burning away their own lifeforce. If the person had actually used their strongest attack without being stopped, then they would've definitely died, even if the attack landed or not.

So the Soul King came in to stop his comrade before the final attack could be used. It served to help Bai Yunfei escape with his life, but it was an indirect effect of trying to save his comrade's life.

Even with the two powerful foes being dealt with, Bai Yunfei wasn't entirely happy with the situation just yet. In fact, he was still feeling quite sour. Right in front of him was yet another mid-stage Soul King after all.....

“He has to be someone else from the Soul Refining School. I never thought they'd have a Soul King like this, how troublesome.....”

Now that the bloody-robed person was fully unconscious in the arms of the other Soul King, the Soul King looked over to where Bai Yunfei was.

Bai Yunfei felt himself start when their eyes met. Taking one careful step backwards, Bai Yunfei prepared himself to go on the defense.

But the Soul King didn't seem on planning to do anything. He just stared. His eyes swept over Bai Yunfei first before to Xiao Qi, and then to the 'remnants' of the blood octopus down below. The black mist around him trembled a bit as if angered by its death, but the Soul King didn't do anything about that either. Looking away with a sigh, the Soul King started to....fly away to the north!

The space in front of him warped in on itself when he waved his left hand. Stepping across it with his comrade in his hands, the Soul King disappeared and reappeared a great distance away. And with several repetitions, the two were now gone beyond the horizon.

“.....”

It was with silence Bai Yunfei watched the two leave the area, “Are....are they really just going to leave like that?!”

He thought he was in for a dreadful battle actually. The fact that

the two of them left without fighting was completely unexpected to him!

Still feeling uneasy about the situation, Bai Yunfei looked around the area carefully before he made any sudden movements. He turned back towards the direction where the Soul King came from first. Formagua City. He could sense a few auras coming from that direction; it had to be Zheng Kai and the others.

Their imminent arrival gave Bai Yunfei a great deal of relief. Not only did it mean they were safe, it also meant Bai Yunfei was too.

.....

A streak of blue light came flying down from the skies before coming to a stop next to Bai Yunfei. It was Long Lan. He swept his eyes around the area to make sure there were no enemies before asking, “Yunfei, Xiao Qi, are you two both alright?”

Bai Yunfei's Berserk Mode was canceled out, leaving Bai Yunfei temporarily breathless. He managed to wave his arm at Long Lan. “I'm fine, the enemy's gone now, are you all alright?”

He was completely at ease and could smile now. But then when he looked to the group coming towards him, he paused. Several of them looked quite grim, especially Tang Xinyun and Kou Tingting who both looked like they were close to tears.

A little perplexed by the situation at hand, Bai Yunfei gave an inquisitive look at them. “What happened?”

He came to a quick realization before any of them could answer, however. “Wait, where's Doraemon?!”

Doraemon was missing! Everyone was here and accounted for in the group except for one little girl....Huangfu Rui!

And not only was she gone, her red magiboar was too!

“Yunfei....little Rui....little Rui is missing! What do we do...?” Tang Xinyun asked him in panic, her face twisted up and ready to

cry.

“.....” Bai Yunfei grew somber at the predicament. Tearing his eyes away from the despondent two girls, he turned to Zheng Kai, “Ah'Zheng, what happened? How'd Doraemon go missing?”

Zheng Kai was quick to calm down enough to tell the story. “When you disappeared down the hole to give chase, we were about to leave the city when we were ambushed out of nowhere. We were trapped in a strange underground labyrinth after that where we couldn't even use our soulsense. Plenty of tentacles attacked us while we were trying to find our way out, but we managed to gather together eventually. But we....never managed to group back with little Rui in the end.....”

“And the red magiboar? He has a soulbond with Doraemon, they weren't together, were they?”

Zheng Kai shook his head. “They weren't. At first, the red magiboar was heading in the direction of little Rui, but then he said something was blocking the connection to her and could no longer sense her.....We tried looking around for her but then we sensed someone fighting something. We knew you were in danger so we decided to come to you first, and then the red magiboar....decided to continue to look for little Rui. We....we don't know where either of the two are now....”

The knot in between Bai Yunfei's eyebrows grew tighter as his mind raced to think of a plan.

“Yunfei, what should we.....do now?” Zheng Kai asked.

Bai Yunfei cast a glance over at the night sky, “What else can we do? Look! It doesn't matter where, but we have to find Doraemon as fast as possible!”

He was about to instruct Xiao Qi to go searching for her when he noticed a strange look on Zheng Kai's face. “Ah'Zheng?” Bai Yunfei turned back to him, “Is there something you didn't tell me?!”

“While we were in the labyrinth....” Zheng Kai started, “We found the tracks of one of the ‘Hornets of Plum Valley’....”

“What?!” Bai Yunfei looked shocked. “You're saying one of them are close by?!”

“Most likely.” Zheng Kai nodded. “I sensed at least two of them, though they were a little faint, so they were probably stuck like we were. We also sensed some signs of battle, so there's probably other survivors near Formagua City....if little Rui came across them.....”

“Damn!!” Bai Yunfei clenched his fist tightly with a curse. “Then we don't have time to waste! Xiao Qi, Long Lan, you two go look somewhere. Ah'Zheng, Xinyun, Tingting, you'll come with me and don't split up! We'll look here and look further into Formagua City. We have to find Doraemon!”

Xiao Qi and Long Lan both nodded at once and were prepared to leave when Bai Yunfei spoke to them, “Hold on. If you two come across any of the Hornets.....kill them!”

.....

To the south of Formagua City away from Bai Yunfei and his group, there was a dark cave where a young girl was currently walking towards.

Basked underneath the bright rays of moonlight, it was possible to see just who this person was! It was Huangfu Rui!

But unlike her usual excited and spirited expression, Huangfu Rui looked completely wooden and despondent like a statue. Walking one step at a time, she stepped towards the depths of the cave in front of her.

Just....just what in the world was going on here?!

# Chapter 714: The Crisis of Huangfu Rui!

---

Still stuck in a dreamlike state, Huangfu Rui was traveling through the southern outskirts of Formagua City. She had no expression to her face and looked like she was just a marionette being controlled by someone.

It was just a dark forest all around Huangfu Rui. With only the near silent jeerings of the insects and the occasional barking of a feral dog or soulbeast, there was no other sound as Huangfu Rui walked. With everything considered, it was an extremely strange sight.

It took only a while before Formagua City was but a shadow to the world around her before Huangfu Rui found her right in front of a valley. It was a silent area where Huangfu Rui had to navigate around several trees and tall grass before she was able to come to the center of the valley and to a complete stop!

She stood there for a moment before the glossy sheen in her eyes faded away. Two seconds later, her eyes were back to their regular shiny look.

It took a little while longer for Huangfu Rui to get her bearings back after the glossy light was gone from her eyes. It took an additional second before she was aware of her surroundings. “Eh? How'd I get here? Didn't I fall into the ground?”

The very last thing she remembered was falling into that large hole and following her bond with Xiao Rourou back to him. Much to her surprise, she couldn't remember anything else, like how she got all the way here.

Then she realized there wasn't anyone else with her as well!!

This startled the little girl to a large degree. “Xiao Rourou....sis Yun....sis Ting....bro Strawhat....giant....where are you all? I....where am I? Where is everyone??”

“Whoosh....”

As if responding to her, the baying of a distant soulbeast echoed through the little mountainside, scaring the little girl even more. Practically forgetting that she was a Soul Exalt, Huangfu Rui ran over to a large boulder and hid herself behind it to wait for the soulbeast's cry to fully fade away. It was then that she poked her head out and then sat against the boulder with two of her hands clutching at her robe seams. “Why am I here....” She whimpered, “Don't leave me alone here....Xiao Rourou, where are you....please come soon....”

Now that she was aware of it, Huangfu Rui could sense Xiao Rourou's aura from a great distance behind her. Xiao Rourou seemed to have noticed her as well, as the aura was now running quickly in her direction with increasing speed.

She clenched her fist in an attempt to cheer herself up. “Don't be afraid, little Rui is a strong girl who isn't afraid of the night. I'll find Xiao Rourou and then find bro Strawhat and the others....”

She nodded to herself. Leaping out from behind the boulder, she started to make her way back towards Formagua City.

But just after a hundred meters in her journey back, several figures came whistling out from the bushes!

These people looked as though they came out from the ground themselves. They weren't exactly running towards Huangfu Rui and looked more like they were trying to run for their lives off to the side.

“Someone's here!!”

Even as panicked as they were, the group of people were still scanning the area with their soulsense as they fled, meaning they picked up on Huangfu Rui's aura. The first person to realize her existence cried out a warning to the others, causing them to in turn look at her.

There were six people in total, all of them middle-aged men and Soul Exalts in strength. But right now, they were all very haphazard in dress and were injured as if they had just fought in an intense battle.

Like a startled chicken, Huangfu Rui leapt into the air. She looked nothing more but a young girl, so the six men sighed in relief when they saw her. Barely sparing her a second glance, the six made the near immediate decision to start running away from the place afterwards.

"Eh??"

But then the last one of the six came to a grinding halt to look back at Huangfu Rui.

His pause caused the other five to follow suit. Stopping, the one in the front spoke, "We have to go, sixth brother, what are you looking at? Don't tell me you're thinking about women now of all times!"

"It's not that, second brother, but....this brat here...it's the one from the other day!"

The 'sixth brother' had a more thunderous look on his face now. "It's that person we met back in 'Vacancy Inn'!"

Everyone else looked to Huangfu Rui in surprise. "It really is her!" Someone cried out.

Somehow, Huangfu Rui had come across the 'Hornets of Plum Valley'!!

The people Bai Yunfei and the others were worrying about were right now in contact with the one person they didn't want them to meet!

Just thinking about that day back in Vacancy Inn was enough to make everyone remember the losses they incurred. The second brother, the 'Horned Hornet' was especially chilled at the memories. His eyes swept across the features of Huangfu Rui to



have a better look at her. His eyes flashed once with recognition. He knew just what his sixth brother, the 'Rapist Hornet', was wanting. The punishment they got at the hands of Bai Yunfei had been disastrous and weighed heavily on each of their minds after that day. Though they didn't have the strength to get revenge, coming across someone from their most hated group of people by themselves was naturally a golden opportunity none of them wanted to give up on.

Still, that didn't mean they forgot about what they were escaping from. Hardly sparing a moment to weigh the two choices, the Horned Hornet spoke, "Capture her! We take her and then we go! Now!"

"Yes!" The Rapist Hornet lit up with ecstasy. Snapping his head to look at Huangfu Rui, he gave her a sinister smile and made his way quickly over to her!

The others were already starting to run as he made his way towards Huangfu Rui. Because of her, he was a step behind the others, but only a few seconds would be needed for him to catch up afterwards.

.....

It had been with great curiosity that Huangfu Rui watched the six pop out from the ground. When one of them came over to her in the blink of an eye, she realized just who it was with a startled cry. "Oh! A bad guy!!"

She clearly recognized who the Rapist Hornet was as the one who 'startled' her a few days ago. Taking an instinctive step backwards, she raised her left hand up her eye as if unwilling to even look at him. Her right hand came forward to slap at him.

"Bzz!!"

Much to the shock of the Hornets, the five watched as the little girl who should've been only a Soul Sprite in strength suddenly

show more power than she should have. There was a quick flash of red as fire sprung out from her palm and slammed into the Rapist Hornet a brief second later!

"Bang!! Ah!!"

There was a miserable cry one slap later as the Rapist Hornet was struck by the fiery palm and sent back down to the ground ablaze.

"Sixth brother!!"

The Horned Hornet was the first to cry out for his downed brother. Shocked, he and everyone else took out their soul armaments to send wave after wave of elemental energy after Huangfu Rui!

"Ahhhh!!" Huangfu Rui was terrified now. Like a rabbit, she leapt up into the air and took out the little pink bag she had tied around her waist. Rummaging through it for something, she took something into her hand and threw it outwards.

There was a flash of golden light as a golden ring of light appeared into the world. It spun around for a moment before colliding with the first beam of elemental energy coming at Huangfu Rui. There was an explosion as the ring of light cut straight through the energy and left it in two. Without weakening in speed, the beam of light shot through the second and third attacks of elemental energy before slamming into the earth-type soul cultivator who couldn't dodge in time!

"Ah!"

There was another cry of pain before a second person crumpled to the ground.

Huangfu Rui still looked panicked at her predicament however. Not even noticing that she was winning the exchanges so far, she rummaged through her bag again. This time, a palm-sized bamboo chicken was taken out. Not even sparing a glance at that, Huangfu Rui tossed it outwards as well.

Huangfu Rui's eyes shined bright green with light as soon as the bamboo chicken left her hand. There was a small explosion of light before a two meter tall green chicken appeared out from it!

Like a rocket, the bamboo chicken flew towards Huangfu Rui's enemies with great speed. Its wings were sending out blades of sharp wind to cut down the remaining attacks coming at her. It sliced through the attacks and then just barely missed the Hornets before sailing into the small mountain behind them and left behind a great hole after a small explosion.

“.....”

Everyone was stunned. It was almost the most ridiculous thing they'd seen in their entire life, but no one could even do anything but stare as Huangfu Rui tried to rummage through her bag even more.

"Hah! Little Rui is super powerful! I won't be bullied by you all!!" Huangfu Rui crooned. A little calmer than before, she was finally starting to think the enemies weren't 'all that strong' compared to her. Now that she had a few small victories so far, Huangfu Rui took out something like a butterfly net with confidence to use in the battle.

Already trembling from the previous attacks, the Hornets were already preparing themselves to dodge this next attack.

“Eh??”

But then Huangfu Rui came to a sudden stop. When she tossed out the butterfly net, it did nothing but fall slowly to the ground without at all doing anything else.

"....."

# Chapter 715: Crisis Averted?

---

“Eh?!”

Huangfu Rui was confused, as were the other Hornets fighting her. They had been prepared to evade whatever it was being thrown at them, but this item was actually a bluff of all things. No attack was coming for them, and the powerful aura from the little girl wasn't even there anymore!

At that moment she threw the last object from her bag, the powerful energy radiating from her person had....disappeared!

In actuality, Huangfu Rui's body had always been quite strange. Even despite her talented upbringing and achievements when she was younger, her strength was unsteady and prone to moments just like these where it'd weaken for no reason!

“What's.....eh....?””

In her panic, the little girl started to try and push her soulforce out again. But no matter how much she tried to summon it up, it was as if every last bit of it was hiding from her. It just wouldn't come out no matter how much she tried!!

She was just like a commoner now--completely unable to use any soulforce!

She had times in the past where her strength would waver and ebb just enough to go one or two stages weaker. Rarely did her strength ever waver past the point of a Soul Sprite, and never had her strength gone out completely like right now!

So since she couldn't use any soulforce right now, none of the soul armaments on her would work without soulforce being fed into it. She couldn't even use her spatial bag anymore. As of right now, Huangfu Rui was trying so hard to bring out her soulforce that her face was red, but she was completely without it.

“.....”

The Hornets stared strangely at her for a moment. Then the Horned Hornet began to smile creepily. Gripping his giant sword, the man cackled before leaping straight for her!

He didn't know what was going on with the girl right now, but he'd take the chance and use his strongest attack onto her if she was so kind to leave them an opening!

Likewise, the other three brothers with him took action as well. Shortly after the Horned Hornet came forward, the other three moved in to follow him!

With their speed, it didn't take more than a moment for them to cross the dozen meters dividing them and Huangfu Rui. Now close enough to her, the four of them lashed out with their weapons to strike!

They didn't care if their enemy was a delicate little girl. They already saw just how strong Huangfu Rui was earlier and didn't hesitate to strike out with all they had. They needed to take the opportunity while the enemy was weakened to kill her!

“Yaaaah!!!”

Their actions weren't even visible to Huangfu Rui. All she felt was a blast of wind onto her face as they drew close along with several flashes of light. Covering her face with her hands, Huangfu Rui shut her eyes tight and let loose a panicked scream.

There was no protection she could offer up against four Soul Exalts. The only thing that could be done now was give up and wait for the blades to cut her fragile body apart!

A strange flow of energy suddenly pulsed out from her body when the blades were all just three steps away from her body. Unlike her soulforce, this wave of energy was transparent with a very very faint tint of white light....

The energy enveloped her entire person as if like a protective layering of something.....

“Hmph....”

At the same time, a cold sneer could be heard....

It was a quiet sound; almost even more quiet than the rustling wind of the brothers when they moved, but all of the Hornets could hear the sound loud and clear!

A miraculous event took place as soon as the sneer subsided. The four people who were coming at Huangfu Rui had been stopped mid-air!!

Their bodies were like statues. Pictures that were frozen in time where they stood. Not only were their bodies frozen, even the blades of elemental energy from their weapons were being stopped by something just two steps away from Huangfu Rui's head!

A second went by. The moon was still shining down bright on everyone when the blades of elemental energy....was forced back onto the four Hornets!

“Wha--aaah!!”

The mid-stage Soul Exalt let out a confused cry that turned into pain a moment later. The ball of fire he had shot out had turned back onto him and exploded, engulfing him within its flames!

“Booom!!!”

Sparks flew everywhere as the flames ravaged the Soul Exalt inside. Soon, the silhouette of the person couldn't be seen anymore. He had been turned into ashes and dust!

The attack meant for Huangfu Rui had for some reason been repelled backwards with a hundred times the original strength! And without being able to put up any resistance, the Soul Exalt had been burnt into ashes!

Likewise, his fellow brethren were currently experiencing the very same aftermath with their own elemental attacks!

The only one to escape with their life was the strongest one

there, the Horned Hornet. Due to his strength and good fortune, the Horned Hornet was able to protect himself with a layer of elemental energy and his sword. The following explosion still took out his sword and right arm, but....he was alive still!

He backtracked away from Huangfu Rui with a pained howl and a mouth full of blood. Clutching at the stump of his right shoulder with his left hand, the man looked up to the sky.

At some point during the short fight, a figure had appeared a hundred meters in the sky above them!

It was unknown just when this person appeared. There had been no aura to indicate they were here, and the night was far too dark for anyone to even see the face of this person, only that their robes were floating in the wind.

“Si....Sire....”

The Horned Hornet was pale in the face right now. This person in front of him was without a doubt an enemy and the one responsible for what had just happened to him and his brothers. Hence why he was quavering to speak.

But before he could even say more than just one word, the person in the sky was already waving his right hand.

“Ah!”

“Ah!!”

Two abrupt cries rang through the air behind the Horned Hornet. Like daggers stabbing into his heart, the Horned Hornet whirled around to look at the fallen fifth and sixth brother Huangfu Rui had knocked down earlier. But they were gone! In their place was just one giant puddle of blood!

“Wha--aah!!”

The Horned Hornet nearly stumbled back in fright. As he opened his mouth to say something, both his eyes started to bulge

outwards. He clutched at his chest, his mouth screaming in pain as his organs within his body started to expand!

“Booom!!!”

His body continued to expand outwards like a human balloon before....he exploded!

A shower of blood rained down from the skies, sprinkling and dying the ground with its red color. Soon, the valley was returned to its previously silent state....

.....

In the time the Horned Hornet and his brothers attacked, were stopped, and killed, only a few seconds went by. When all was silent, Huangfu Rui was still hiding her face with her hands.

Another two seconds went by before Huangfu Rui peeked nervously from behind her fingers. It was dark out, but not even the bursts of elemental energy from the enemies before could be seen now.

“Eh?? Where'd they go?” The girl looked around in confusion. She couldn't see anyone there, so she looked up at the sky.

But when she did, the person that had been up in the skies was slowly making their way down towards her!



## Chapter 716: Dongfang

---

It was with great fear that Huangfu Rui watched the shadow 'descend' from the skies. Shrinking away from the person, the little girl moved to try to open up her spatial bag but to no avail. The bag simply wouldn't open without any soulforce being fed into it. Panicked now, she started to run. Without knowing what to do in this case, Huangfu Rui looked very close to tears.

“Haha....don't be afraid, I won't hurt you....”

As Huangfu Rui was turning to run at full sprint, a kind and warm voice spoke out to her.

It was the person who had just descended from the skies. From the voice, the person could at least be identified to be a middle-aged man. The smile on his face was now noticeable due to the moonlight, and rather than looking scary like Huangfu Rui thought, the man looked more like a doting figure.

He was standing in front of Huangfu Rui now. His fire-red robes could be seen clearly now due to the bright moon shining overhead. He looked to be in his forties around. Built with broad shoulders and a high nature, the man had a rugged, but distinct face and eyes with light as sharp as swords. His hair was sprawled out behind his neck, but overall, the person looked like quite the honest and gentle person.

For reasons unknown to her, Huangfu Rui suddenly felt at ease with him around. There was a 'friendly' feeling she was getting from him. A feeling that made him seem very familiar, so it was easy for her to believe in his words. She came to a stop to look at him.

She was rewarded with a warm smile as if to comfort her. “Be at ease....those people have been dealt with. They won't hurt you anymore.”

Huangfu Rui turned her head back towards where the others used to be, confused on where they had gone. Her eyes then widened when she realized just what exactly was said by the man. “Did...did uncle beat up and force those bad guys away?”

“Force them away?” The person blinked. “Ah yes, I've already sent them off.”

He smiled at the piece of the ground where the Hornets used to be. Eyes flicking back, he gave another grin towards Huangfu Rui.

.....

Farther to the right where the Hornets first came out from, a figure was laid face-down on the ground, hiding in the shadows and trying to slink away from the area without making a sound.

This person was....the head of the Hornets, Boss Hornet!

He didn't attack Huangfu Rui with the others or even came out from underneath the same time as the others did. As the strongest, he was responsible for protecting the vanguard. By the time he came out from underground, the others were already attacking Huangfu Rui and then subsequently killed by the mysterious people up above!

He didn't even know what was going on here. The first thing he saw and felt was the blood and gore from his brethren flying everywhere when he finally made his way up.

The next thing he did was suppress his soulforce to the max and dive down to the ground, afraid to move even a finger.

Soon afterwards, he watched as the one person in the skies walk towards Huangfu Rui before daring to make even a single step off into the opposite direction!

The 'Hornets of Plum Valley' had experienced nothing but misfortune as of late. The prelude to their tale of woe was Bai Yunfei and the others teaching them a harsh lesson back at Vacancy Inn. Then the next thing to occur was them fleeing to the

strange ghost city that was Formagua. It was there that they were attacked by a mysterious soulbeast they couldn't even see and dragged underground. Even with the combined might of them nine, it took them several hours before their final escape.

Two of their numbers didn't make it out with them, and the rest of the brothers had nearly thought they'd die there as well. But for some reason when all hope seemed lost, the tentacles that were attacking them stopped, allowing them to continue on and make their escape. They didn't know why that was happening, but no one really cared either. By finding a tunnel up, they were able to make it above ground.

What the group didn't expect was to jump out from the frying pan and into the fire. No sooner did they make their long-awaited escape did all but one of their numbers perish.

Boss Hornet didn't even care to know if Bai Yunfei and his friends died or not now.

The only thing he could care about was running away as fast as he possibly could!

He did his best to make his way forward for a good while. But then when he felt the pointed gaze of someone land onto his back, the man immediately dropped to the ground. Back and forehead slick with sweat, he had only one thought now. He was definitely dead now....

But the feeling lasted for only a moment before it disappeared without him being worse for wear. The Boss Hornet was stupefied, but ecstatic that he was still alive. Renewed with hope, he made his way forward to leave.

The middle-aged man had very clearly seen the man. But the Boss Hornet was just an ant in his opinion, someone not worth chasing after. A mighty soul cultivator wouldn't bother to go out of his way to step on the insignificant ants on the ground. The Boss Hornet was such an ant, and there was no point in stepping on him.

.....

“Are you....Huangfu Rui?”

The middle-aged man suddenly asked her.

“Eh??” Huangfu Rui blinked. “Uncle, how do you know my name?”

He placed a hand on top of her head to pat it affectionately, “Of course I know your name, haha. I....am quite familiar with you after all, very familiar even....”

Huangfu Rui wrinkled her nose and swung the hand off her head. “You liar. I don't know you. How do you know who I am?”

“Haha....” The man smiled when he saw the look on her face. He pulled back his hand to say, “Of course you don't recognize me. You weren't even....”

He trailed away with his words to sigh. “Twenty years.....has twenty years really gone by....? Little girl, your mother....how is she now?”

“Mom? Mom's fine....” Huangfu Rui nodded her head. “Eh? Do you know mom?”

The man smiled and nodded.

She cocked her head. “Who are you, uncle? Do you really know mom and I? Why haven't I seen you before?”

The man smiled again. He placed his hand back onto her head for a while before then dropping it. “I'm Dongfang—”

“East?” Huangfu Rui interjected before he could finish, “Why aren't you called West?”

TL Note: Dongfang is a surname, but has also the same characters for east.

“Ah....” The middle-aged man looked truly stunned by the question, “It's my surname....”

“Oh...” Huangfu Rui nodded her head sagely. “Uncle Dongfang, do you know my mom? Why haven't I heard her talk about you before?”

This time, the expression on the man's face stiffened in sorrow. He sighed. “It's true. I....I know your mother, but....she definitely wouldn't talk about me.....”

“Then, do you know my dad?” Huangfu Rui tried to change the subject.

The air immediately chilled as soon as she asked the question. The pupils to the man's eyes dilated with hatred at the very mention of Huangfu Rui's father. His aura pervading through the air had made a substantial change on Huangfu Rui, causing her to shiver and back away from him in fear.

“Uncle Dongfang, you....you....”

Realizing his loss of emotional control, the man snapped back to awareness. The cold aura dropped at once as he gave a self-deprecating smile towards her. “Let's not talk about that. Come, little girl. Let me see just how much you've 'grown'....”

“Eh?” Huangfu Rui asked, “What do you mea—”

The man pressed his palm against her head before she could finish, and then....she went still as a board!

Her words had died in her mouth as she went still, her eyes growing listless and without emotion!

## Chapter 717: He's....

---

No sooner did the man's palm touch Huangfu Rui's head did the girl freeze up like a board. Her eyes were listless and his face was completely devoid of any emotion!

As for the middle-aged man, the warm look on his face was nowhere to be seen! In its place was an expression as cold and indifferent as ice!

A faint red light emanated from the man's body. It flowed through his right hand and enveloped Huangfu Rui's body like a cocoon. Beating rhythmically, it left no place around her untouched and started to even flow into her. From the outside, whatever was happening to Huangfu Rui looked quite startling.

The moment didn't last for long. At some point, the man had realized something unexpected to him and pulled his hand away from Huangfu Rui in surprise.

The faint red light faded away, leaving behind only the two people to be basked in the moonlight. Even when his hand was no longer touching Huangfu Rui, the girl was still emotionless and transfixed to the spot like a statue.

"It's a little slower than I thought...." The man muttered to himself. "Compared to before, it's definitely a lot more suppressed, almost sealed even. She should've been at this point three years ago...."

The man shook his head and laughed. "Haha, master....so you were still capable of something like this? But surely a heavy price had to be paid? You were already weakened before, and then with this? Not ever will you make it back to the realm of the Emperors....."

He cast his eyes to Huangfu Rui, a shadow of warmth flickering across his eyes for just a split-second. He stroked Huangfu Rui's

cheek with a finger, “You really do look alike....Just like Yu’er....” He reminisced.

Those memories cheered the man up to a small degree, but the smile soon started to fade away back to indifference. His hand dropped.

“It’s a pity your his daughter....” He spat.

“Huangfu Nan....I can’t fault you for accusing me of secretly trying to craft a demonic armament. Master had already known about it a long time ago, but perhaps it was due to his role as master that he knew. The heavens truly are waiting for me to ‘repent’ for that.

“But. The fact that you made Yu’er leave me is absolutely unforgivable....

“Killing you would be as easy as crushing an ant, but I don’t want do something like that....Just you wait. There’ll be a day when you come to know what it feels like to be ‘betrayed’ by the one closest to you....”

The next words that came out of his mouth were unintelligible to everyone but him. Fully withdrawing his right hand, the man clenched his slightly trembling fist, allowing for a drip of blood to fall from his fingers and onto the ground.....

.....

Hiding his hand in his sleeve, the man turned to his right. “Gui Wei. Come on out.”

Under the night sky was just Huangfu Rui and this man. So when he spoke for someone to come out all of a sudden, it was a baffling to hear and was a little strange to hear.

But he looked to a corner of the valley in particular and waited. Over there in one of the nearby trees, the space around it warped in on itself before a person came walking out from it!

From where there didn't seem to be anyone earlier, a person had actually come out from absolutely nowhere!

This person was dressed completely in black and had a wide-brimmed hat to hide his head. It would've been hard to see his face in the daytime, let alone in the night when there was no visibility. It looked like he was one with the shadows with how it stuck to his body. Even his aura could hardly be felt when he walked.

The one known as 'Gui Wei' came to a stop just ten meters away from the middle-aged man. He bowed at the waist in a respectful greeting for the man. "Gui Wei pays his respects to the vice-headmaster.....vice-headmaster, what matters bring you here?"

From his voice alone, this person was a middle-aged man. From his appearance, any guess from between thirty and sixty could be had, but no one would be able to see just how old he really was.

The man didn't answer Gui Wei. He instead nodded his head and asked a question back, "What brings you here?"

The look on his face now devastatingly different to the one he showed Huangfu Rui earlier. He didn't even bother to give Gui Wei a proper look in the eyes. His expression was dark and stormy, and his voice was exceedingly sinister. There was a baleful aura radiating from his person that demanded respect and obedience, and Gui Wei was all too happy to give both. In fact, the person looked a little fearful upon realizing just how superfluous his question had been.

"This servant reports that the junior headmaster had instructions for Gui Nu and the blood octopus to train here. We were instructed to have the two come to a suitable place for proper 'nourishment' to become Soul Kings."

Gui Wei bowed his head in respect. Someone like him was important enough to stand shoulder to shoulder with the elders of his affiliation, but in front of the vice-headmaster, the man didn't dare do anything but submit.



“Gui Nu?” The man quirked an eyebrow. “The one brought to us a few years ago, the one that managed to learn the Bloodsoul Dark Arts without dying?”

“That is the one.”

The middle-aged man looked a little more interested now. “I heard it was nothing more but a passing fancy from Mo Ni. Has his plan really succeeded that much? How far has that ‘Gui Nu’ learned in the Bloodsoul Dark Arts?”

“He has reached the late-stage Blood realm already. It is presumed that once he breaks through to become a Soul King, he will soon reach the early-stage Soul realm.”

“Oh?” The man replied in surprise. He smiled, “We haven’t had a person had such a success like that for several hundred years now. That person will become a powerful tool for us in the future.

“But....” He paused briefly to think. “The Bloodsoul Dark Arts is one of our greatest secrets. As powerful as it may be, it is also hard to control. It’ll be an annoyance if that person decides to break away, has Mo Ni put in the preparations in case of that?”

“Please rest assured, vice-headmaster. There was trouble once before with Gui Nu’s training that the junior headmaster had a special restriction placed upon his soul. No matter how much Gui Nu forgets himself and goes berserk, he will never be out of junior headmaster’s control.”

“That’s fine then. You tell Mo Ni to behave himself. The headmaster wants him to train hard these next few years so he will be ready to pick up the heavy responsibilities in the future. I only hope he won’t disappoint us.”

“Yes, your humble servant will pass the vice-headmaster’s message to the junior headmaster.”

The man nodded. “Go about your business then,” he waved his hand. “The stench of blood is quite heavy, that blood octopus

must've made its nest already then? Best leave this area then. No matter how well you've quarantined the area, someone strong is bound to come looking. It's best to leave when it's still silent."

"Please rest assured, vice-headmaster. I will be prudent in my task. We are at the final stages before Gui Nu and the blood octopus breaks through. I am confident it won't be any time until they are fi—"

"Boom!!!"

A loud explosion from the direction behind Gui Wei saw to him snapping his mouth shut in shock.

He whirled around in bewilderment to look off into the direction of the explosion.

It came from the back of Formagua City!

# Chapter 718: Not Yet the Time

---

That was the time the bloody-robed man had gone off into the deep-end and devour the blood octopus to try to breakthrough!

Such a powerful shockwave from his attempt could be felt from all the way where Gui Wei and the other person were.

Gui Wei looked infuriated at the results. “Damn!! What is that Gui Nu trying to do?!”

The middle-aged man next to him had a strange look in his eyes. “This is....’Bloodsoul Devouring’ and....’Bloodsoul Shadow’?”

A look of understanding dawned upon the man’s face as he peered over to where the explosion came from. A smile appeared on his face as if to ‘praise’ someone, he turned to Gui Wei. “Head on over there, Gui Nu seems to have gotten into some trouble. If something were to go wrong with him, then someone as capable as him in the Bloodsoul Dark Arts won’t be seen for another several hundred years....”

His words were surprising to Gui Wei, but the person didn’t hesitate to follow his orders. With hardly even a bow towards the man, Gui Wei stepped into a spatial warp and teleported another kilometer away towards the source of the explosion.

As he was leaving, the voice of the middle-aged man spoke out to him, “Take Gui Nu and leave. Forget about the young man there.”

He didn’t even need to be told that though. Gui Wei had no intentions of doing anything with Bai Yunfei. He just wanted to get in, take Gui Nu, and get out. If he didn’t find a place to help Gui Nu settle down the new powers he had, then Gui Nu would be dead, if not crippled by the instability of his abrupt power up....

.....

The middle-aged man watched as Gui Wei disappeared off into a distance with a faint smile on his face. “So this is the rumored

student of master. My ‘junior’ then....haha, what a brave young hero he is. So strong, and yet so young....but he is still a ways away from Mo Ni.”

He stayed quiet after that to look off into the distance. After a while, he turned his eyes back towards Huangfu Rui.

A tall and short figure stood in the center of the valley without moving. After a while, there was a sigh loud enough to be heard echoing through the valley before the middle-aged man turned around. A transparent door appeared in front of him before he took a step through it and disappeared.

The only thing left in the valley to prove he was there was but a single sigh....

“Now is not the time, not just yet....”

.....

He disappeared, leaving behind Huangfu Rui as the only person left in the valley. She stood there, her robes drifting with the wind for several seconds before she snapped out from her dreamlike state with a start.

“What’d you say, uncle Dongfang?”

She spoke, giving a delayed question to the man who wasn’t even there anymore.

“Eh?” She blinked once. Looking around for the man, Huangfu Rui couldn’t see him at all. “Uncle Dongfang?”

When she realized no one was there in the valley, Huangfu Rui scratched her head in confusion.

“Where’d he go?

“Eh? My soulforce is back!” A second revelation hit her a moment afterwards, this one a lot happier than the one before. It was true! Her soulforce was now back to normal levels!

“Whew....all is good. Little Rui managed to protect herself....”

She patted herself on the chest with a relieved sigh.

“Little Rui! Little Rui!!”

A voice from farther away called out to her while she was mumbling to herself. Surprised, she turned her head to look at the several bolts of light coming for her through the sky.

“Xiao Rourou!” She cried out in excitement. “Bro Strawhat! Sis Yun! Sis Ting!!”

These people coming for her was Bai Yunfei and the others!

.....

Bai Yunfei and the others went back to Formagua City after they were all settled down to look for Huangfu Rui. They came across the red magiboar at some point in their search underneath the passageways, who said that he had a trace on Huangfu Rui now. Excited, everyone immediately took off away from the city towards where she was said to be.

The several beams of light dropped down from the skies with the red magiboar leading the front. An audible sigh of relief escaped from the red magiboar when he saw that Huangfu Rui was safe. Still a bit concerned for her wellbeing, the boar asked, “Are you alright, little Rui?”

Bai Yunfei, Zheng Kai, Tang Xinyun, and Kou Tingting dropped down next to get to Huangfu Rui. In Zheng Kai’s arms was the little girl Bai Yunfei saved a while ago.

It was with some grievance that Huangfu Rui dug herself into the arms of Tang Xinyun. “You’re finally here, sis Yun....how could you leave me all alone here....I...I didn’t know what to do....”

Pained, Tang Xinyun stroked and patted the little girl on her back. “Don’t be afraid, little Rui. You’re fine now, safe and sound....”

Bai Yunfei was noticeably calmer now that he could see for

himself that Huangfu Rui was safe. He stood off to the side when Tang Xinyun and Kou Tingting hugged Huangfu Rui to their chests to scan the area vigilantly.

The first thing he saw was the ‘aftermath’ of the battle between Huangfu Rui and the Hornets, one of the most noticeable things being the crater left behind by the bamboo bird she used earlier. Also more noticeable was the puddle of blood a little ways away from Huangfu Rui. This puddle of blood was surprising to Bai Yunfei, and he could see that the blood was still quite fresh.

“How’d you get all the way here, Doraemon?” He couldn’t help but ask. “And were you fighting here?”

Everyone else looked around to see what Bai Yunfei was looking at. Like him, they all looked surprised at their surroundings and turned to Huangfu Rui for answers.

Still hiding in Tang Xinyun’s chest, Huangfu Rui took a moment before she answered Bai Yunfei’s question. It took another second for her to formulate a response.

“I....I don’t know. I was already here when I woke up. Then....I um....saw some bad guys that wanted to bully me....”

Everyone looked surprise. They couldn’t help but feel surprised even though they knew Huangfu Rui was completely fine. “Was it the ‘Hornets’?” Bai Yunfei asked. “The people we came across back in Vacancy Inn.”

“It was them.” She nodded.

A grim light entered Bai Yunfei’s eyes. “And then what?”

A head tilt.

“I fought with them and was winning when my soulforce stopped working. I was nearly hit by them when....”

She looked a little reluctant to mention that part. Patting her chest for reassurance, she continued, “Uncle Dongfang came in to

save the day. I don't know what he did, but those people were scared off....”

“Uncle Dongfang??”

Again, everyone looked confused. “Who is this ‘uncle Dongfang?’” Bai Yunfei asked.

“I don't really know....” Huangfu Rui admitted, “but he's a really good uncle. He knows mom.”

“Where is he now then?”

“I don't know, he disappeared all of a sudden....”

“.....”

Each question Bai Yunfei asked only served to make him even more confused. All the questions he asked weren't getting him any answers, meaning they still didn't know why Huangfu Rui was all the way here in such a faraway place. They also didn't know why they would come across the Hornets here of all places. And last but not least, this ‘uncle Dongfang’ was a point of interest for Bai Yunfei now. Why was he gone? It was very suspicious.

And with all the blood and gore nearby, it was very obvious to Bai Yunfei to say the Hornets weren't simply ‘scared off’ like Huangfu Rui said uncle Dongfang did.

They were simply killed.

“Ngh....”

A small sound broke the train of thought Bai Yunfei was having. Whirling around, he realized the voice was coming from the unconscious girl in Zheng Kai's arms!

Like Bai Yunfei, Zheng Kai tilted his head down to look at the girl. “Yunfei!” He barked, “Something's....something's wrong with the girl!!”

# Chapter 719: Powerlessness

---

The little girl they rescued from the blood octopus had been asleep ever since she was first taken down underground. With everything that was happening, Bai Yunfei didn't have the time to take a proper look at the girl and how she was doing. Then when Huangfu Rui was said to be missing, Bai Yunfei was left with even less time to think about the little girl. All he could do was entrust her to Zheng Kai as they left to find Huangfu Rui.

Since the little girl seemed fine as she slept, no one expected her to suddenly be in a lot of pain!

Zheng Kai had been holding onto her the entire time. Her dirty clothes were still stained black with the inky liquid from the blood octopus, and her face was slightly grimy with the combination of sweat and dirt on it. Her mouth was twisted in pain as if trying to cry out, and her eyes were squirming in an effort to open them, but had seemingly no strength to do so.

Everyone crowded around her with Bai Yunfei the one closest to her excluding Zheng Kai. He placed a palm onto her forehead. It felt hot to the touch, but there was something else that bothered him. Scanning her body with his soulsense, Bai Yunfei quickly realized just what it was that was wrong and jerked his hand back!

“What is it, Yunfei?”

A strong reaction like that was surprising, and Tang Xinyun just had to ask what was going on.

“Elemental darkness....it's corroding her energy!”

“What?!”

Of everyone there, it was Tang Xinyun who was most surprised and understanding. “Could it be....the Soul Refining Palm?! Was a little girl like her really hit by such a poisonous attack?!”

“No, it doesn't seem like the Soul Refining Palm.” Bai Yunfei



replied. “But the aura feels familiar. I felt something like this when I was fighting the blood octopus earlier. If I’m not wrong then she must’ve been affected due to overexposure....that blood octopus was a soulbeast with a dark affinity. The blood it spat out and the sticky liquid it shot from its tentacles were both very hard to deal with. It has to be like a poison for a commoner, and their bodies shouldn’t be able to handle it all, that’s why she’s like this now.”

His guess was right. The girl was indeed being poisoned by the energy of the blood octopus. In order to be properly used as bait, the blood octopus had the girl put into a state of ‘suspended death’. Whenever she was needed, the octopus would ‘wake’ her up and allow her to call out for help in the lord-mayor’s mansion. The blood octopus would even feed her some of its soulforce to keep her alive for just a little longer. If it didn’t, the girl would’ve died a long time ago. But now without the soulforce to counteract against the blood octopus’ energy, the girl’s body was ‘infected’. If not for Bai Yunfei appearing and killing the blood octopus, the girl would most likely be dead already.

The only way the normally unintelligible blood octopus would know of such a method to ‘fish’ for prey was simply because of the guidance of its master and Gui Wei.

So to reiterate, the malignant symptoms showing up in the girl’s body was the result of her body no longer being fed any soulforce to stop the elemental darkness in it! It would’ve been possible to prolong the stasis her body was in if the blood octopus was still alive to feed its soulforce into her, but that was no longer the case! She was in pain now, and if nothing was done about it, the girl would die in excruciating pain!

The look of pain on the young girl’s face was unbearable for Kou Tingting, the resident expert on healing due to her training in elemental water. “Let me try something.”

She walked up to the girl and raised both hands forward. Elemental water coated her hands before she pressed them onto

the head and stomach of the young girl.

“The corrosive energy is highly resistant to external forces and is prone to outbursts.” Bai Yunfei warned her, “Take it slow and use a little soulforce for a preemptive scan first, else you’re going to hurt her even more.”

Kou Tingting nodded. Biting down on her lip, she maneuvered her soulforce slowly into the young girl’s body to start her treatment.

“Nghn...”

The young girl’s body trembled violently upon the new intrusion. Her whimper of pain caused Kou Tingting to pull her hand back in great concern. “I can’t....It’s as difficult as Yunfei says. I can’t treat this....”

“Then...should I give her the Yun’s Soul Ring?” Tang Xinyun asked.

As a victim of the Soul Refining Palm and the corrosive energy of elemental darkness, Tang Xinyun was more than aware of how effective the Yun’s Soul Ring was for it. Since this little was in the same boat she had been, Tang Xinyun saw it prudent to offer up such a solution.

But her suggestion was denied. “It won’t work. Her soul’s already too weak since she’s a commoner, and she can’t even circulate her own soulforce. The Yun’s Soul Ring won’t help her here.”

“Then....” Crestfallen, Tang Xinyun asked, “what are we to do? Watch as this young girl in front of us suffers until she dies?”

The group stood there unsure of what to do.

Two streaks of light were heading over to where they stood—it was Xiao Qi and Long Lan. Having gone to look for Huangfu Rui in a different direction from the others, it wasn’t until Xiao Qi was notified by Bai Yunfei through their soulbond that Xiao Qi in turn looked for Long Lan to convene with the others.

“Oh!” Bai Yunfei’s eyes lit up when he sensed the arrival of the two soulbeasts. “Long Lan! Long Lan can give it a try!”

“What did you say?” Long Lan asked as he came down.

“Long Lan, come here,” Bai Yunfei gestured for him to come over, “Send some of your soulforce into this girl, use your elemental darkness! And be slow about it.”

“Oh, okay.”

Long Lan didn’t quite understand what was going on, but the urgent looks on everyone faces told him that now wasn’t the time to ask questions. Two steps later, he was right by the girl’s side with the palm of his right hand pressed against the girl’s forehead. A moment later, a wisp of black smoke started to rise from his hand!

It was elemental darkness!

Long Lan was given an affinity for elemental darkness after he became a class seven soulbeast, meaning he was now a blue-eyes white wyrm with an affinity for both elemental darkness and elemental water—a world’s first perhaps in terms of every other blue-eyes white wyrm. This was all because of the Black Dragon King’s blood in which Long Lan lapped up all the way back in the Soulbeast Forest. By ingesting his blood, Long Lan was able to digest and absorb the power inside the blood to make it into his own.

His control over elemental darkness could hardly be considered strong or of any particular notice compared to his elemental water. But together, the elemental darkness could boost his elemental water control to a rather effective degree much like how Bai Yunfei could use his companion lightningseed to boost his control over elemental fire.

What Bai Yunfei was thinking was a little simple. If the little girl was afflicted with elemental darkness, then Long Lan could in turn

try to control that energy and remove it.

And to his great surprise and pleasure, it was working!!

The improvements to the young girl's situation was extremely noticeable the very moment Long Lan's elemental darkness entered her. Like a snake, the elemental darkness that was in her body started to slow down its weaving to calm down and go into hibernation.

This was however a 'temporary' measure. Long Lan couldn't pull his hand back in fear of the elemental darkness flaring up again and sending the girl back into a world of pain.

The girl was safe from danger for now, but that didn't mean they were well on the way to curing and saving her life.

Bai Yunfei pressed a hand to his aching temple. "Ai, what should we do now...."

It had been a great pain for Bai Yunfei to save the young girl from the blood octopus. To see her in pain and without being able to do a thing was heartbreaking, and Bai Yunfei found it hard to just watch to see her life slowly drain away from her.

"Yunfei...."

A tiny voice spoke to Bai Yunfei.

It was Xiao Qi, whose head was cocked towards the left side of the forest. His voice spoke out to Bai Yunfei in his head.

"There's someone there!!"

## Chapter 720: Another Enemy?!

---

“There’s someone hiding to the left!!”

What Xiao Qi said to Bai Yunfei was alarming to say, since he didn’t sense a thing. Fighting back the instinct to turn his head in that direction, Bai Yunfei activated the Charm Bracelet to link his mind with Xiao Qi. This in turn allowed the two to ‘share’ what each other was sensing, allowing Bai Yunfei to sense just a short hundred meters to the left, two people were hiding there in the bushes!

Bai Yunfei didn’t even know when those two people had appeared in the forest, and neither did he know that they were even here!

As battle weary as Bai Yunfei was, he wasn’t so tired that his perception of aura wouldn’t be able to pick up somebody hiding within such a short distance away from him.

This meant these two people were considerably strong!

Fearful that he might catch the attention of the two people hiding, Xiao Qi’s soulsense was only just strong enough to be able to sense their existence and not gauge how strong they are. The only reason he even sensed them to begin with was because of them entering his range of perception.

Already fidgety due to him trying his best to save the young girl from dying, Bai Yunfei was extremely vexed by the fact that there were people hiding within such a close range. Even if he tried to exclude the shock he was feeling from it, there was no helping him feeling angry about it—people hiding so secretly like that must mean they were enemies!

And it still remained to be seen if they were the people responsible for the disappearance of Huangfu Rui! Or they might even be people from the Soul Refining School!

“Ah’Zheng, Xinyun, Tingting, don’t panic and watch over the little girl. Long Lan, keep healing her.”

His eyes darted to Zheng Kai and the others, issuing them orders to warn them of the situation.

“Eh? Yunfei, what are you ta—”

Tang Xinyun didn’t even finish her question when Bai Yunfei suddenly took off towards the forest to the left with his soulforce blazing for combat!

His entire body was aflame with his soulforce pushed to its limits to burn with solemn determination.

Xiao Qi took off after Bai Yunfei, his soulforce burning comparatively less frightful to provide Bai Yunfei with support.

Bai Yunfei’s explosive leap forward took him a good several dozen meters forward. A secondary leap took him up into the trees where he lashed out with his right hand. There was a clanking sound as a stream of red chains came out from his sleeves to snake towards the bushes twenty meters forward.

“Whoosh!!”

The burning heat from the chains raised the temperature of the surrounding area by a good few degrees, incinerating any piece of foliage in its path to head towards its target!

At the same time the chain was flying forward, the soulforce of two peak late-stage Soul Exalts leapt out from their hiding spots!

“Hmph!!”

Sneering at their attempts to dodge, Bai Yunfei curved the Devouring Chains left to go after and entangle the one on the left.

A soft gasp came from the one the chains was coming after. Kicking off a nearby tree, the person’s right hand shook with a black light before a short sword appeared in it. In a flurry of sparks, the blade clashed against the chain and deflected it away!

“Eh!?”

What surprised Bai Yunfei wasn't the fact that this person was a female, but that the light that came from the person's body was....black!

Elemental darkness!!

“So they are from the Soul Refining School?!” The glare in Bai Yunfei's eyes was kicked up by a notch.

He pulled his right hand back to turn the chains away from the person. Changing targets, the chains went straight for the waist of the person to the right.

“Be careful, senior! These chains are strange!”

The woman with the short blade called out to her companion as she kicked off from a tree. Borrowing the strength from the rebound, she flew for Bai Yunfei to hopefully force him back and cancel his attack on her companion.

The one known as her 'senior' didn't seem flustered. Raising his right hand, a longsword appeared in it. It came down onto the sword when he flicked his hand and elicited a clanging sound when the blade hit the chain. He gasped to himself when he felt the force behind the chain and twisted his sword up to deflect the chains up into the air, effectively removing the chains as a threat.

Given a clear shot at Bai Yunfei since the chains were going elsewhere, the female soul cultivator flew towards Bai Yunfei. When she was just ten meters away, her shortsword came out to stab at his throat in a burst of dark light!

Not flustered in the slightest at either his chains being parried or the female soul cultivator coming at his throat, Bai Yunfei simply stood there and waved his left hand at the woman.

There was a faint buzzing sound before a fiery object came out from behind Bai Yunfei to slam into the incoming person!

## The Cataclysmic Seal!

A bit surprised at the incoming attack, the female soul cultivator shifted her trajectory to dodge. Even as close as the object was coming, she was able to dodge it completely and leap onto a nearby tree branch.

It was a quick and simple exchange of battle between Bai Yunfei and the other two soul cultivators. But in that short amount of time, Bai Yunfei was able to glean a decent amount of information on them.

They were both peak late-stage Soul Exalts, but their strength was probably a lot stronger than most people in that respective stage, whether it be in speed or strength. One of the more surprising things was their fluctuation of soulforce throughout the fight and how calm they had been. Though Bai Yunfei also had to admit their soul armaments were quite impressive, with both of them being a high-earth tier at the very least.

The man looked as if he wanted to say something after his companion dodged the brick, but before he could, his junior drew forward to attack Bai Yunfei again!

A coil of black energy whirled away from her person when she stepped forward. With that step, she thrust forward the short sword in her hand to throw it at him!

Like a black mamba, the black light snaked out from her arm to chase down Bai Yunfei!

Bai Yunfei quirked an eyebrow. Rather than dodge it, he lashed out with a left straight!

“Clang!!”

Under the bewildered eyes of the female soul cultivator, Bai Yunfei’s left hand slammed into the jet black beam of light and knocked aside the short sword in it.

“No way!!”



She was thunderstruck by what Bai Yunfei did. Bringing her hand up to recall the sword, a burning sensation from behind her head caused her to turn around. When she did, her eyes widened in shock when she saw a giant ‘boulder’ coming straight at her to knock her down!

# Chapter 721: A Misunderstanding

“Crack!”

The Cataclysmic Seal came crashing through several tree branches, careening and burning through them with an intensive heat and barely missing the female soul cultivator as she dodged it.

Bai Yunfei waved his right hand to call the Cataclysmic Seal back to him. As he did, he swung his right hand behind to counter the gust of wind coming at him from behind!

The Devouring Chains curved backwards to fly towards the right. Sweeping around the figure, the tip of the chains turned swiftly like a snake to wrap around the incoming person’s waist!

Bai Yunfei’s expression took a turn for the better when he saw the chains connect. Tugging on it, he had the chains brighten up in a flash of red light and just a tad bit of black before soulforce began to ran through it back into Bai Yunfei!

The special effect of the Devouring Chains had activated!

Devouring Chains’ stats:

Equipment Grade: Low Heaven  
Elemental Affinity: Fire, Darkness  
Upgrade Level: +11  
Attack: 2800  
Additional Attack: 1950  
Soul Compatibility: 43%  
Equipment Effect: Drain up to 10 soulpoints per second of any constricted target (One at the most).  
(Amount is determinant on the difference in strength between user and target).  
Amount of soulforce drained cannot exceed total soulforce reserve.  
+10 Additional Effect: Add an additional target that can be drained. Increase the amount of soulpoints drained per second to 15.  
Targets lose additional soulforce equivalent to 50% of their soulforce drained when breaking free.  
Upgrade Requirement: 180 Soulpoints

---

It was easy to see the surprise the man was feeling when the Devouring Chains started to take away his soulforce, since his speed dropped drastically. Contrary to what Bai Yunfei had thought though, the man remained calm despite his soulforce being drained and began to move with even greater power than before.

Still maintaining his direction forward, the man ignored the chains at his waist and struck out with his sword towards Bai Yunfei's throat!

Bai Yunfei hadn't planned on dodging since he thought the Devouring Chains would deal with his opponent well enough. But now that he was being attacked, Bai Yunfei gave up the idea to tighten the Devouring Chains and lifted his right arm up to protect himself.

“Clang!!”

Sparks flew as the sword stabbed through Bai Yunfei's robes, revealing the Flameblade Bracer beneath it. The sword had managed to pierce his robes, but not the bracer, saving Bai Yunfei from harm.

For a moment, Bai Yunfei was relieved and nearly dropped his guard, only to be surprised yet again when he saw a black wispy hand get within three inches away from his throat!

The abruptness of the person's hand was in part due to the longsword which was abandoned so that the owner could grab at Bai Yunfei!

The bone-chilling winds brought forth with the man's hand brushed against Bai Yunfei, but before the hand could land, Bai Yunfei's body burst out with a furious killing intent!

“Hmph!!”

Bai Yunfei grunted, activating the Charm Bracelet on his hand to

unleash a pseudo-soul attack!

Before the hand could latch onto him, Bai Yunfei Flash Stepped away from it and countered with a heavy left punch onto the hand!

“Bang!!”

The two combatants split apart from one another, but it was the other man who was the worse off of the two! Still entangled in the Devouring Chains, he was unable to break away and was left stuck there!

“Senior!”

The female soul cultivator cried out before flying straight over to his side.

He raised his hand up to stop the girl from coming over. The aura radiating from his person was a great deal stronger now along with his stare at Bai Yunfei. Black mist flowed off from his person in droves before he spoke out to Bai Yunfei with a great deal of hatred.

“The Devouring Chains!! You really are from the Soul Refining School!!”

His angered roar startled Bai Yunfei, who was prepared for anything but that. Raising an eyebrow, he replied, “What?! Aren’t you from the Soul Refining School?!”

What the man said wasn’t something Bai Yunfei expected to hear. Not only did it mean this person wasn’t from the Soul Refining School, the Soul Refining School was actually an enemy of theirs too.

The other man was surprised by Bai Yunfei’s response as well, though the woman with him snorted, “Pah!! You wicked soul refiners, don’t even bother pretending! You’ve killed the every single commoner in a city and exterminated the lives of every soul cultivator, the Heavens will not tolerate this! We—”

Her companion held his hand up to stare quizzically at Bai Yunfei. “Where are you people from?”

The anger Bai Yunfei was feeling was wiped away almost at once. “Friends, there might be a mistake here. We believed you to be the evildoers from the Soul Refining School and attacked you....but the two of you were hiding in the bushes and looking at us, what was the meaning behind this?”

Now that he was calmed down, Bai Yunfei realized neither of the two had bothered to use their full strength to fight. It wasn't until the final moments where the man thought Bai Yunfei was from the Soul Refining School that he was beginning to grow serious. But Bai Yunfei was given the impression they didn't like the Soul Refining School either.

In other words, these two people were possibly not enemies and were just soul cultivators with the rare affinity for elemental darkness. But the fact that they recognized the Devouring Chains was a little surprising, and Bai Yunfei made a mental note of that for future reference.

Slightly surprised at what Bai Yunfei was saying, the man gave him a second look over and then to Zheng Kai and the others. “Friend,” he said after a long time, “we two have no ill will towards your group. By the orders of our masters were we instructed to investigate Formagua City. We sensed several people coming out from the city and decided to take a closer look. Please forgive us for any slight we might've caused.”

His soul armament was already sealed back into his space ring, indicating that he was trying to convince Bai Yunfei of their good will.

But the female with him didn't look convinced. “What are you playing at, senior? Don't believe in his words! They came out from Formagua City not too long ago, they might be the soul refiners we're looking for! And didn't you say that's the Devouring Chains

in his hands? Who else but the Soul Refining School would have a special soul armament like that?”

“Don’t be so rash,” the man spoke soft enough so only his companion could hear, “they might not be from the Soul Refining School. I might just be mistaken too, that weapon might or might not be the Devouring Chains, I can’t be sure.....but surely you must’ve realized that we’ve no chance of success in winning if we start fighting!”

He cast his eyes towards Xiao Qi and Long Lan standing behind Bai Yunfei. “If my senses aren’t wrong, that bird is a class seven!! And that tall man over there is a Soul King!”

“What!?” She whirled around to give Long Lan and Xiao Qi a glance before immediately growing silent.

The Cataclysmic Seal and Devouring Chains were stored back into Bai Yunfei’s space ring as the two were talking. “It seems this really was a mistake. Please rest assured, friends. We aren’t from the Soul Refining School either. This one is Bai Yunfei of the Crafting School. Whom might you two be?”

“Crafting School!”

“Bai Yunfei!”

The two gasped at the same time, staring at him almost incredulously as if they didn’t believe him.

Silent for just a second, the man cupped his hands in greeting. “What a surprise to meet brother Bai from the Crafting School here today. This one is Xu Ran, and this is my junior, Han Yue. We are....”

He hesitated to speak, but in the end, he finished the rest of his sentence.

“We are....from the Underworld School.”

# Chapter 722: Underworld School

---

Xu Ran looked a little hesitant to answer Bai Yunfei on where he was from, but managed to say it in the end. The Underworld Sect didn't have much of a 'name' in the world of soul cultivators, but it was all a misunderstanding of sorts. Xu Ran wasn't afraid of the trouble this misunderstanding of his school might give him, and neither did he care to hide his affiliation half the time. To him, being a part of the Underworld School was something to be proud about and not something he should hide from others.

This did differ from person to person though. Xu Ran wouldn't even bother to say anything if he was talking to just any regular person.

"The Underworld School?"

Bai Yunfei repeated the name, tasting the words on his tongue.

"The school that focuses on elemental darkness, that Underworld School?!"

"It is as you say." Xu Ran nodded.

His confirmation was even more surprising to Bai Yunfei. Never did he imagine that a student from the Underworld School would appear here.

Bai Yunfei heard of the Underworld School before from one of his seniors back in the Crafting School. They were a mysterious group that specialized in elemental darkness. Not only was the school special in that it was mysterious, it was also quite strong. Though not strong enough to be considered one of the Ten Great Schools, that was primarily because of their relatively low numbers. Those soul cultivators with an aptitude for elemental darkness were much rarer than the other elements.

The Underworld School had been a 'secluded' one ever since its founding a thousand years ago, meaning they rarely ventured out

into the world, so very few commoners and soul cultivators even knew of their existence. Due to the 'darker' side to elemental darkness, the people in the Underworld varied in personalities in strange ways. And combined with their tendency to avoid contact with the outside world, the entire world hadn't a very good opinion of them.

One reason why the Underworld School didn't venture out into the world often was due to them being mistaken for the Soul Refining School by others. Since people weren't familiar with the Underworld School and were instead familiar with the Soul Refining School. With both schools focusing in training in elemental darkness, it was impossible for most soul cultivators not to mistake those from the Underworld School from the Soul Refining School.

Elemental darkness wasn't a type of elemental energy that was easy to train in. As far as all the elemental energies go, elemental darkness was the easiest one to go wrong and have practitioners 'go down the wrong path'. It was those who trained in elemental darkness that took up the majority when considering those who caused all sorts of tragedies on the continent to date. In this world, soul cultivators that trained in elemental darkness were often led down the path where their very nature was warped, and the Soul Refining School was all too happy to take in those said people.

There were those that were never led astray from their moral paths. Those who trained in elemental darkness without deviation would join the 'Underworld School', but their numbers were very, very few.

Most people didn't even know where the Underworld School was located. But Bai Yunfei's master was one of the few that did. From Zi Jin, Bai Yunfei learned that they were located somewhere in the Southward River Province, and it just so happened they were here in Formagua City.

.....



So here stood two people from the Underworld School now. With their elemental darkness flying off from their bodies, it looked as though it was actually a dark fire that was burning from them.

Thanks to the assistance of the moonlight, Bai Yunfei was able to see what the two looked like.

Xu Ran wore a gray robe simplistic in material and design. He was tall but scrawny with skin relatively white. His eyes were dark and deep, shining with a light that made him look a little unapproachable just like how his demeanor would otherwise indicate.

The dark smoke radiating from his companion Han Yue was comparatively less than Xu Ran, allowing Bai Yunfei to see even more detail of her. She wore a dark-purple robe that hugged her body rather tightly. She had a pointy chin and eyebrows with eyes that had a sharp gaze to them, making her look more like a strong and independent woman rather than a fragile one.

“Friends from the Underworld School, I see. Then please forgive me for my past transgressions. This one has a few important matters to take care of, so if you would please excuse us, my group has to leave now.”

Bai Yunfei smiled and cupped his hands, though he glanced towards Zheng Kai with some concern at the young girl in his hands. Leaving behind one final word of conversation to the two, Bai Yunfei turned away.

His actions were surprising to Xu Ran. In his time in the Underworld School, Xu Ran came across all sorts of reactions from people when told about where he came from. There were people who were afraid, those who were hostile, and those who tried to curry favor with them. But Bai Yunfei’s ‘indifference’ was a first for him.

So when Bai Yunfei turned around rather hurriedly, Xu Ran hesitated for a moment before following after him.

His companion Han Yue followed after him, but with a suspicious glance at Bai Yunfei. “Do you really believe in what he’s saying, senior?” She whispered, “Do you really think he’s that Bai Yunfei from the Crafting School? Hmph. He looks like a haughty person, we can’t trust someone like him so easily. We should leave though, he’s not our enemy. You said we can’t beat him too, so let’s just head back and meet with teacher Mu....”

Xu Ran shook his head, “There’s no need for him to lie to us. He would’ve done something by now if he wanted to. I believe him in any case. Bai Yunfei from the Crafting School....it’d be a good thing to get to know him if we meet him. He probably knows more about what happened to Formagua City than we do. We were told to find out about what happened here, so let’s ask them a few questions. I sent a message to teacher Mu already, so he should be on his way over soon. Let’s just wait.”

Their conversation was a very quiet one, but not quite enough for Bai Yunfei to not hear it. Han Yue’s suspicions of him was a little humorous to Bai Yunfei, and he found himself smiling at that.

“Haughty? Me? Aren’t you more ‘haughty’ than I am with that cold attitude of yours?”

Like her though, Bai Yunfei wasn’t fully convinced of their words either, so he had Xiao Qi on the lookout just in case they tried to do anything.

“How’s it looking?”

Bai Yunfei asked Zheng Kai when the two reconvened.

“Long Lan can’t get it stabilized even though he’s putting in a continuous stream of soulforce. If he stops, then the girl’s soul will be completely devoured by the corrosive energy....” Tang Xinyun spoke up for Zheng Kai with concern.

She noticed Han Yue and Xu Ran behind Bai Yunfei, “Yunfei, these two are....?”

Bai Yunfei fighting the two mysterious strangers was startling to the group at first, but they were ready to help Bai Yunfei fight them since they were warned about it beforehand. Luckily, the battle was only for a short few rounds before it was ‘solved’ amicably. Confused by the going-ons between them and Bai Yunfei, the group decided to wait for Bai Yunfei to explain it to them.

“Just a misunderstanding,” Bai Yunfei replied. “These two people came to investigate Formagua City, they’re from the Underworld School.”

“The Underworld School?” Zheng Kai perked an eyebrow in surprise, “They’re from that school?!”

Bai Yunfei nodded, but declined to introduce the two to the rest of the group. Instead, he stared at the little girl in concern and thought hard on what to do.

A thought occurred to him then.

Turning his head to Xu Ran, Bai Yunfei asked, “Brother Xu Ran, as a student of the Underworld School, you must be an expert on elemental darkness, correct?”

Not expecting to be asked such a question, it took Xu Ran a second to respond. “Why ask a question like that, brother Bai? Though yes, when it comes to elemental darkness, I have a decent knowledge of it....”

Bai Yunfei’s eyes lit up. “In that case, this one would like to ask for your help, brother Xu Ran. We saved this little girl from Formagua City, but she was affected by whatever it was the Soul Refining School was doing and had elemental darkness enter her body. She’s at the edge of death right now, but we can’t do much to help her. As an expert, brother Xu Ran, please help us save this little girl. This one will be more than happy to heavily compensate you for your help!”

“Oh?? That’s the issue?” Xu Ran’s eyebrows rose up on his face. He had been a little puzzled on what was going on, and now that he had an idea behind the situation, Xu Ran broke out into a smile. “Then if brother Bai was so kind to ask, I will be more than happy to give it my all.”

He took two steps past Zheng Kai and gave a polite nod to Long Lan before taking a good look at what was going on with the little girl.

Surprised at Xu Ran’s actions, Han Yue blinked a few times in confusion. The normally quiet and antisocial senior of hers looked like a completely different stranger today with how active he was being.

As that was going on, Bai Yunfei suddenly turned to the skies. He was followed by Xiao Qi, Long Lan, Zheng Kai, and even Xu Ran and Han Yue to all look at something there.

Something in the distance was coming towards them with the speed of two green shooting stars!

# Chapter 723: Suddenly Meeting Huangfu Nan

---

Bai Yunfei's reason for asking Xu Ran for help had two main factors in it. One was to fully confirm that Xu Ran was proficient in elemental darkness. The other was to see if Xu Ran was willing to help. If he was, then Bai Yunfei could spare him the benefit of the doubt.

And it worked. Xu Ran's immediate acceptance to help them was refreshing to Bai Yunfei, and he felt himself expectant of the results.

But even before Xu Ran could even finish, two new figures were already making their way over!

"Again...." Bai Yunfei narrowed his eyes. "Every single time when I thought it's over, something else pops up....who are these people this time?"

But then when the two figures drew close, Bai Yunfei's eyes widened in surprise. Xiao Qi was telling him these people were Soul Kings!

Two Soul Kings!!

Just one would've been more than enough to shock him, but there were two.

And if they were enemies, then there would definitely be trouble afoot....

But then Han Yue called out to one of them with joy, "Teacher Mu!!"

Were they elders from the Underworld School then?

Bai Yunfei's head snapped to Han Yue when she called out to them. She was a lot closer to where the two figures were coming from, so she could see them a lot earlier than Bai Yunfei could. But

then when the two got close, Bai Yunfei found himself staring in confusion at the two incoming figures again.

A happy cry erupted from Huangfu Rui a moment afterward.....

“Dad!!”

“Whoosh!!”

The two bolts of lightning descended from the skies right in front of Bai Yunfei and the others, storing away their flying soul armaments back into their space rings.

One of the two figures was a man in his fifties with a graying beard under his chin. The wrinkles on his face weren't very noticeable despite his physical age, and his eyes were as sharp as any other person in their prime. His aura was calm, but intimidating to the degree that it demanded respect from anyone that could see it.

This person surely had to be the ‘teacher Mu’ Xu Ran and Han Yue were talking about.

But the person to the side wasn't from the Underworld School like this teacher Mu was. This person was none other than Huangfu Rui's father, the second elder of the Crafting School, Huangfu Nan!!

He wasn't looking at all like Bai Yunfei last remembered, though. His normally clean and orderly brown robes were matted and dirty, his face was looking fatigued, his breathing disorderly, and his eyes looking very shocked.

In one instant, he was down to the ground where Huangfu Rui was.

Sweeping her into his arms, Huangfu Nan immediately started to bombard her with questions.

“Ah'Rui?! What are you doing here in this place?!”

His voice was filled with confusion, panic, and even alarm.

“It really is you, dad!!” Huangfu Rui cried out in happiness in his arms. “It’s you!” She repeated, “Heehee, why are you here, dad?”

By now, Bai Yunfei, Tang Xinyun, and Kou Tingting were moving in to greet the man. “Second elder.” They bowed.

“What....what brings you here, second elder?” Bai Yunfei asked.

Now over his shock at seeing his daughter here, Huangfu Nan gave Bai Yunfei a long look. “What are you youngsters doing here?” He replied.

“We came to the Southward River Province to go sightseeing....”

“Sightseeing?!” Huangfu Nan exploded with anger, for some reason. “And here of all places?! What in the world possessed you to do that?!”

“.....” Bai Yunfei didn’t know how to respond. Huangfu Nan being angry wasn’t something he expected to see, and so he didn’t really know the best answer to give.

It was only supposed to be a normal sightseeing tour....how it ended up becoming a trip straight into danger was a complete mystery to Bai Yunfei.

As confused as he was, Bai Yunfei couldn’t stop himself from asking, “Second elder....why are you here in this place as well?”

It was an even bigger mystery on why Huangfu Nan was here in this place. There was no possible way that Huangfu Nan would be here to ‘sightsee’, after all. Bai Yunfei remembered that Huangfu Nan came with Tang Xinyun and Kou Tingting to the Capital and then left abruptly for some odd reason. To have him show up here of all places was an extremely odd coincidence.

“Yeah dad, why are you here? Are you looking for me, dad?” Huangfu Rui tilted her head to look up at her dad. Then she wrinkled her nose in disgust, “You smell weird, dad. Did you not shower for days or something?”

“Hnmm....” Huangfu Nan looked almost embarrassed by the question asked of him by his daughter.

Because of his day and night chase after that person, he had indeed skipped out on showering.

“Elder Huangfu, are these people....from your Crafting School?”

A slightly surprised voice asked Huangfu Nan from behind him. It was the other elder that came with him.

Huangfu Nan released his daughter from his grasp to give the man a nod. “Indeed, these are students from my school.”

His eyes paused briefly on Zheng Kai and Long Lan, prompting Bai Yunfei to hurriedly try and introduce them. “Second elder, these are my friends, Zheng Kai and Long Lan.”

With how hurried this situation was, Bai Yunfei opted to just say their name rather than properly introduce them.

Huangfu Nan gave Long Lan a strange look at how he was treating the little girl there. But when he ascertained his strength as a fellow Soul King, Huangfu Nan bowed politely to him.

Since the little girl was still in his arms, Zheng Kai opted to bow his head rather than his whole body. “This junior pays his respects to senior Huangfu Nan.”

Huangfu Nan nodded. Turning back to the elder with him, he introduced him to the group. “This is elder Mu Chen, an elder from the Underworld School, pay your respects to him.”

“This junior pays our respects to senior Mu.” Bai Yunfei, Tang Xinyun, and the others all bowed to the man.

“Haha, be at ease.” Mu Chen waved his hand in a manner that betrayed his stiff expression. His eyes traveled over to Xu Ran and Han Yue, “This is elder Huangfu Nan from the Crafting School, hurry up and pay your respects.”

“This junior pays our respects to senior Huangfu.” The two



bowed obediently.

Huangfu Nan waved his hand just like how Mu Chen had done. “Elder Mu, there are a few things I’d like to ask my students, let us talk about that matter latter then?”

Mu Chen nodded. “Yes, I’d like to ask my students a thing or two myself.”

He beckoned Xu Ran and Han Yue to come with him.

Huangfu Nan eyed his daughter briefly before turning his eye towards Bai Yunfei, Zheng Kai, and Long Lan. Massaging his temple with one hand to calm himself, Huangfu Nan looked back to Bai Yunfei. “Speak then, what in the world happened here? In Formagua City? And what happened to that girl there?”

He pointed at the girl in Zheng Kai’s arms.

Since the arrival of the two elders caused Xu Ran to step away, Long Lan had to step back in to stabilize the matter. Bai Yunfei thought about how to explain the situation to Huangfu Nan. In his mind, Bai Yunfei thought that since an elder from the Underworld School was here, their chances of saving the girl would be a lot higher if he helped.

Now with a proper explanation in mind, Bai Yunfei started to explain the situation to Huangfu Nan without leaving out even the smallest of details starting when they first arrived in Formagua City.

A while later....

“You’re saying a mysterious person ‘saved’ little Rui? Do you know who this person is, or what this person is called?”

That was the first question Huangfu Nan asked Bai Yunfei after he listened to the story.

Bai Yunfei hadn’t thought that’d be the first question he’d be asked, but he didn’t have a question regardless. “He was gone by

the time we came. According to what little Rui said, his name was....Dongfang something....”

“What?!!!”

Huangfu Nan exploded in shock at the name. Both hands flew forward to grab Bai Yunfei on the shoulders as Huangfu Nan gave him a wide-eyed stare of panic and confusion. “Did you say his surname was Dongfang?! A man named Dongfang?! Was he Dongfang Ming?! Was it Dongfang Ming?!”

## Chapter 724: Dongfang Ming?

---

Just hearing the name ‘Dongfang’ sent Huangfu Nan into a panic. His normal regal demeanor of a Soul King was all but gone now as fury blazed out from his person. Like a lion nearly ready to pounce on its prey and devour it, Huangfu Nan’s aura was blaring with furious intensity into the surrounding area. Even the surrounding ten meters of ground was impacted like a crater from the pressure he was exerting on the area.

His reaction startled everyone within the vicinity, including Mu Chen and the others who were standing a good distance away.

Feeling as though his shoulder was about to shatter, Bai Yunfei’s forehead started to drip with sweat. “Second elder,” He managed to cry out, “please calm down! What’s going on?!”

His words activated the Charm Bracelet on his wrist and layered his words with a mesmerizing aura to be transmitted into Huangfu Nan’s mind.

Bai Yunfei’s words saw to Huangfu Nan freezing immediately into place. Gasping slightly, he released Bai Yunfei’s shoulders and suppressed his aura.

Bai Yunfei sighed in relief as soon as the pressure on his shoulders was gone. Not even waiting for a response from Huangfu Nan, Bai Yunfei spoke, “We don’t know that person’s full name, senior. We never even saw the man. But from what little Rui said, his surname is definitely ‘Dongfang’, and that’s all we know....”

An unhealthy shade of puce now, Huangfu Nan whirled around to Huangfu Rui and grabbed her by the shoulders with a great deal less pressure than before. “Little Rui, did that man do anything to you? Did he say anything? Do you feel strange or anything?”

His soulsense was already scanning Huangfu Rui’s body as he was asking, seemingly panicked over if Huangfu Rui was injured.

It was with confusion that Huangfu Rui looked back at her father. “What are you saying, dad? Why are you so worried dad? Are you talking about uncle Dongfang? He didn’t do anything but scare away the bad guys!”

“Do not call that man ‘uncle’!!” Huangfu Nan exploded. “He doesn’t deserve such a title!! He....he...!!”

His abrupt loss of emotional control frightened Huangfu Rui, and he noticed that. “Little Rui. Think hard. What did he say to you, what did he do?”

Still confused, Huangfu Rui gave the question a little more thought. “He didn’t do anything though. He scared away the bad guys and then asked if I was Huangfu Rui. Then he asked how mom was. He said he knew mom....”

The look on Huangfu Nan’s face darkened several shades over at that. The furious look in his eyes turned into hatred, but without the explosion of anger like last time. Though his teeth were gritted tightly as he listened to his daughter explain.

“I asked if he knew you, dad, but he didn’t look very happy. Then he touched my head, and then....and then.....”

Huangfu Rui’s eyebrows knitted together as she tried hard to think. “I don’t remember.” She shook her head later. “I think it went dark, but then I blinked and then he was gone. Weird....”

Huangfu Nan’s pupils dilated in fear. The muscles on his face quivered violently as he tried hard to suppress the panic and anger he was feeling. A trembling hand came up to touch his daughter’s forehead. Focused, he sent his soulsense into Huangfu Rui’s body to further scan her.

His hand drew back in no time at all. Seemingly a lot weaker than before, Huangfu Nan started to mumble to himself in despondency, “What have you done to my daughter....”

.....

Bai Yunfei was confused on just why Huangfu Nan was like this. He saw that just hearing the name ‘Dongfang’ was enough to cause such a violent reaction from him, and clearly, this ‘Dongfang Ming’ was someone of importance rather than a nobody. Also very clearly was the fact that Huangfu Nan hated this Dongfang Ming. And the most obvious thing was that Huangfu Nan was clearly angered and worried that this person had injured Huangfu Rui somehow.

“Dongfang Ming? What kind of person is that....and why does second elder hate him? What was his goal in getting to Doraemon? Was he doing something to her?” Bai Yunfei’s mind raced with questions. “Does this mean that the reason why Doraemon suddenly disappeared was all because of that person?!”

He continued to stare at both Huangfu Nan and Huangfu Rui. “I always thought it was weird. Doraemon definitely has a secret to her....”

Bai Yunfei didn’t dare interrupt Huangfu Nan’s thoughts though. With how focused the man was, Bai Yunfei didn’t want to have that train of thought broken.

“What do you plan to do now, elder Huangfu? Will you be going along with me to the Underworld School and discuss that matter from before?”

A voice spoke out to Huangfu Nan a moment later. It was Mu Chen, who was done talking with Xu Ran and Han Yue.

Huangfu Nan snapped out from his thoughts. Seemingly coming to a conclusion, he eyed the man and cupped his hands. “I must apologize, elder Mu, but I cannot pay a visit to your esteemed school. There is an urgent matter I must return to the Crafting School for. Our discussions for an alliance will have to be discussed in another time.”

“What?” Mu Chen asked, his eyebrows furrowing together when he noticed how apologetic and hurried Huangfu Nan looked.

“If that’s the case, we can discuss the matter later then. It’s a shame that your esteemed self cannot pay my school a visit, haha....” He spoke in understanding of Huangfu Nan’s predicament.

Likewise, Huangfu Nan replied courteously. “Thank you for your understanding, elder Mu. Though I myself cannot go, I would like to appoint a representative of the Crafting School to go in my place as a sign of good will.”

He pointed a finger at Bai Yunfei.

“Eh?”

Bai Yunfei and Mu Chen both blinked. “Him?” Mu Chen asked.

“Yes. This youngster is Bai Yunfei, the personal student of our previous headmaster and fellow junior of the current headmaster. He is a fitting representative of our Crafting School to pay your esteemed school a visit.”

Bai Yunfei was dumbfounded by this sudden ‘mission’ thrust into his arms by Huangfu Nan. “Second elder, what do you....” He started to speak.

“Young Bai, I must return to the Crafting School. You will go in my place to the Underworld School. Aren’t you trying to save that young girl? You’d have to go to the Underworld School to do so.”

Bai Yunfei had already told Huangfu Nan the story of how the young girl came to be in such an injured state like that and how he hoped that elder Mu would help them out.

To hear Huangfu Nan say this now probably meant that in order to save the girl, they’d have to go to the Underworld School then?

Huangfu Nan turned back to Mu Chen. “Elder Mu, this young girl has elemental darkness eating away at her insides. It’s some trouble, but I hope that you may be able to take a look and save her.”

The man glanced over at the young girl in Zheng Kai's arms. "That'll be no problem. Xu Ran already told me what happened. Please rest assured, elder Huangfu, I will do my best to save her."

Huangfu Nan nodded his head in appreciation. "You heard elder Mu," He spoke to Bai Yunfei. "Bring that girl to the Underworld School with elder Mu. Do as you think best. After paying the Underworld School a visit, return to the Capital or back to the Crafting School, whichever suits you."

"I...." Bai Yunfei wanted to say something, but he acquiesced. "I will do as you say, second elder."

Then Huangfu Rui spoke up. "Are you going back home, dad?"

"Yes, and you'll be coming back with me, little Rui!" Huangfu Nan nodded.

# Chapter 725: Black Cloud Valley

---

Of every single province in the Tianhun Empire, the Southward River Province was the most beautiful of them all and perhaps even in the entire world. With all the beautiful mountains and verdant forests, every single person who visited the province felt like they had stumbled onto a paradise.

Some tourists would even forget to leave.

Those who lived in the Southward River Province—whether they be a soul cultivator or commoner—had but only one wish:

To visit every single beautiful place there was to see in the province before they died.

There was, of course, just one single place within this holy land of nature where people didn't dare step into. Like the other places of the province, this one place was beautiful beyond knowledge, but those with said knowledge would know to give this place a wide berth.

This place was a valley known as 'Black Cloud Valley'.

One of the three danger zones of the continent.

Two long ranges of mountain bordered Black Cloud Valley from both sides with a length that was nearly inconceivably long and practically equal in name to the 'Skyward Mountains' next to the Soulbeast Forest. Though as long as the mountain ranges were and how beautiful it was, there was also a valley in the middle of the two rarely visited by humans.

Aside from the freakish terrain of the valley and its mountains, Black Cloud Valley had a special characteristic to it that earned it two-thirds of its nickname.

The entirety of the valley had a single continuous black cloud hanging above it!



The black clouds weren't storm clouds that rained thunder or water. It was just a black mist that disallowed any ray of sunlight from getting past it, meaning the entire valley below was always dark.

On normal mountains, the clouds within any other valley would have clouds or mist either white or rainbow-like in color to paint the entire place a beautiful color like in a fairyland.

But Black Cloud Valley was different.

The black clouds gave an intimidating color and feel to the place that made the place like a valley of gloom. Whether it be entering the valley or observing it from afar, the valley had a stagnant air that made it resemble a ghost city.

But surely the black clouds and its strange environment wasn't the only reason why Black Cloud Valley was known as one of the three danger zones, was it?

Of course not.

This place was a 'death zone' just like the other two areas.

A hundred meters deep into Black Cloud Valley was an area where absolutely nothing lived. No plants, no animals, no humans.

It was an area of nothingness!

It wasn't limited to just 'one hundred meters' either. It was only that this was the extent of what commoners knew of the place since anyone that even stepped into the area never returned alive!

'A place of no return' was what most commoners knew Black Cloud Valley by.

The fear soul cultivators had for Black Cloud Valley wasn't any less than the fear commoners had for it. They knew more about Black Cloud Valley than commoners did and were more than happy to spread that information to the rest of their world.

Not only was soulsense useless here, the amount of beasts that

lived here was innumerable!

The clouds within the valley made visibility so poor that people wouldn't even be able to use their eyes to navigate the place. When their eyes weren't of any use, soul cultivators used their soulsense as means of sight.

But it was absolutely useless in Black Cloud Valley! Like an electric signal in a magnetic field, Black Cloud Valley rendered soulsense useless and incapable of doing anything due to some sort of mystical power.

It was that reason alone that made Black Cloud Valley a place to be feared for soul cultivators. Hindrances to both types of their senses was something that was extremely dangerous.

And that wasn't even the final nail to the coffin, there was still the second reason behind this.

All the soulbeasts!

All of them were inexplicably strong and beyond dangerous!

These feral and dangerous beasts lived in Black Cloud Valley for their entire lives, so it was their home. The vile and dangerous conditions of the place wasn't an issue for these beasts. Any soul cultivator that made it into this place would simply die to these soulbeasts, and that was that....

Countless soul cultivators would venture into Black Cloud Valley over the years in an attempt to divine its secrets. But of all the soul cultivators that entered, only an extremely small minority would be 'fortunate' enough to make it back out. Those who did were injured beyond belief, and rarely said a thing about what they saw in there.

Soon, the fear that surrounded Black Cloud Valley spread to such a degree that nearly no soul cultivator would even step foot into the place.

So it came to Bai Yunfei as a complete surprise that the

Underworld School was based in such a ‘danger zone’!!

With the black mist formulating above the skies and the clouds looking like it’d rain, Bai Yunfei really found it hard to believe he was about to step into one of the three danger zones.....

For he was currently standing in Black Cloud Valley!

To be more accurate, it was Mu Chen who led his group here to nearly a hundred meters deep into the valley. Bai Yunfei could distinctly remember that just a moment ago, the sun was shining quite brightly, but now, it was as if night had already fallen on this place.

They couldn’t even see the mountain ranges from where they were in the valley. Absolutely no grass sprouted from the grounds here, and the place was a desolate area where not even the buzzing sounds of insects or the cawing cries of birds could be heard. As the group walked in a single line through this place, most of them couldn’t help but feel a chill in their hearts.

Six people walked the line of this valley. Elder Mu Chen, Xu Ran, and Han Yue of the Underworld School, and Bai Yunfei, Zheng Kai, and Long Lan. Also with them was Xiao Qi on Bai Yunfei’s shoulder and the little girl they saved from Formagua City in Xu Ran’s arms.

About five days ago, Huangfu Nan took Huangfu Rui back to the Crafting School with him along with Tang Xinyun and Kou Tingting. The two of them knew that Huangfu Nan looked worried about something in regards to Huangfu Rui, and so the two decided to call an end to their tour here. Bidding goodbye to Bai Yunfei and the others, the two of them left to go back with Huangfu Nan.

This abrupt ending to their tour plans was a little disheartening to both Bai Yunfei and Zheng Kai, but nothing could really be done about it.

After their goodbyes, the four of them followed Mu Chen and his students to the Underworld School.

Then they came here to Black Cloud Valley.

“Hey, Yunfei. Do you....do you think we’ll be fine going in here?”

Zheng Kai asked Bai Yunfei from the side. “This is Black Cloud Valley! How creepy....are we really going to go into this place without any preparation? I remember right before we left, my brother told me to not even get close to Black Cloud Valley as soon as he heard where we were going....”

Bai Yunfei only smiled. “We’ll be fine here. Since when did you become such a coward? As bad as the rumors might be about Black Cloud Valley, don’t we have a guide? Do we really need to be worried then?”

“Hmph, aren’t you feeling comfortable.” Zheng Kai snorted. “If we’re being honest, we don’t even really know much about this elder Mu or the Underworld School. If we’re going to be heading into one of the three danger zones on this continent without any preparations, of course I’m going to feel a little nervous. Just think about it. If those three don’t really care about us, then we might just....”

“What a coward!” Han Yue snapped at Zheng Kai before Bai Yunfei could do so. “You’re a late-stage Soul Exalt, but you’re so cowardly! If you’re scared, then just leave! You’re not from the Crafting School, so our Underworld School won’t be welcoming you anyways!”

With only the sounds of their footsteps being the only source of noise in the valley, the conversation between Zheng Kai and Bai Yunfei was very clearly audible despite how quiet Zheng Kai was trying to be.

“Hey, what kind of talk is that? Do you really think I wanted to come? If not for my brother here, I would’ve left this ghost land already.” He retorted back.

It wasn’t that he was really afraid of this place, it was just that he

was feeling dejected now that Kou Tingting was gone. To add onto that, he was pretty bored and wanted to make some small talk. Which in turn led to there being something of a disagreement between him and Han Yue. Though in a way, these quibbles between the two of them served as a way for Zheng Kai to pass the time.

“Don’t be so rude, junior. Brother Zheng is a guest of ours.” Xu Ran chided his companion before she could say anything. “Brother Zheng, please rest assured. As dangerous as Black Cloud Valley might seem, it’s not as dangerous as the rumors say it is. This early half of the road is safe, but the later half....would be best to follow us to avoid any trouble.”

The only one exporting soulforce among the group was Xu Ran since he had to be responsible for keeping the young girl’s health stabilized. Her current status was something that couldn’t be easily healed even with an early-stage Soul King’s strength like Mu Chen. The best they could do was stabilize her for now and wait for them to return to the Underworld School before they could do anything.

With all of the attentive care Xu Ran was giving the young girl, Bai Yunfei had a favorable impression of the three of them.

In his mind, anyone that behaved in such a manner was surely a nice person. So when the three said that they’d be traveling into the dangerous Black Cloud Valley, Bai Yunfei hadn’t any fear.

Still, Zheng Kai couldn’t help but marvel, “Brother Xu. Your Underworld School is....really inside Black Cloud Valley? Isn’t that a little ridiculous? Can people even live there? Don’t rumors say there’s countless soulbeasts that live there? How’d you form a school in there? And why haven’t we seen anything so far? My soulsense is a mess, are you sure we’re not lost?”

His barrage of questions gave rise to yet another snort from Han Yue. Xu Ran on the other hand, smiled. “We’re only going to be heading for the ‘entrance’ to Black Cloud Valley. It’s not really

considered a part of Black Cloud Valley so it's safe, all things considered. With us leading the path, there's no chance of getting lost."

"Oh? So brother Xu has a way of telling which way is what in this place?" Asked Zheng Kai.

# Chapter 726: Crossing Through

---

The way how Xu Ran smiled but said nothing gave pause to Zheng Kai.

“Ah,” He spoke, “it seems I was asking for too much. Please pretend I said nothing, brother Xu.”

It was said that somehow, distinguishing landmarks could be used to point the way in Black Cloud Valley, and that the people of the Underworld School had some sort of secret that allowed them free entry to and from the valley.

In other words, it was a secret that would never be told to an outsider.

Bai Yunfei and the others continued to walk for some time, but no one could tell what time of day it was with how the clouds were blocking the sky. He could only guess that they walked approximately a fifty kilometers which while not even a distance that'd work up a sweat, the surrounding environment was so monotonous and foreboding that it felt like they were still in the same spot.

Then when a cumulative hundred kilometers was reached, the scenery up ahead started to change.

The dark clouds above their heads were starting to grow fainter, allowing them to see a good two hundred meters around them now. Tufts of grass and weeds were even growing in places along with one or two trees, though they looked a little black in color, perhaps as a result of the environment.

From that point on, Xu Ran said, was the real entrance of Black Cloud Valley. Bai Yunfei was also told to not stray more than a hundred meters away from the group or else he'd get lost.

That was a warning Bai Yunfei took to heart. The aura he was feeling from the area wasn't ordinary by any means, and Bai

Yunfei could feel the ‘pressure’ that had been weighing down on the group grow considerably from what it was before the entrance.

It was a type of pressure that came as a response to his soulsense. Whenever he tried to use that to scan the area, some sort of intangible energy would reject his soulsense. The feeling was a bit similar to if hundreds of hands were stirring the water. To him, the rejection of his soulsense felt a little unreal and very uncomfortable to deal with.

In another way, this feeling was a bit similar to when he was stuck in an enemy’s illusion matrix. The only difference was that the feeling was artificially created by soul cultivators through an illusion stone as the medium. The pressure being exerted right now was ‘natural’ and would probably induce the same feeling of exhaustion and hard of breathing onto a regular person as if they were climbing a tall mountain. Impossible to live in and impossible to ignore, the only way was to adapt.

Bai Yunfei shared an uneasy glance at Zheng Kai and then to Xu Ran and Han Yue where the two both blinked in surprise.

Were none of the people from the Underworld School affected by this pressure?

“Tsk, it feels uncomfortable here. Hey, Xiao Lan, are you not feeling anything wrong or something?”

“Feeling anything wrong? Like what?”

“Don’t you feel a little uncomfortable?”

“No, why?”

Xiao Qi and Long Lan were both talking at that time, causing Bai Yunfei to turn his head to stare at Long Lan. “Long Lan, do you really not feel anything different?”

Long Lan looked back to Bai Yunfei and shook his head, “Nothing at all.”



“Is it because of him training in elemental darkness....? Are soul cultivators and soulbeasts of that affinity not affected by this?” Bai Yunfei thought.

Up ahead of them, Han Yue casted a glance to Xiao Qi and Long Lan with the unmistakable light of shock and envy. She was still finding it quite hard to believe that these two were both class seven soulbeasts, and that one of them was contracted to Bai Yunfei.

It was very hard for her to believe that a class seven soulbeast would contract with just a Soul Exalt.

The more they walked, the more the surrounding area started to grow more clear, much to Bai Yunfei’s surprise. The black mist around the area was clearing up with more distance covered, and even more plantlike could be found on the ground now. Traces of animal and insects could even be seen, and shortly afterwards, Bai Yunfei could’ve sworn they were in an ‘ordinary’ mountain valley again.

Two mountain ranges were covering the sides of the valley still, but from here on out was just a large expanse of grass and trees. Everything looked quite ‘ordinary’ if you excluded the dark clouds still hanging overhead.

The sense of ‘regularity’ was also just limited to the physical sense. The same pressure Bai Yunfei and the others were feeling at the entrance of the valley hadn’t gone away at this point. If anything, it got even larger.

Mu Chen and the others were walking a lot faster than before now that they were in this part of the valley. Soon, the area changed again after another fifty kilometers. Bai Yunfei could feel the auras of soulbeasts now.

And very powerful ones too. Most of them were class five and class six and were sprinkled on both sides of the mountain range as if trying to hide their ‘territory’. Though the auras of the soul cultivators could most definitely be felt by the soulbeasts, they

were never attacked.

The group walked to a precipice a few meters tall when Mu Chen stopped to speak to Bai Yunfei. “We’ll be taking to the skies from here on out. Be sure to follow after me and don’t disturb the soulbeasts or we’ll attract trouble.”

Bai Yunfei nodded. “Rest assured, senior Mu. We will be careful.”

They took off to the skies with Xu Ran and Han Yue both using flying swords. Likewise, Bai Yunfei had his Tempest Sword and Zheng Kai his own flying sword to fly upon. Ascending upwards, they were followed by Xiao Qi and Long Lan.

Underneath them was a sea of trees and above them was an endless blanket of black clouds. Contrary to what Bai Yunfei thought about Black Cloud Valley, there was actually an abundant amount of plant life here. But the most important thing were all the powerful soulbeasts living within the forest!

The soulbeasts within this place were either lording it over the others in their own domains or living together as a collective. Soulbeasts of both types lived here with strength of roughly the same level as one another. There were a few soulbeasts that were comparatively way weaker than the average, but they were just soulbeast babies.

Plenty of class five soulbeasts were had here and even a few early-stage class sixes. As for late-stage class six soulbeasts, Bai Yunfei and his group hadn’t come across any yet.

The group flew swiftly beneath the dusky clouds. Looking up ahead, Bai Yunfei could see just beyond the horizon a part of the land where it was even darker than the surrounding area as if it was night.

“Tweee!!!”

As Bai Yunfei was staring at the black cloud in wonder, an ear-piercing trill cried out from the right before a powerful aura came

exploding forward!

It was a soulbeast with the body of a bird and head of a black snake. Rising out from a thirty meter tall tree from the right, the soulbeast flew up to try to swallow Bai Yunfei's head whole with its snake maw!

The soulbeast's ambush was extremely out of the blue. It was almost as if it was hibernating before Bai Yunfei and the others flew over its head!

"Careful, Yunfei!"

Zheng Kai cried out in alarm from behind. Bai Yunfei's eyes narrowed. Though just a little surprised, Bai Yunfei wasn't completely caught off guard and prepared himself to counter the soulbeast.

Mu Chen, who had been leading the group at the front, was about to turn and attack when he heard yet another trill. Two blades of darkness flew out away from Bai Yunfei's back and slammed into the incoming soulbeast just five meters away from him.

Xiao Qi had landed the first move and blow!

Then under the amazed eyes of both Xu Ran and Han Yue, the incoming soulbeast was split into by one of the blades!

Blood sprinkled down from the skies as the two halves of the body crashed to the ground. A dark-colored soulgem the size of a fist flew out from its corpse and landed in the outstretched hand of Long Lan.

"Tch. I've never seen such an ugly bird before in my life. It had a snake head! How disgusting."

Not at all looking like he had just done anything major, Xiao Qi fluttered his wings and flew to Long Lan's shoulder. "A dark-type soulgem? This should help you, right, Xiao Lan?"

Crushing the soulgem in his right hand, Long Lan stared at the

pieces turn into smoke to be absorbed into his body. “It’s better than nothing.”

Up ahead, Xu Ran and Han Yue were both stupefied. A late-stage class six snakeagle, the strongest soulbeast in this area, had been so easily killed like that?

Bai Yunfei stared solemnly at the corpse of the soulbeast down below. “Xiao Qi, you can’t go killing soulbeasts like we used to in the Soulbeast Forest....”

He turned to Mu Chen and bowed apologetically. “Senior Mu, please forgive Xiao Qi for not knowing his manners.”

Since this was the Underworld School’s territory, Bai Yunfei felt it wrong to be killing soulbeasts that lived here.

But Mu Chen only gave Xiao Qi a small look of surprise and shook his head. “Haha, no worry, we can continue on our way.”

The soulbeasts that lived here weren’t ones that the Underworld School raised, though the school did see them as ‘property’ still. All the students that studied here generally came out here to either train or find soulbeasts to contract with. The school had rules and other stipulations in regard to the general killing of soulbeasts here, but there’d be no way that Mu Chen would blame Bai Yunfei for what happened.

In any case, Mu Chen had already been aware of the snakeagle’s presence. He just wanted to ‘see’ what would happen if it were to attack, and how Bai Yunfei would respond to it. He just never thought that Xiao Qi would be the one to respond first, and that the bird would be capable of using spatial attacks. In the end, he was surprised and had a higher level of respect for the soulbeast partner of Bai Yunfei.

Now that there weren’t any other obstructions, the group could continue to travel for another two hours before Xu Ran turned his head back, “Brother Bai, brother Zheng, we’ve arrived.”

He pointed up ahead.

“Arrived?”

Bai Yunfei followed Xu Ran’s finger with a strange look—there was just a sea of trees in that direction and nothing else!

# Chapter 727: Mountain Protecting Barrier

---

Where Xu Ran was pointing at was very clearly an ocean of trees and nothing else in sight. Zheng Kai and Bai Yunfei looked all around for anything man-made or something hidden on the ground, but neither could find anything.

Xu Ran gave a faint smile at that. “Haha, there’s no need to look like that. You can’t see it right now.”

“What?” Bai Yunfei asked. “Can’t see it? What do you mean?”

“You’ll find out in a moment...”

Mu Chen was standing up ahead while Xu Ran was talking to Bai Yunfei and Zheng Kai. A black jade slip was in his right hand as he waved it, emitting a dark glow of light to wash over the ten meters in front of him.

Then to Bai Yunfei’s amazement, the air in front of Mu Chen began to tremble. Like a stone dropped into a pool of calm water, the air was rippling with the dark glow of light from the slip!

The waves of air disseminated for several meters before disappearing, allowing for Bai Yunfei and his group to be able to see a transparent wall from where there used to be nothing but air.

Mu Chen strode forward and placed the jade slip in his hand onto the wall. A pulse of soulforce flowed from his hand to the slip.

“Bzzz.”

The air began to ripple again as a black ‘whirlpool’ about a meter wide and two meters tall opened up in front of him.

He turned his head back to Xu Ran and the others. “Let’s go.”

Then he stepped into the black whirlpool and beyond, disappearing from sight.

Han Yue followed shortly afterwards. “Brother Bai, brother Zheng, behind this is the gates to our Underworld School. Please

follow me.” Xu Ran nodded his head to the two before stepping into the whirlpool.

Bai Yunfei looked to Zheng Kai who in turn shared a surprised look back.

“This....has to be an illusionary barrier?” Zheng Kai guessed.

“Probably,” Bai Yunfei nodded, “I didn’t even sense it before, how strange. Let’s go on in then. I’m interested in seeing what’s going to be behind this....”

.....

Following Xu Ran’s example, Bai Yunfei stepped into the dark whirlpool.

Pressure from all over surrounded his person when he stepped into it as if he was dunked into a small body of water. The sensation disappeared as quickly as it arrived, and Bai Yunfei soon found himself fully across the threshold and feeling completely fine.

But that one step had changed the entire scenery in front of him!

A mountain peak five hundred meters tall was now right in front of Bai Yunfei!!

Strangely enough, all sorts of boulders and such stood on top of the mountain and yet even more stones paving the way up. A black-colored temple was erected near the top. It exuded a powerful aura in every direction and barely overshadowed the auras of the many people that were moving about in it.

It was with a smile that Xu Ran turned towards Bai Yunfei and Zheng Kai, “Brother Bai, brother Zheng, these are the gates to our Underworld School. You two must be tired after traveling for so long, please come with me to your lodgings.”

Bai Yunfei followed behind him, his face still showing the signs of shock at the entire site. He turned behind them, the black

whirlpool was nowhere to be seen. It had disappeared as soon as everyone had crossed. But if Bai Yunfei looked carefully, there was a very faint outline of the barrier there.

“Man....so there’s a kind of barrier like this? It’s hiding practically everything within a kilometer radius inside it. I’ve never seen a barrier as ridiculously strong as this before....” Zheng Kai clicked his tongue in praise.

Flying was generally prohibited in most schools, and the Underworld School was no exception.

Coming to the foot of the mountain, the group soon came into view of a few students standing guard there. As soon as the group dropped down, the students bowed at once to them. “Elder Mu, senior Xu, senior Han.”

They looked curiously at Bai Yunfei and the others. Outsiders were very rare to the Underworld School, but none of the students had any business asking what these guests were doing here.

.....

Since it was already late at night, Bai Yunfei and the others were brought to their rooms on the top of the mountain to rest. The little girl was brought away by Mu Chen so that they could have someone adept in healing take a look at her.

Their traveling over the past few days accumulated a decent amount of fatigue in the group. In addition to that, the pressure exerted onto them from Black Cloud Valley made their fatigue even worse. So Bai Yunfei and Zheng Kai went to their rooms after eating the meal brought to them by the school to rest for the night.

While Long Lan was perfectly fine—energetic even about this place—he was warned by Bai Yunfei to not walk randomly around the place, so he decided to take up post as the night watch. There shouldn’t be any danger here in the Underworld School, but it didn’t hurt to be extra careful in unfamiliar locations, and Long



Lan was used to doing this for Bai Yunfei since his time in Soulbeast Forest anyways.

The night passed without incident, and it was in the early hours of sunrise that Bai Yunfei rose, only to realize it was still dark outside the window.

He walked out into his small courtyard to observe the skies. A small crack in the layer of clouds revealed just a small portion of sunlight, confirming that it was indeed daytime.

Black Cloud Valley hadn't many areas where the sky could be seen, but the entire Underworld School was seemingly accustomed to that. How the students were able to live every day like this was a strange thought to Bai Yunfei.

Xiao Qi flew around the skies for a moment to indulge in his curiosities while Bai Yunfei watched him from the courtyards. Soon, Zheng Kai and Long Lan came from their own rooms before breakfast was brought up.

It was after their meal was eaten that Zheng Kai looked up at the skies and then to Bai Yunfei. "What do you plan on doing next, Yunfei?"

"I don't really have anything in mind right now. The plan was originally to keep on touring, but I guess after we stay in the Underworld School for a few days, we should probably wrap it up and return to the Capital?"

"It's still pretty early to call it quits, why go back to the Capital?"

Bai Yunfei shrugged. "Where should we go then?"

A mirthful smile appeared on Zheng Kai's face. "Why don't we go back to the Crafting School? Didn't you want to go back? I'm pretty interested in seeing what it's like, plus we should go and see how little Rui is doing now...."

"Heh....just say it outright that you want to see Tingting." Bai Yunfei laughed. "What's next, are you going to try proposing

marriage when you come to the Crafting School?”

“Paying my respects to the elders of your school wouldn’t be a bad thing. Getting to know people and all that....don’t tell me you’re not thinking about your Xinyun?” Zheng Kai fired back.

“Don’t drag me in with your reasoning,” Bai Yunfei replied, “it’s not like we can’t go back. In any case, I’ve a few friends I miss back there. Alright, you win, we can go to the Crafting School after our business with the Underworld School is finished.”

As the two chatted with one another, Xu Ran came walking into their courtyard and greeted them. “Were you able to sleep well?” He asked with a gentle smile.

“It was a good sleep. I’m just not used to this daylight, I nearly thought it was night still when I woke.” Answered Zheng Kai.

“That’s just how it is here,” Xu Ran smiled, “it’ll get a little brighter around afternoon. It’ll only last two hours before it’ll start getting dark again. Please forgive me if you’re not used to it.”

“Brother Xu,” Bai Yunfei asked, “How is the little girl doing, can she be saved?”

The smile receded away from Xu Ran’s face.

“I came here just for that. Please come with me, the headmaster and elders were talking about it and had me come escort you over.”

# Chapter 728: Mo Yanbai

---

Calling Xiao Qi back over, Bai Yunfei and the others followed Xu Ran up the road to the mountains before coming right in front of a giant black hall.

It wasn't until they were close to the hall that Bai Yunfei realized just how large it was. On both sides stood two gigantic stone statues with depictions of spirits on them. Black-faced and with tusks, the statues had claws for hands and were shown roaring to the heavens as if trying to swallow the clouds and devour the moon.

Furthermore, Bai Yunfei and the group came to realize just how strong the aura coming from here was when they got close. It was even more foreboding than before, and the prevalent elemental darkness in the area made them all feel rather unwell. Despite it being only the aura of the people here, rather than the environment, it was still a very unsettling experience on the mind.

As they walked through the black halls, the group soon came to a stop right in front of throne with an elderly person in violet-black robes sitting on it. His hair was white and his face was wrinkled. A cup of tea in his hands as he talked with several people in front of him, the elder was smiling as he observed the people coming in now.

This was without a doubt the headmaster of the Underworld School. Before Huangfu Nan left, he told Bai Yunfei that this man was Mo Yanbai and an expert of the same level and generation of Zi Jin.

At Mo Yanbai's two sides were two other older men. Mu Chen was one of these figures, so the other person surely had to be another elder of the school.

Xu Ran took the group to the middle of the room before bowing to Mo Yanbai. "Master, the guests have arrived."

“You may leave.” Mo Yanbai nodded.

Xu Ran left the hall.

Bai Yunfei and Zheng Kai both bowed towards the man with respect. “This junior pays his respects to headmaster Mo and the elders.”

Long Lan did nothing but stand there. He as a soulbeast didn’t care for etiquette for human elders. Furthermore, he was the disciple of Long Zhen and also a class seven soulbeast, hence why he had some pride here.

“Haha, my dear guests, be at ease and sit down.” Mo Yanbai laughed. He wasn’t displeased with how Long Lan was acting, he was after all a Soul King. Class sevens and Soul Kings treated each other as equals, and only when there was some sort of hierarchy like in schools or else wise would the situation be a little different.

Bai Yunfei and the other two sat down onto their stools.

“As rare as it is for my Underworld School to receive any information from the outside world, we did manage to hear Zi Jin take on a talented student as his disciple a few years ago. The achievements of this said student were startling to hear, but now that I see you today, it seems those rumors were more true than false. Nephew Bai, you seem close to becoming a Soul King! What a prodigy, Zi Jin has truly a good eye. He was later than I by twenty years in taking on a student, but it seems that we are both blessed with prodigies for disciples.”

Bai Yunfei was surprised. He thought that the headmaster of the Underworld School would be rigid and stern in attitude, but the man sounded a lot more friendly than he thought. And he was friends with his master Zi Jin too?

“Senior Mo is too kind. This world has many prodigies in it, and every school has their fair share. This junior has seen many others on par with me, and many that make me unworthy of being called

one. I am only lucky in having the opportunity to become stronger a little faster than usual.” Bai Yunfei replied modestly. If he was being praised this much, then he’d surely have to be as modest as he could.

“This one comes here today on behalf of the Crafting School to wish the Underworld School good tidings. Though our two schools have never met with one another, we hope that this will change in the future. Whatever trouble there may be, may our two schools share in the good times and bad and help one another.”

These were the words Huangfu Nan instructed him to say. He hadn’t much experience as a representative, but Bai Yunfei knew that the Crafting School was trying to make friends with the Underworld School. Huangfu Nan even mentioned before about an ‘alliance’.

“Haha, but of course. We of the Underworld School may not venture out in the world often, but we are honored to have the goodwill of the Crafting School.” Mo Yanbai knew this as well. “Now that I think about it, Zi Jin and I had many chance encounters in the past. One of those times was back in Soulbeast Forest at our primes. A hundred years must have passed since then? How much the times changed, and how the two of us have grown old....”

Again, Bai Yunfei was surprised to hear about the friendly relationship Zi Jin had with Mo Yanbai. He had never heard his master talk about it before, and the words ‘in their primes’ and ‘a hundred years ago’ were definitely referring to events in the far past. No elderly person would just carelessly talk about precious memories like that on a whim though.

Mo Yanbai turned to Zheng Kai next with an equally large smile. “Nephew Zheng, how might your patriarch senior Zheng Lin be doing?”

Having been listening to Mo Yanbai talk to Bai Yunfei, Zheng Kai

was in the middle of sipping his cup of tea when Mo Yanbai turned to him. Nearly coughing on his cup, Zheng Kai placed it down with a thunderstruck expression. “You....senior....senior Mo knows my ancestor?!”

“I was honored with the chance to see the grace of senior Zheng Lin when I was young. He stepped into the realm of Emperors several dozen years ago I heard. Has he made any progress and reached into any higher realm?”

Zheng Kai wiped the sweat off his forehead, “I....my ancestor has closed himself off many years ago. I’ve never even seen my ancestor....”

“Haha, for someone as strong as senior Zheng Lin, worldly matters shouldn’t even matter to him anymore.” Mo Yanbai nodded sagely. He didn’t pursue the question, after all, how would a youngling like Zheng Kai know anything about Zheng Lin’s situation?

Bai Yunfei was really surprised now. This was the first time he had ever heard about Zheng Kai’s ancestor before. And from what Mo Yanbai had just said....

The realm of Emperors? Was that the Soul Emperor realm? And ‘even higher’? That couldn’t mean....

As expected from a hundred-year-old man. He could amaze anyone with just a few words.

Mo Yanbai continued to talk with both Bai Yunfei and Zheng Kai a little longer, though his eyes were usually staring at Bai Yunfei, making him feel a little awkward.

“Senior Mo,” Bai Yunfei spoke at last. “How is the treatment of the little girl we brought going....can she be healed?”

The smile on Mo Yanbai’s face paused briefly, “I took a look at her condition a while ago. Truthfully speaking....the chances of healing her aren’t very large.....”

Bai Yunfei felt his heart skip a bit, “But how can that be...? Isn’t it elemental darkness that is corroding her insides? Can’t elemental darkness be used to treat and expel it from her body?”

The pointy-chinned elder to the right of Mo Yanbai’s side snorted. “Hmph! What would a baby know of our arts! It’s because of her affliction that she can’t be treated! The flow of elemental darkness has no pattern and is hard to treat. Don’t forget that she is only a commoner, regular methods can’t even be used on her! It’s a miracle that she’s lived this long already. We’d need plenty of ingredients if we’d want even a chance of saving her, and it’s not even guaranteed! It’s not worth saving her life!”

This man was a very straightforward person, and his words very clearly saying that the price needed to be paid to save this one girl wasn’t worth the effort.

## Chapter 729: Conditions

---

Feeling that the other elder was being a little too straightforward, Mu Chen came up to soften his words. “Please don’t misunderstand, nephew Bai. It’s not as though we don’t wish to save her life, but that the girl’s body is simply far too weak to endure any regular treatment. The best way to treat her is the most difficult way and requires a great deal of ingredients. Our reserves are incomplete and are lacking a few resources, so we’d have to enter the Black Cloud Forest to find the rest, but our chances of finding any are slim. In other words, we are powerless to help....”

The other elder gave Mu Chen a disapproving glare as if his explanation was unnecessary. Or maybe the elder truly didn’t think it was necessary to even bother extolling such a price to save a commoner.

Pained, Bai Yunfei took a moment to think of what to say. He clasped his hands, “Senior Mo, if there is a chance, I beg of your school to save this young girl’s life. This junior cannot thank you enough for it!”

The pointy-chinned elder snorted again. “Don’t presume yourself to be an expert on matters you’re not, whelping. Do you know just how many rare ingredients will be needed to save her? Why should we go through such trouble to save the life of an unwor—”

“This junior knows how difficult it will be for your esteemed school. That is why even if her treatment succeeds or fails, this junior will be willing to craft a heaven-tier soul armament as thanks!!” Bai Yunfei interrupted.

His words ushered the entire hall into silence. Everyone’s eyes were drawn to Bai Yunfei, their facial expressions filled with doubt at what they had just heard.

“Pah! A braggart as well as a whelping!” The pointy-chinned



elder boomed out again. “Crafting a heaven-tier soul armament?! Even a Soul King hasn’t the chance to perfectly craft one. Do you wish to make yourself a fool with words that big?”

Bai Yunfei was without emotion now. “This one is a man of my word. If your esteemed school is willing to go through the effort in treating her, then this junior will naturally pay back the efforts with mine own. As long as your esteemed school agrees, then this junior will set to crafting a soul armament. However....since your esteemed school requires soul armaments with an affinity for elemental darkness, the materials will need to come from your esteemed school.”

“Words without proof are as good as no words at all. How do we know that you’re even capable of the feat?” The elder spoke. He clearly didn’t believe in Bai Yunfei. “The materials for that will only go to waste and become ashes.”

Bai Yunfei narrowed his eyes at the accusation.

“If by chance this junior fails in crafting one...there are still plenty of heaven-tier soul armaments in my possession that your esteemed school can pick. None of them will be unworthy of the price.”

This time, a calculative light entered the elder’s eyes.

“Xu Ran mentioned that you have a soul armament similar to the Devouring Chains from the Soul Refining School. If that much is true, you will hand over that soul armament to us, are you willing?”

Blinking once, Bai Yunfei smiled before retrieving the dark-red chains from his space ring onto his hand.

“Is this the soul armament senior is talking about?”

The eyes of the elder lit up as soon as the Devouring Chains appeared, Mo Yanbai’s eyes included. “The Devouring Chains!” The elder remarked.

“This junior won’t lie. This soul armament came from the Soul Refining School after I killed one of their Soul Kings. It’s a soul armament with an affinity for both fire and darkness. There is also a very special functionality that I’m sure seniors are aware of.....”

He turned to the elder he was ‘negotiating’ with. “If senior requests this item, then so be it. If by chance this junior fails in crafting a heaven-tier soul armament, then this soul armament is yours!”

“By your word?” The elder’s eyes were ecstatic now.

“By my word.”

“Very well then!! You have a deal!”

The agreement came rather quickly now. The elder was smiling ear to ear with a great big smile.

Likewise, Bai Yunfei had troubled hiding the grin on his face. Storing away the Devouring Chains into his space ring, he turned to Mu Chen. “Elder Mu, you said before that your esteemed school is lacking in a few of the ingredients. If there is none here, then will venturing into the Black Cloud Forest be enough to find them? Or where else may these ingredients be found?”

It took a second for Mu Chen to properly respond to Bai Yunfei. “Indeed, we are missing ingredients such as the snake gall of a black-scaled serpent. It’s a rare type of ferocious soulbeast that lives in the depths of the forest and a mountain. It took an elder and I one month to capture in the past....”

“Then do you know where a black-scaled serpent might live?” Bai Yunfei asked.

“We do. There is one living just a hundred kilometers north of the Black Cloud Forest. An early-stage class seven black-scaled serpent lives in the mountain peak there.”

Mu Chen replied, unsure of why he was being asked such a question.

“Don’t tell me you’re....”

Bai Yunfei nodded. “I cannot let your esteemed school do all the work in saving the life of another. If we are lacking in the ingredients, then this junior will take on the task of scavenging for it.”

Again, the entire hall was surprised by what Bai Yunfei was proposing. Even Mo Yanbai couldn’t help but narrow his eyes at the thought. “Nephew Bai, do you really wish to go after that black-scaled serpent? It’s a ferocious class seven soulbeast stronger than most others. The forest is dangerous enough for even Soul Kings to have trouble traveling through. As a guest of my Underworld School, how could we let you experience such a danger like this....”

“Many thanks for your warning, senior Mo, but please don’t worry. This junior won’t be going just yet.” Bai Yunfei smiled. He pointed at Long Lan and Zheng Kai behind him. “My friends and I will be going together. If it’s just an early-stage class seven beast, then it won’t be a problem.”

Mo Yanbai gave Long Lan a calculative look. He didn’t say anything for or against what Bai Yunfei wanted to do and changed the topic instead. “I admit that I am quite curious, nephew Bai. Why are you so intent on saving the life of this young girl. As I am told, she is only a commoner you picked up from in Formagua City?”

“That is correct.” Bai Yunfei nodded. “I don’t even know her name.”

“Then why go through all this trouble to save her?”

“If there is a chance to save her, why shouldn’t I?”

“.....”

Another blanket of silence descended down onto the hall.

The pointy-chinned elder turned his nose up at Bai Yunfei’s

words. What Bai Yunfei said was truly naive to the world. Saving the life of a commoner and completely stranger for such a heavy price like what was being offered onto the table was laughable and completely not worth it.

It wasn't as though Bai Yunfei didn't know what they were thinking about, but he didn't care to quibble over it. He didn't care if people thought he was silly or naive for being the way he was. His soulsense had touched upon the young girl's soul when he was trying to save her back in Formagua City, and the immense feeling of terror and suffering she had touched Bai Yunfei. She was the very last survivor of an entire city of people, and Bai Yunfei had no desire to see such a life be thrown away when there was still a chance to be saved.

Though the 'price' other people thought to be very heavy, Bai Yunfei saw it as something not even needing to be thought about.

The goals of the pointy-chinned man was also very obvious to Bai Yunfei. Still, he figured that if the Underworld School was willing to help, it was only natural that they be rewarded for their troubles, hence why Bai Yunfei was willing to use a heaven-tier soul armament as their compensation.

He had to laugh at the elder's ploy to get his Devouring Chains though. The elder really did think Bai Yunfei was unable to craft a heaven-tier soul armament, but Bai Yunfei was confident in his abilities. But not so confident that he could craft a heaven-tier soul armament consistently. Even if he failed, he could still craft a high-earth tier soul armament and upgrade it a few times to have it cross the threshold into the heaven tier. So that wasn't a problem. The elder wanting to grab a hold of his Devouring Chains was a lost cause.

There was also the issue of finding the black-scaled serpent. Bai Yunfei didn't want to owe the Underworld School too many favors so he opted to find this one himself. He had the strength to do so anyways, so this'd be a nice time to gain some experience.

# Chapter 730: Going Deeper into Black Cloud Valley

---

Mu Chen handed Bai Yunfei a map of where the black-scaled serpent was shortly afterwards. With a bow towards the elders after he received it, Bai Yunfei and his group left the hall.

That left only the men of the Underworld School there.

After a moment of silence, Mo Yanbai spoke to one of the elders that never spoke the entire time. “First elder, what do you think about this Bai Yunfei?”

This elder appeared to be in his seventies and had long white hair and a white beard that hung low enough to hang on his chest.

“Arrogant and conceited.”

He spoke those three words first before continuing his evaluation. “But from another perspective, he is someone who is confident since he has the ability to do so.”

The pointy-chinned elder frowned. “He’s a greenhorned brat whose hair hasn’t even grown yet. He’s arrogant and reliant on having a powerful master like Zi Jin. I don’t believe he’s capable of crafting a heaven-tier soul armament at all. With all his bragging, I’m confident that the Devouring Chains will soon be offered to us.”

He sighed and shook his head. “How truly surprising to see him have the Devouring Chains from the Soul Refining School. How could he have gotten the mysterious soul armament of their school? Elder Mu, do you really believe he’s capable of killing a Soul King from that school and taking his soul armament?”

“It’s unwise to underestimate this Bai Yunfei, elder Qi. He isn’t a Soul King yet, but he has two class seven soulbeasts with him. With his added status as Zi Jin’s disciple and all his soul armaments, killing a Soul King from the Soul Refining School is

within the realm of possibility for him.”

Elder Qi snorted. “Forget it. Everything said so far is just hearsay. He’s still a guest of our school in any case. Us getting a heaven-tier soul armament after all of this is still a very good accomplishment. The men of the Crafting School are quite ‘overbearing’. Even one of their youngsters don’t see a heaven-tier soul armament as something too worth keeping. Using one of those to save the life of someone they don’t even know....should we say they’re a spendthrift or a saint?”

Mo Yanbai laughed, “It’s good for a youngster to want to save someone.”

“Headmaster, are we really going to allow those youngsters to go after the black-scaled serpent? Is that not unwise?” Mu Chen asked. “If something happens to them, we’d have to apologize to both the Crafting School and house of Zheng....”

“Unlike those youngsters, we of the Underworld School are not blind to the dangers of the forest, are we?” Mo Yanbai nodded, “How could we let them enter Black Cloud Forest themselves? We’ll have the first elder follow them. We cannot allow anything to happen to them when they go hunting for the black-scaled serpent. Since we are saving the life of that girl, we may as well kill the serpent for them if they cannot.”

The first elder nodded. “Rest assured, headmaster. I will do as needed.”

Outside the hall, Zheng Kai sent Bai Yunfei a wary glance. “Yunfei, do you really plan on looking for the black-scaled serpent.

Bai Yunfei nodded. “What, you scared?”

“Watch what you’re saying,” Zheng Kai grouched, “am I really that much of a coward in your mind?”

“But it’s the Black Cloud Valley and Forest we’re talking about....” His voice took on a tone of concern. “It’s one of the three

danger zones on the continent. Won't us going in rashly end badly for us? Why don't we bring someone from the Underworld School with us? Maybe that Xu Ran fellow?"

"Let's not bother them, we've already a map, don't we? Xu Ran's pretty strong, but how does he compare to Xiao Qi or Long Lan? What's there to worry about with them? Even if there is danger, you can run away without a problem.

"Plus...." He turned back towards the hall they had just came from. "Do you really think the Underworld School will really let us go as we please without escort? Didn't you see the map they gave us? It only had the path there and back and nothing else. This entire area is controlled by the Underworld School, so how can there be any hidden spots on the map? And don't forget, we're 'guests'. Whether it's protecting us from harm or seeing that we don't go to places we shouldn't, we're not going to be 'alone' when hunting for the black-scaled serpent."

Zheng Kai took the map into his own hands to look at it. "Damn! You really thought this out, didn't you? I thought you were just trying to gamble against that old man.

"When do we leave then?" He asked while fiddling with the map.

"The sooner the better to save a person's life. Let's get going then!"

He called out his Tempest Sword and immediately zipped off towards the right.

"Hey! Yunfei, hold up!" Zheng Kai howled after him.

Bai Yunfei stared unhappily at Zheng Kai, "What? Aren't we rushed for time here? If we go now, we can probably make it back before it gets dark."

"That's not what I meant, I'm trying to tell you you can't fly that way!"

"Why not?"

“That’s the wrong direction!”

---

Bai Yunfei and the others took off into the sky with speed that surprised many of the students there. Having not been fast enough to stop them, they reported swiftly to their higher-ups, only to be told not to mind them.

It didn’t take them long to reach the barrier protecting and hiding the Underworld School from sight. Concentrating a bit, Bai Yunfei flew forward to head ‘out’ to the other side. Like when he first came in, there was a feeling of being submerged in some type of liquid before he was back out. Turning around, Bai Yunfei was greeted with the sight of an ocean of trees. The Underworld School was nowhere to be seen.

The air outside the barrier was relatively cleaner than the inside, though the pressure was even greater. Aside from Long Lan, everyone else was feeling once again unwell under the pressure.

A few thousand meters into the air, the black clouds were just barely revealing a crack in them to shower a part of the valley with bright daylight. As Xu Ran said, this was around the time of afternoon.

With Zheng Kai holding onto the map and leading the group, they were soon able to fly over to the depths of the Black Cloud Forest.

“Hey, Yunfei. I’ve been thinking about it earlier but, is that flying sword of yours a heaven-tier?” Zheng Kai asked as they flew. “It’s ridiculously fast....I’m pretty jealous of you crafters. The high quality soul armaments most people can only dream about are things your school seems to have an infinite supply of.”

Glancing down at the flying sword underneath Zheng Kai’s feet, Bai Yunfei laughed. “Haha, lend me your flying sword when we get back and I’ll ‘refine’ it for you. I’m sure I can get it to heaven-tier.”



“Really?” Zheng Kai’s eyes lit up. “Don’t lie to me, you can ‘refine’ soul armaments? I heard it’s a skill that’s even harder than crafting soul armaments. Even Soul Kings have a hard time doing it, did you really learn an art like that?”

“Don’t forget who I am. I know a lot more than the average crafter.....”

“Then that’s that. You said you’ll refine it, so don’t you dare lie to me.”

Since he saw Bai Yunfei craft a heaven-tier soul armament before, Zheng Kai didn’t have as hard of a time believing in what Bai Yunfei could or couldn’t do compared to other people. If anything, he was immune to a good degree of Bai Yunfei’s capabilities and had the idea that there wasn’t much Bai Yunfei didn’t ‘have enough power’ for.

The two males chatted with one another as they flew, not at all feeling the pressure of danger in the surrounding area. Only the auras of class six soulbeasts could be felt, and those type of soulbeasts weren’t a threat for either of the two. Long Lan was exerting his aura as a class seven soulbeast, so none of the soulbeasts even dared to poke their heads out.

As far as class seven soulbeasts went, the first one they felt was when they were already ninety kilometers deep into the forest. But since it was still hard to use soulsense, Bai Yunfei could only sense that it was far away to their right side. Luckily, it never bothered them as they traveled ahead.

The group soon came to a stop a hundred kilometers within the depths of Black Cloud Valley where the Underworld School said to go. Taking out the map and looking at the area, Zheng Kai pointed at a hill three hundred meters away. “If the map’s not leading us wrong, this is where we should be.”

Looking up at the hill, Bai Yunfei noted that the black clouds felt like they were being attracted to the top of the hill. ‘Dropping’

from the skies to hang around the tip of the top, they formed a swirling whirlpool of sorts that seemed rather mystical.

Zheng Kai stored the map away. “We’ve the location, why don’t we go hunting for a black-scaled serpent now?”

Bai Yunfei pointed to a certain direction, “No need to go ‘hunting’. I’ve already found it...”

The black clouds around this certain hill were fainter than the surrounding area. And so at a closer look, one would be able to see a strange stone statue at the top.

But....

This was no statue, it was the head of a giant black serpent!

It’s body was coiled practically around the hill almost. With its ten-meter wide head, the snake opened wide to swallow the clouds drifting down from the skies!

# Chapter 731: Serpent Engulfing the Clouds

---

Bai Yunfei never thought that they'd be able to find the black-scaled serpent so quickly. From what Mu Chen told them, this serpent enjoyed hibernating within the hill itself and rarely ventured out from its nest. Just forcing it to come out from its nest was a very difficult task, so how lucky was it that the situation was completely different than expected?

Bai Yunfei took a closer look at the serpent. The giant serpentine head poking out from the top of the hill was as black as ink and triangular in shape. The middle of its head had a single black scale as large as a door on it and larger than every other scale it had on its body. Though there was barely any light here, there was a faint reflection shining off from its scales like if being illuminated by a dark light.

This was truly the black-scaled serpent without a doubt.

How lucky was Bai Yunfei, to catch the black-scaled serpent as it was in the middle of taking a deep breath?

Secretly elated at the situation, Bai Yunfei motioned for Zheng Kai and the others to not do anything for now. They'd first observe the situation from afar before doing anything else.

“Is it....training?”

Bai Yunfei muttered after a moment of observation. This black-scaled serpent really was training! This peculiar method of training by swallowing the dark clouds was a strange sight, so it took Bai Yunfei a moment to understand.

“Swallowing the dark clouds....what kind of kick-ass black-scaled serpent is this?” Zheng Kai's eyes were wide open as he watched the serpent. “I guess when people say they're, this is what they mean! Is this how the soulbeasts of Black Cloud Valley behave and grow?”

He glanced over to Bai Yunfei. “It seems to be concentrating pretty hard right now, Yunfei. Now’s the best time to strike in my opinion, should we strike it down as it does that?”

Bai Yunfei had a similar thought as well. If the black-scaled serpent was working so earnestly on swallowing the dark clouds without even scanning the surrounding area, then things should work out for them. If he, Xiao Qi, and Long Lan were to fight together, then they’d definitely be able to capture or kill the serpent.

He tilted his head to think about it.

“Alright, that’s what we’ll do! Xiao Qi, Long Lan, you two prepare for battle. Xiao Qi will attack from the left and Long Lan from the right. I’ll attack it head on with my fastest attack. Let’s hope to strike it down in one blow, if it doesn’t work, don’t let it hide back into the mountain or we’ll never get it back out!”

“Hey, what about me then?” Asked Zheng Kai.

“Ah’Zheng,” Bai Yunfei glanced at him. “Don’t take any risks. That’s a class seven soulbeasts, not a joke. Xiao Qi and Long Lan should be enough. Just wait here and be on the lookout.”

“Ah.....” Zheng Kai frowned briefly before waving his hand. “Fine, whatever. I know I can’t compare with a deviant like you. If I can’t join in on the fight, I’ll be your ‘watchdog’ then.”

.....

Standing several kilometers away from Bai Yunfei and the others was a single person whose aura was completely hidden to watch the group.

It was the first elder of the Underworld School.

“So today is the day for the serpent to feed on the clouds....these youngsters have considerable luck. It seems the chance for capturing or kill will be easier than expected, perhaps I won’t need to do anythi—”

The man went rigid, his eyes glued to the flowing clouds off in the distance.

“Something doesn’t seem right here....” He muttered to himself with crinkled eyebrows.

It took him another two seconds before he was able to figure out the reason. “No!! Today shouldn’t be the day the black-scaled serpent should come out for that!!”

The black-scaled serpent wasn’t something the Underworld School was interested in for just a day or two. They’ve been keeping tabs on it and writing down its behavior for a very long time now. Every twenty-five days, the black-scaled serpent would poke its heads out and take in the black cloud to train. But according to the first elder’s calculations.....today shouldn’t be the day the black-scaled serpent should be doing that!

As someone familiar to the behavioral patterns of the black-scaled serpent, the first elder knew there just had to be a special reason why the serpent was breaking its pattern!

He took a closer look at the serpent. The serpent didn’t look off or anything, but the amount of dark clouds it was taking in was clearly a great deal larger than before!

What did that mean?

Another few seconds went by before the elder found his solution. “Is it...is it about to advance?! Impossible!”

The elder went from being relaxed to being on-guard almost instantaneously from this terrible predicament. His soulsense went out at once to scan the serpent in front of him.

But there was already a loud hiss ringing through the skies the moment before his soulsense could confirm anything!

.....

Bai Yunfei and the others were already in position with their

minds linked together thanks to the effect of the Charm Bracelet. Giving the OK to one another, the two soulbeasts and man dashed off in their respective directions to get to the serpent.

The serpent didn't even seem to notice them even as they ran, seemingly focused whole-heartedly on its task.

Elated by this stroke of good luck, Bai Yunfei advanced another ten meters forward. Priming himself to attack, Bai Yunfei prepared himself to make the first blow when....everything changed!

It all happened just another few steps after Bai Yunfei was priming up his soulforce. As he took himself just one step further, Bai Yunfei's face immediately darkened!

“Hiss!!!”

Almost instantaneously, the black-scaled serpent unleashed a heaven-shaking hiss before giving Bai Yunfei a furious death glare at being interrupted!

The black-scaled serpent hadn't been completely defenseless—it had merely shrunk its defensive perimeter to a minimum. Nothing would be able to get past that perimeter without it being detected, and Bai Yunfei and the others were definitely well past that perimeter!

“Damn! We've been spotted! Xiao Qi, Long Lan, attack!!”

Not one to disappoint, Bai Yunfei immediately called out for the other two to attack. His Cataclysmic Seal flew out from his space ring and spat out the fireseed in it. Then, the fireseed melted into Bai Yunfei's body who then went straight into his 'coil' form!

Meanwhile, Xiao Qi and Long Lan flew forward, their soulforce blazing with great energy as they charged at the snake!

“Hiss!!!”

There was another furious hiss from the serpent. It swung its head around to look around itself, but thankfully, the serpent

didn't hide back in its hill as Bai Yunfei was afraid of. Instead, it extended its jaws wide open to bite down onto Long Lan with its black liquid coated fangs!

Long Lan's human form was larger than the average person, but he was still a small speck compared to the maw of the serpent. Having originally planned on attacking with a blade of elemental energy, Long Lan decided otherwise when the black-scaled serpent moved after him. Eyes glowing with a tint of battle-lust, Long Lan withdrew his hand and unleashed a howl no weaker than the one the serpent gave off earlier!

“Roarrrrrr!!!!”

The roar of a dragon was imbued into his howl. Blue light shined outwards from Long Lan's body with a brightness as intense as if he himself was the sun itself. The surrounding area was washed in a wave of blue light as a giant figure appeared in front of the serpent!

The blue-eyes wyrm!

Since he was in battle, Long Lan opted to transform into his strongest battle form. Now blazing with the true aura of a class seven soulbeast, Long Lan was ready to fight without reserve!

# Chapter 732: Battle of Dragon and Snake

---

Now that Long Lan was back in his original form, he was now far too large to be eaten by the maw of the serpent. He looked down at the incoming maw and bent down to use one of his arms to grab onto the lower mandible of the serpent!

The embarrassing thing was that his forelimb was a little shorter than average, so the fangs of the snake were already nearing his chest by the time he grabbed onto the mandible. He had no way to tear apart the snake, but neither did the snake have a way to bite down onto his chest.

It wasn't his claws that were the most powerful weapons Long Lan had. As soon as the serpent was caught, he opened his mouth wide to chomp down on the serpent!

Long Lan's transformation was surprising to the serpent, but not enough for it to stop its attack. The serpent wanted to clamp down onto Long Lan even when its maw was caught, but it thought otherwise when Long Lan's claw was poised to stab through its maw if it did. Instead, it hissed. A dark shadow darted out from its mouth to strike at Long Lan's own jaw.

It was the tongue of the serpent!

The serpent's tongue was as thick as a man's arm was. The tongue had two black tips to it and was flying so fast that its exact likeness could hardly be seen. If the serpent really wanted to eat Long Lan, then it'd definitely have to 'stab' at him first before taking him into its maw.

Long Lan's eyes narrowed ominously. Tilting his head, Long Lan allowed for the tongue to graze past his 'cheekbone' and beyond.

The tongue traveled a few meters longer before seemingly reaching the end of its reach. Rather than flopping, the tongue softened in the middle before whirling around. The tip of the



tongue still sharp as ever, it traveled around Long Lan's head and then moved to stab at his left eye!

Long Lan hadn't thought the tongue of the serpent would be able to do something as flexible as coil around his head. The tip of the tongue was already just three inches away from his eye, so he knew to not let it extend any further. Without any other choice, he disengaged from the serpent and flew up into the air with enough speed to propel his giant body a hundred meters high into the air and several dozen meters backwards.

Now free again, the black-scaled serpent swung its head up to glare at Long Lan. Its tongue was back in its mouth as it prepared to go after him. But then the upper half of its body swung backwards like a bow. Five Spatial Edges came tearing through the places where the serpent's body used to be a split-second afterwards.....

Because of their ambush being found out and the first strike being done by the serpent instead, Bai Yunfei wasn't even able to attack the serpent before the three class seven soulbeasts were already engaged in a fight between themselves.

Xiao Qi trilled in annoyance when he saw his Spatial Edges miss. Spreading his wings wide, the Wind and Lightning Feathers started to glow with violet light and was transformed into a bird of lightning as soon as it was fully charged up. All around him, the air crackled with purple lightning that only increased in size and intensity with each second. Xiao Qi flapped his wings again to summon several hundred bolts of lightning to send towards the serpent!

Long Lan howled again at this time, gathering a massive amount of elemental water to him. In preparation for the strongest move in his repertoire, Long Lan formulated a giant ball of elemental water in front of him with a hint of darkness inside of it to slam into the serpent!

Faced with two powerful attacks from both sides, the serpent had to unleash a powerful attack of its own. Its body compressed down on itself so that it went from being several dozen meters tall to just about two stories tall around the mountain. There was a powerful glow of dark light as the black-scaled serpent's entire body compressed down on itself. With every second the dark light shined from the serpent's body, the serpent's body grew even more rigid before its mouth snapped shut and went still. From the outside, it looked as though the gigantic black-scaled serpent had turned into a crystalline statue or something.

The bolts of purple lightning came striking down as soon as this transformation was made along with the spheres of elemental water!

Elemental lightning and water splashed across the black-scaled serpent a moment afterwards, sending beams of violet light flying everywhere!!

Xiao Qi's attack of hundreds of lightning bolts had been....reflected back away from the serpent!

Somehow, the serpent's body had transformed into a series of mirrors that reflected everything. The purple lightning bolts slammed into the serpent's scales, but they were each reflected without exception!

“Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!!”

The world was rocked with the sound of lightning bolts striking the ground. With each bolt of lightning, the ground was burnt black and purple with clods of dirt and dust being kicked up and leaving behind giant craters about ten meters tall.

As like usual, the serpent's aura was completely unaffected by the bolts of lightning. Xiao Qi's attacks had failed to leave even a scratch onto them, and Long Lan's elemental water had only managed to surround the serpent's scales in it.

“Boom!!”

There was another mighty explosion that not only affected the serpent, but the hill it was hiding on. Just thirty meters above the base of the mountain, the ground was starting to be split apart!

“Hiss!!”

A dreadful hiss cried out halfway before the prior explosion could even subside. A giant black shadow sprung out from the mountain to reveal the entirety of the serpent's giant body. Now free of its earthen nest, the black-scaled serpent flung itself towards the right at Long Lan!

And judging from the light shining off from its scales....the two attacks Xiao Qi and Long Lan did on it had done absolutely nothing on it!

The earth shook again when Long Lan's gigantic body landed on the ground. He had to do so in order to evade the serpent's lunge at him, as his body wasn't as agile when he flew compared to when he was on the ground. The serpent was also a very powerful foe that didn't give him much breathing room. Even moreso, Long Lan's giant body wasn't as large as the serpent now that its body was fully out there for everyone to see.

The two soulbeasts were engaged in a battle of supremacy now. Coiled and hissing, the black-scaled serpent tried its best to ensnare the blue-eyes wyrm in an attempt to subjugate him. With its tail swinging violently and its head poised to strike, the earth shook whenever the serpent made another move against Long Lan. The forest beneath them was already being torn apart with their physical movement and shockwave of elemental energy.

Flying overhead was Xiao Qi, whose body was rather insignificantly sized compared to the serpent and Long Lan. Every so often Xiao Qi would find an opportunity in battle to unleash a volley of fireballs or wind blades, but the effects of his attacks were rather limited.

The three soulbeasts were engaged in a fierce battle of supremacy, but Bai Yunfei couldn't even find a chance to partake in the fight!

Bai Yunfei had to admit he didn't really have a master plan against the black-scaled serpent. He didn't even know if his Eighty-one Fold Fist Force or Winged Flame Blade would even leave a scratch onto the serpent or not. The explosion effect of the Fire-tipped Spear would definitely only leave behind a sore spot at best, and do nothing else if he didn't land it on the right area. So Bai Yunfei gave the battleground a wide berth to stand there with his spear out to watch the battle and see if there was a way to kill the snake.

The battle taking place beneath him was already far beyond what he initially thought would happen. Thankfully, the black-scaled serpent didn't decide to hide back in its mountain rather than fight, but the serpent was still a lot stronger than he gathered.

"This isn't just an early-stage class seven soulbeast. It's probably already a mid-stage class seven!!" Bai Yunfei thought to himself on just how strong the soulbeast was.

Xiao Qi and Long Lan were both strong for their respective levels, and yet they were still hardly able to win against the black-scaled serpent when fighting together. This definitely meant that the serpent's strength was comparable in intensity than to the both of them despite not being an actual mid-stage class seven. Still, this meant that it had more soulforce or power than either Xiao Qi or Long Lan individually.

If Bai Yunfei had to guess, then this black-scaled serpent had to have a reason why it didn't hide in its mountain like the other times with the Underworld School. If it was fighting so earnestly against two other class seven soulbeasts, then it had to mean it was close to becoming a mid-stage class seven....it was close to advancing!

This was a battle to help the snake advance in stage!

It wanted to kill Xiao Qi or Long Lan and devour their soulgem in order to help it succeed!

Or perhaps the black-scaled serpent felt happy about this situation. It was in the middle of training when 'prey' knocked on its doorstep for it. This would save the serpent any time and energy to go hunting. If it could just kill these two soulbeasts and devour their soulgems, then it would definitely succeed in advancing in strength!

Bai Yunfei stared fixedly at the intense battle taking place beneath him. His left hand subconsciously touched upon the black ring on his left hand.

He originally planned on having Xiao Qi and Long Lan capture the black-scaled serpent by themselves, but it seemed that he'd need to call upon the permafrost mastiff if the snake was somehow a lot stronger than they thought.

"We can't delay this fight. We've already started the fight, so we can't hesitate or let it return to its nest...."

Bai Yunfei stared hard at the snake a while longer. "We....we have to kill the snake off in one strike!"

# Chapter 733: Violent Methods

---

The first elder from the Underworld School was still standing up there in the skies away from Bai Yunfei and the others. He was staring at the battle with a strange expression. He had been thinking about joining the fray a moment ago, but when he saw that neither Zheng Kai or Bai Yunfei were in danger, he decided to refrain for the time being.

His eyes lingered on the black-scaled serpent for a decent amount of time before he started to mutter to himself. “What a blunder, the black-scaled serpent is already at the level of a mid-stage class seven while we weren’t looking. How strange....did it have some good fortune recently?”

Incidents of good fortune weren’t just limited to soul cultivators. The world was fraught with soulbeasts, and where the soulbeasts lived was a place where plenty of rare things could be found, meaning the chances of something good happening was high. Soulbeasts finding some type of rare natural resource and consuming it to help their training wasn’t a very rare occurrence.

But ones that could help a class seven soulbeast increase in strength so substantially were a lot harder to find. The first elder had even made sure of there being none by looking all around and even in the serpent’s nest before.

“Those two soulbeasts became class seven only a while ago. It won’t be easy for them to fight the black-scaled serpent....and those two youngsters are only Soul Exalts. I might have to fight after all.....” The first elder decided, albeit with some hesitation. He wanted to see Bai Yunfei fight and see just what the disciple of Zi Jin could really do. Unfortunately for him, Bai Yunfei was doing nothing but watch the fight from the sidelines without actually fighting himself.

Something strange in the vicinity of the battle then caught the

first elder's eyes, "That's...."

He was still staring at Bai Yunfei, who had been nearly motionless up to this point. His left hand waved once before a flash of white light flowed out from it and subsequently had a white figure dash out into view in front of him.

"Ha!!!"

And for some strange reason, Bai Yunfei shouted out loud!

Before the first elder could even think of a response to that, another three cries came out at the same time!

"Chirp!"

"Roar!!"

"Aooo!!!"

Xiao Qi, Long Lan, and even the permafrost mastiff were all crying out at once with Bai Yunfei!

The shouts of theirs weren't just an ordinary one, they were each a....soul attack!

The combined efforts of three class seven soulbeasts' soul attacks and then Bai Yunfei's Soul Sentinel Scarf boosted pseudo-soul attack were all heading towards the black-scaled serpent!

It was a good bet to say that aside from Bai Yunfei, Xiao Qi, and Long Lan, no one else expected for this development to happen. The black-scaled serpent was already warpped around Long Lan's foot and was slowly winning the fight when it was struck with different soul attacks without warning!

The eyes of the serpent dilated to practically slits and the serpent started to quiver violently once struck. Loosening from its grip onto the blue-eyes white wyrm, the serpent fell to the ground where it then hissed with an increasingly angry cry.

"Hiss!!"

It was a hiss that was just as loud as the roars that came at it earlier. Noisy and loud, the hiss just barely weak enough for Zheng Kai to get away with just wincing in pain and plugging his ears in retreat.

This hiss was a soul attack just like the other roars were!

The class seven black-scaled serpent—while being a soulbeast with low sentience—was still capable of a soul attack. It deigned not to use it during this fight since one of those was somewhat useless in a fight between class seven without the proper moment. They were regularly meant as last resorts or the the prelude to a finishing blow. In this current case, the serpent was in mortal peril and had to call out the strongest soul attack it could do.

The contest of strength between soul attacks started and ended quickly with the black-scaled serpent convulsing on the ground and letting out a panicked hiss!

Individually, the black-scaled serpent is the strongest of the four. But in a battle of one against four, the black-scaled serpent was no match for Bai Yunfei and the three soulbeasts!

There was a mournful hiss as the serpent coiled in on itself, forming the shape of a fried dough stick with black energy wisping off of it rather than steam. Its soulforce was heavily disturbed now, and a large amount of it was disseminating into the air along with the dark energy. Whatever plant life in the area that it touched, the plant life quickly started to dry up and wither.

“Roar!!”

First came an angry roar, then came a loud explosion. Long Lan made the first move by taking two large steps forward and swinging his large tail firmly onto the serpent!

“Bang!!”

The serpent was flung backwards into the mountain behind it!

Before the serpent could collide into it, five black blades flew



forward to hit it mid-route—these were the Spatial Edges of Xiao Qi!

With how large the serpent was and how evenly spaced the Spatial Edges were apart from one another, the serpent would without a doubt be cut into several bloody chunks if it continued on backwards!

The black-scaled serpent was clearly feeling the impending doom it was in even despite the flummox it was in due to the soul attacks earlier. Somehow managing to twist its body mid-flight, the serpent thrashed out with its tail. There was a bang as its tail collided with a seemingly invisible wall and flew off into a perpendicular direction away from the Spatial Edges, thus allowing it to escape with its life!

But even though it managed to make it out with its life, its maneuver didn't fully allow the serpent to escape fully unscathed. A single Spatial Edge had managed to shear through a segment of its tail....

“Pcht....”

Dark red blood erupted from the two halves of the serpent before a six meter long portion of the tail dropped from the skies.

“Hisssssss!!!”

“Boom!”

There was a short-lived hissing sound of pain from the serpent before it crashed into the mountain. Stone and dust flew everywhere as a crater formed where it landed.

Amidst the dust cloud, the serpent's eyes were now filled with fear. For once since this battle started, the serpent was fearing for its life. No longer willing to fight, the serpent turned its injured body around to face the mountain it was in. Curving back its head, the serpent shot a hundred meters up into the air before spinning vertically and coming back down onto the mountain!

Was it....trying to kill itself by slamming into the mountain rather than die by the hands of Bai Yunfei?

But rather than falling to the ground in a bloody mess, the serpent disappeared from sight!

And in its place, a cave ten meters in circumference opened up in the mountain!

Bai Yunfei's eyes were wide open when he realized what the serpent had done. He really hadn't expected that the combined strength of four different soul attacks would still not be enough to kill the black-scaled serpent!

Truly, it was unexpected for the black-scaled serpent to survive against something like that. And not only had it managed to avoid Xiao Qi's carefully aimed Spatial Edges, it managed to escape with a light enough wound to hide into the mountain!

In his mind, Bai Yunfei was fully expectant that the serpent would've died at the hands of Xiao Qi. But....it dodged them! Not only did it dodge the Spatial Edges, it was running away!

So stunned was Bai Yunfei by this that he stood there, motionless and completely forgetting about reacting to this development.

"F\*ck!! You're letting it run after all that? Are you crazy?! Yunfei, hurry up and think of something! It's going to be impossible to kill if you let it hide in the mountain!"

Zheng Kai slapped Bai Yunfei on the shoulder to jolt him out from his stupor.

The slap roused Bai Yunfei back to normal. The muscles on Bai Yunfei's face twitched angrily, but Zheng Kai didn't know if that was from him losing composure or from the serpent not dying.

"I think it's burrowing into the heart of the mountain. This isn't good, how do we force it out...?"

"Bzzz....."

A faint buzzing sound caused Zheng Kai to pause briefly. Realizing the sudden rising of temperature, he looked up just in time to see a giant 'fiery stone block' appear over his head.....

And it was growing even larger in size!

Bai Yunfei's left hand called the permafrost mastiff back into its ring. He canceled the 'coil' form with his right hand and had his second fireseed go back into the Cataclysmic Seal. Once deposited, the fireseed roused the Cataclysmic Seal and had it start to expand in size.....

Bai Yunfei stared angrily at the mountain in front of him and felt the aura of the serpent grow farther and farther into the mountain.

“Push it!!”

He spat those two words vehemently.

# Chapter 734: Mission Accomplished

---

Bai Yunfei had used three class seven soulbeasts in order to kill this one black-scaled serpent, even if it was a bit ‘shameless’ and overdid things. But in the end, not only did he fail to capture or kill it, the serpent was running away!

That made Bai Yunfei sullen and just a tiny bit annoyed.

He was wholeheartedly wanting to save the life of that young girl, so Bai Yunfei wasn’t willing to tolerate any mistakes in obtaining the snake gall of the black-scaled serpent. But if he didn’t think of a way to force the snake out from its burrow, then it’d be far too late. And if the black-scaled serpent fled, then there’d definitely be no chance of capturing it within a reasonable amount of time afterwards.....

“Pu....push it?!”

Zheng Kai’s eyes were wide open as he repeated those words. “What do you...mean by that?” He asked.

Bai Yunfei’s eyes were still honed in on the three hundred meter tall and one hundred meter wide mountain peak in front of him. Eyes practically burning with heat, Bai Yunfei fed even more soulforce into the Cataclysmic Seal, allowing it to transform into a floating ‘fiery mountain’!

This was the Cataclysmic Seal in its supersized mode!

The transformation from a tiny brick to its current size took only a matter of seconds. It floated over Bai Yunfei’s head and covered hundreds of square meters beneath him.

Bai Yunfei didn’t answer Zheng Kai’s question. Instead, he pointed the right finger of his hand at the mountain!

“Bzzz....”

A loud hum could be heard for kilometers around as the giant

Cataclysmic Seal flew straight into the mountain!

Bai Yunfei was just a few hundred meters away from the mountain, but the Cataclysmic Seal was within a hundred meters. Flying for just a short moment, the Cataclysmic Seal struck the mountain with great velocity!

“Boom!!!”

The ensuing explosion practically cracked the mountain from top to bottom. Zheng Kai stood there in midair, watching with his jaw agape as the earth beneath him shuddered and fractured as if it was all falling apart!

All sorts of bird type soulbeasts took off to the skies in fright, cawing and chirping as they flew. The entire forest was turned into a cacophony of sound as soulbeasts from every direction started to flee away from the mountain!

Zheng Kai was dumbfounded. The giant mountain that had once stood right in front of him was now just a pile of silt. Under the weight of the Cataclysmic Seal, the entire mountain collapsed without resistance!

There was one final explosion as the Cataclysmic Seal pressed against the spot where the mountain once stood. The rest of the mountain had been pushed two hundred meters away from its original position and ruined the forest that once stood behind it.

Bai Yunfei had really....pushed the mountain.

“Isn’t....isn’t this a little too unbelievable...?”

Zheng Kai murmured to no one in particular.

“Found it!”

He was roused out from his stupor when Bai Yunfei called out to the group. He followed Bai Yunfei’s gaze down to where the base of the mountain was.

“Hiss!!”

There was a terrified hiss as a storm of dust was kicked up again!

A black shadow writhed from within the dust storm for a moment before trying to escape towards the left—it was the black-scaled serpent!

There was a ring of fire wrapped around the serpent at a closer look. It wasn't a very bright flame, and the black energy coming off from the serpent looked strong enough to drown it out almost. But the fire wasn't fading away from the serpent. Like a snake made of fire, it continued to stick around the bigger serpent without letting go.

This was....the +10 additional effect of the Cataclysmic Seal: Flame Twister!

10% chance to activate 'Flame Twister' and restrict the mobility of another by 10% for a maximum of ten seconds upon attacking.

When the Cataclysmic Seal slammed against the mountain, it did so much damage to both the mountain and its surroundings that the serpent had been unable to avoid all damages. It was knocked head over tail by the upturning of the ground and was struck by the additional effect of the Cataclysmic Seal. As like a slight drizzle that became a downpour, the serpent was worse off than before and desperately trying to make its escape into the deeper parts of the forest.

The mountain peak was in ruins, and the base of the mountain had still one last hole it had to hide in. This hole, however, was now blocked off due to the Cataclysmic Seal. And since the black-scaled serpent wasn't able to drill into the mountain again, all it could do was try to head for Black Cloud Forest and find somewhere else to hide itself in.

But even if it wanted to, there was no way the serpent would be able to escape.....

It was at the end of its rope while Xiao Qi and Long Lan were

both essentially unharmed. As soon as the serpent was bounding out from the base of the mountain, a giant figure in blue and another in violet were flying alongside the Cataclysmic Seal. The figure in blue came bounding for the serpent by ground and the one in violet from the skies for a pincer attack.

“Roar!!!”

As if hitting on the emergency brakes of some kind, Long Lan came to a sudden stop to slam his tail onto the serpent. Like a long blue whip, the tail slammed accurately onto the serpent and sent it airborne!

The tail landed onto the serpent without fail and so the serpent was sent flying like a ball up into the air where Xiao Qi was waiting!

Trilling at the opportunity, Xiao Qi flapped his wings and sucked in the surrounding elemental energy into himself. A wide spectrum of light and color started to shine from his body before his wings turned darker. The darkness spread throughout his wings before he unleashed three different Spatial Edges!

With a flap of his wings, Xiao Qi sent the three Spatial Edges down towards the incoming black-scaled serpent.

“Hiss!!” Trying as hard as it might, the serpent tried to invoke its soulforce in an attempt to move. Its attempts were awarded with it being able to avoid the first Spatial Edge, but the other two sliced into its body from the left and right side without resistance....

There wasn't even any sound when the two Spatial Edges landed, and neither did the Spatial Edges come to a stop after they connected. They continued onward down towards the ground and disappeared while chunks of the serpent's body came crashing back down, leaving behind a very bloody serpent....

The hiss coming from the serpent came to an abrupt stop after that. The three parts of the serpent fell to the ground somewhere

in the forest while droplets of blood rained down from all over the skies....

When the last of the dust had settled, all that was left was the ruined mountain and scattered trees of the forest. The serpent was dead, and the three parts of its body was completely without movement.

Everything was back to normal as if all was right in the world.

Zheng Kai was still breathless. Staring at the carcass of the serpent, it took him a while before he could find the right words to say.

“Is....is it all over?!”

He turned to Bai Yunfei and was then startled by what he saw, “Yunfei, what’s wrong?!”

Bai Yunfei’s face was flushed red and sweaty with fatigue. His chest was heaving heavily and his breathing was labored as if he had just gone through a very intensive moment of exercise.

Bai Yunfei waved his hand as if to dismiss Zheng Kai’s concerns. “Just used up a lot of soulforce, I’ll be fine after some rest.”

Using the Cataclysmic Seal to utterly demolish the mountain wasn’t as simple as it looked. It needed a massive sum of soulforce in order to accomplish all that. In terms of soulforce consumption, this one attack took more than it normally needed to use the Dual Dragon Burst.

“Ah’Zheng, can you go look at the corpse of the serpent and see if the gall is alright?” He asked.

Since the corpse of the serpent was in three, Bai Yunfei wasn’t sure or not if the gall of the serpent was intact or not. If the Spatial Edge had hit where it was located, then this entire trip would end up as being a fruitless endeavor.

Zheng Kai paused for a moment. “Yeah, alright. I’ll go take a



look.”

He flew down to the ground. Bai Yunfei took this time to look around himself. Long Lan was already back in his human form and was flying over to him along with Xiao Qi. Sighing, Bai Yunfei waved the Cataclysmic Seal back to him and reverted it to its normal brick-sized form before storing it back into his space ring.

“It’s all over....”

Though this took a lot more effort than expected, Bai Yunfei could say his goal was met almost. He smiled and took a step forward to reach where Zheng Kai was.

Two hundred meters later, Bai Yunfei’s eyebrows rose upwards when he saw something strange. Pausing, he raised his right hand to his forehead and looked off into a distance towards the right.

Over there was the mountain peak where the Cataclysmic Seal had pushed away a few moments ago....

# Chapter 735: Gone!

---

A giant crater had opened up from where the Cataclysmic Seal pushed open the mountain. Trees and leftover rubble littered the crater where the mountain once stood, but now that the peak was ‘pushed’ away, all that was left was a large expanse of black stone as flat as a platform.

This ‘platform’ had a hole in it about ten meters in length, but because of the surrounding black stones, it was hard to tell there was even a hole here without taking a good look.

But Bai Yunfei had seen it. His eyes made contact with the cave.

About four emotions rippled across Bai Yunfei’s face. A third of those emotions was shock, the second was suspicion, the third hesitation, and the last ten percent was of joy.

Who knew what kind of things were going on here?

Xiao Qi and Long Lan changed directions when they saw Bai Yunfei head for Zheng Kai. They flew off towards where the corpse was, Long Lan looking quite excited to have yet another item to boost his strength (the soulgem of the black-scaled serpent), and Xiao Qi feeling a little distracted with him thinking about just how much of a boost he’d get from killing the serpent.

So because of their distraction, neither of the two soulbeasts noticed Bai Yunfei stopping. He stared at the place for a moment and then changed direction to head for the area.

“Was I imagining things? But that feeling definitely felt more real than not. What is it....”

Bai Yunfei was muttering to himself, his right hand touching at the Soul Sentinel Scarf on his forehead.

When he was flying on over to Zheng Kai, Bai Yunfei felt a strange pulse of energy come from the scarf on his head. It was just for a moment, but Bai Yunfei felt it. Something was guiding him,

and it was because of that feeling that he turned that direction and found out the cave that had been hiding there.

It was unfortunate that the feeling was only for a split-second. It was just short enough that Bai Yunfei was left doubting himself over if what he felt was real or if it was just his Soul Sentinel Scarf using up soulforce for something.

Soon, Bai Yunfei was at the center of the platform where the hole was.

There wasn't a reaction coming from the Soul Sentinel Scarf now. Bai Yunfei lowered his right hand and stretched his waist. Sizing up the hole, he sent his soulsense forward and started to probe it out.

It was a rather ordinary-looking hole that went for several hundred meters into the ground this way and that.

This was very clearly once a hidey-hole of the black-scaled serpent.

"It's a good thing we stopped the serpent when we did. Otherwise it would've gone down this hole and be completely out our reach." Bai Yunfei sighed to himself with a shake of his head. His curiosity now fully satisfied, he prepared to head to where Zheng Kai was.

It would appear that his senses were wrong. There was nothing special about this hole in particular.

"Hey....."

A voice spoke into his ears as he turned.

No...

This was no voice, something was speaking into his mind!

Bai Yunfei froze in the air. He remained still for just half a second before he turned around.

This time, there was a highly suspicious look on his face.

There was nothing to be seen or felt from this hole still.

But Bai Yunfei didn't leave straight away this time. He hovered around the hole as if waiting for something, staying still to listen intently.

“Hey...”

It was another few seconds later, but Bai Yunfei heard it. He really did ‘hear’ a voice speak to him!

He couldn't put his finger on just what this was, or if the speaker was a boy or girl. The only thing he knew was that the voice was very weak and short as if it was coming from far away. His eyes were staring intently at the hole though. His mind was telling him one thing and just one thing alone:

The strange feeling he was having was coming from the hole!

“What's....what is this.....?” Bai Yunfei narrowed his eyes. His soulsense was already probing the hole and was about half a kilometer deep already, but he couldn't find anything out yet. The summons from his mind was gone now, and everything seemed like he was just imagining things again.

“Forget it, perhaps this is some sort of mysterious energy wave from Black Cloud Valley. I just need to get the snake gall and bring it back to the Underworld School....”

Again, Bai Yunfei decided to give up on whatever this hole was about. He hadn't really the time or inspiration to wonder about this cave and reminded himself of him needing to help save the life of the girl back in the school.

As he prepared to leave, Bai Yunfei slowly gave one last look at the hole.

But in that one last look, something strange took place without anyone realizing it....

“The snake gall should be here, doesn't look like we have

anything to worry about. I'd wager it's completely safe and can be taken home, what do you thi—Yunfei? Eh?"

Zheng Kai had been observing the carcass of the black-scaled serpent and speaking to Bai Yunfei when he turned around at last to look at him.

That was when he realized Bai Yunfei was absolutely nowhere to be seen.

"Yunfei!!!"

That was when a startled cry erupted from overhead as well.

It was Xiao Qi!

Zheng Kai looked up in concern, "What's wrong, Xiao Qi?"

Xiao Qi was circling around the area now, his eyes searching frantically throughout the area. In his panic as he combed the area through, he spoke, "Yunfei....Yunfei's gone!!"

"What do you mean gone? Wasn't he just right the—"

He pointed a finger off to the right, but then he froze when there was absolutely nothing in that direction to point at.

He looked around again.

"F\*ck! He really is gone!" Zheng Kai swore.

As they were both saying, Bai Yunfei was....gone from sight!

It wasn't just in the visible sense either. Bai Yunfei's aura couldn't even be detected!

"That can't be, there's no way Bai Yunfei would play a joke like that at this time...." Zheng Kai muttered to himself. Taking off to the skies, he flew to where Xiao Qi and Long Lan were now to look around. Scouring the skies and ground, none of them could see even a trace of Bai Yunfei.

"Ah, Xiao Qi! Don't you have a bond with Yunfei?" Zheng Kai's eyes lit up with that suggestion, "You should be able to sense

where he is with that, right?”

But Xiao Qi only shook his head in abject despair. “I can’t.....I can’t even sense his aura through our bond!”

“What?!” This time, Zheng Kai was well and truly startled. “Are you joking with me?! How can he disappear from even your soul bond?!” He cried out in exasperation.

A bond made between soul cultivator and soulbeast was a connection that allowed one to sense one another no matter how far the distance. If one couldn’t sense the other, that usually meant one of two things.

Either one of the two parties was making the connection faulty between them through an enigmatic method of some kind, or..... one of the two parties was already a very empty shell devoid of life.

The first option was clearly not possible.

Bai Yunfei would never sever the connection and neither did he know of a way to do so.

And there was also no way he could’ve died so quickly like that. Xiao Qi would’ve felt Bai Yunfei dying and be hurt by the damage to his soul.

So then....where in the world did Bai Yunfei disappear to?!

# Chapter 736: Unexplained Disappearance and....A Major Event

---

Bai Yunfei was gone!

Gone without a trace and within a second! His person was nowhere to be seen, his aura nowhere to be felt, and his very being not able to be sensed through Xiao Qi's bond with him!

Everyone had been so relaxed when they finished the battle with the black-scaled serpent. But now that this happened, everyone was back in high tension and alarmed beyond all else.

“Eh? There's someone over there!”

Zheng Kai cried out as they looked around. Ecstatic, Long Lan turned to where Zheng Kai pointed at, thinking that they had found Bai Yunfei. To the left where the Cataclysmic Seal had once flattened the mountain there stood a single man in black robes.

It took a brief moment for Zheng Kai to identify the person. “That's not Yunfei! That's....the first elder?!”

“So there really was someone from the Underworld School following us....If the first elder is here, then maybe....” Zheng Kai's eyes flashed with the light of deep thought. “Let's see if the first elder has anything to see, let's head on over!” He spoke to the two other soulbeasts.

“Whoosh! Whoosh!”

Two beams of wind were already flying on over before Zheng Kai was even done with his sentence.

.....

The first elder of the Underworld School was standing there on the flat ground with a look of confusion on his face. He was staring at the hole Bai Yunfei had been in front of just a moment ago.

“First elder! Do you know where Yunfei’s gone to?!”

The two soulbeasts and Zheng Kai touched down on the area next to the first elder, with Xiao Qi already speaking to him.

The first elder glanced at Xiao Qi for a moment and then nodded. “I saw....Bai Yunfei falling into this hole....”

“Whoosh!”

Without waiting for anything else, Xiao Qi dove straight into the hole!

“Xiao Qi! Hold up!” Zheng Kai cried out, but it was too late, Xiao Qi was already too far deep into the abyss of the hole.

His hand flew up to stop Long Lan from entering the hole, “Don’t go in, Long Lan! Listen to what the elder says first!”

A little surprised by the abrupt action of Xiao Qi, the first elder shook his head. “It’s no use. Bai Yunfei is....no longer here.”

The juxtaposition of the elder saying Bai Yunfei had fallen into the hole and that Bai Yunfei wasn’t here confused Zheng Kai. “First elder....what do you mean by that?”

The first elder didn’t look very clear himself. Taking a moment to recompose and think, he replied, “I won’t lie to you. I was watching your group battle the black-scaled serpent from afar. When you killed it, I saw Bai Yunfei come here and stare at the hole.”

He pointed at the hole. “He only glanced at it and turned away. But then when he looked back at it for a better look....it looked as though he was dragged in. Sucked in. And then....he was gone.”

“I.....” Zheng Kai didn’t know what say. He blinked a few times. ‘Dragged in’? ‘Sucked in’? What did that mean?

And why was it that they couldn’t sense Bai Yunfei’s aura when he was sucked in? The first elder’s recounting of the events didn’t really make sense, but he hadn’t a reason to lie, so....what in the



world was going on?

“If Yunfei really is in this hole, then why....”

“I cannot say for certain....I may have seen Bai Yunfei drop into the hole, but his aura disappeared the very moment he fell out of sight....” The first elder shook his head. “I can guarantee that Bai Yunfei’s aura does not exist here in this hole.”

Zheng Kai was even more confused now. Sending his soulsense into the hole, he scoured it for any signs of life. For several hundred meters he felt nothing, and after a while, Zheng Kai reached the limit of how far he could send his soulsense. By that point, he couldn’t even sense Xiao Qi’s aura.

“Long Lan, can you sense anything?” Helpless, Zheng Kai could only ask Long Lan who was stronger than him.

“I can sense Xiao Qi’s aura....” Long Lan nodded, “But....not Yunfei’s.”

“What in the world is going on here!” Zheng Kai bursted out with great vexation. “How can a living person just disappear like that?!”

.....

Back in the main halls of the Underworld School.

The headmaster Mo Yanbai was still seated upon his large throne. The other elders like Mu Chen were standing by his side as they all listened to a middle-aged woman give a report.

“....The entire continent is already aware of this. From what I’ve seen, the major schools and families are already mobilizing, and so are several of the more minor ones. Everyone’s heading for the Southward River Province. By the time I made my way back, I came across the Water and Wood Schools, and even someone from the Wang in Wenhan City.”

The woman paused here to take a brief sip of her tea. After the sip, she set the cup down and waited for Mo Yanbai to say

something.

The entire hall was silent. No one even knew what to say and were still trying to digest the information.

It was Mu Chen who spoke up first after a while. “Elder Wu, do you think this piece of information is true?”

The woman was elder Wu, an elder of the Underworld School. Understanding the questioning tone behind Mu Chen’s voice, the woman shook her head. “I didn’t believe the information at first. That was already something of the legends from nearly a thousand years ago, how could an entire ‘furnace’ of it appear? It’s ridiculous beyond belief....but with all the major factions mobilizing their forces, I had to rethink the information. If there’s smoke, there’s fire, and something like this wouldn’t spread so far without some semblance of truth to it. The Beast Taming School was the first to disseminate this information, but they were the first to mobilize their forces. As such, I would have to posit that this information is true....”

She turned to Mo Yanbai. “What do you think we should do, headmaster? Since we are the closest school to the spot, we have the advantage if this piece of information is true. We might not be able to win by ourselves, but we are still strong enough to get a fair share of the profits. It’s a once-in-a-thousand-years chance for our school....”

The headmaster stared at everyone there for a long moment before he responded. “It certainly does sound unbelievable to hear, and I would prefer that it be untrue, but in the off-chance that this really is true, it would be our school that would be missing out on the chance. As elder Wu said, the legendary place is within our boundaries, so we hold the advantage. We may as well take the plunge, it won’t take much effort on our behalf.

“Therefore, I declare that our school will be participating!”

The faces of the elders all lit up with elation at the

announcement. As like the elder, the words of elder Wu was a bit skeptical, but they all wanted to believe in the miniscule chance that the information was true and not miss out on such a 'grand event' like this.

"As elder Wu said before, this is an event where every major school or house is participating in. This means the older generation will be bringing the best talents of the next generation and have agreed to not fight themselves. What might that be?" Mo Yanbai asked elder Wu.

"That....is something far harder to believe. 'That' place everyone is heading towards has a restriction where no Soul King can enter. Every faction is bringing the strongest of their prodigies, all of which are peak late-stage Soul Exalts....the whole soul cultivator world is calling this a gathering of the greatest geniuses to fight over 'that' thing."

Mo Yanbai nodded. "Hidden areas like those are generally with restrictions of some kind. But to limit even Soul Kings from entering must mean the rules of restriction are very strong....."

"It's not as if Soul Kings can't enter," Elder Wu supplemented. "But it's said that this hidden area is 'extremely' weak. The soulforce of a Soul Exalt is within the limitations of what this hidden area can withstand, but the soulforce of a Soul King will trigger a collapse. To try and force it again will lead to unpredictable results."

"So I see...." Mo Yanbai muttered. "In that case....all of the competitors should theoretically be starting off on the same foot. A competition between Soul Exalts....hm. If we are to believe this is all true, then the winner of this little competition will also signify that one winning party has a prodigy far stronger than everyone else. That in itself is already a very big advantage....."

Elder Qi began to chuckle then. "Haha, the benefits of such an arrangement like this is easy to see, but what about the disastrous

detriments? The schools and houses might be in agreement now, but when the battle truly begins, then it'll be every man for themselves. The prodigies of every faction will be gathered there, and many of them will be buried there. That in by itself will be a tremendous blow to any group....”

“That is a risk we cannot ignore.” Mo Yanbai nodded gravely, “So we must be careful as we go through with this. If possible, we will pull out and not risk the lives of our talent pool.”

The other elders nodded in agreement. “Then by the will of the headmaster, whom shall we bring with us?” Mu Chen asked.

# Chapter 737: The Mountain Over There

---

Seemingly already with an answer to that question, Mo Yanbai spoke. “We’ll have the first elder and elder Wu lead the group. Xu Ran and Han Yue will go, if something happens, then we’ll plan accordingly.”

Elder Wu saw nothing wrong with such an answer and nodded her head. “By your will then. Where is the first elder anyhow?”

“We’ve a few guests here today,” Mu Chen chuckled, “the first elder should be accompanying them outside. I’m sure he’ll be back soon.”

“Guests? Who?” Elder Wu asked, “And outside....? To Black Cloud Forest?! The first elder is protecting them?”

Mu Chen chuckled again, “It’s a long story, but these guests are quite special...”

He re-narrated the story of how Bai Yunfei and the others came to be here today for elder Wu to listen.

“Disciple of Zi Jin of the Crafting School and peak late-stage Soul Exalt? A class seven soulbeast as a soulbeast partner and another class seven soulbeast traveling with him?! And offering up a heaven-tier soul armament and killing a black-scaled serpent just for the sake of saving a commoner they don’t know?!”

She repeated the key points to the story, but her voice was filled with doubts over the truth of them.

“An admirable act and code of conduct, but....” Mu Chen trailed off when he noticed an aura come flying over to the hall. “Eh? The first elder is already back?”

Sensing the familiar aura, everyone else turned to look in the same direction as Mu Chen.

The moment the aura came within the range of the elders, it

‘leapt’ a kilometer away and into the hall.

Everyone was surprised at the sudden leaping of this aura. The fact that the first elder was using teleportation to move from place to place signified that there was something urgent that needed to be done.

There was a flash of light as a person came flying into the hall. It was the first elder.

Mu Chen gaped at him. “First elder, what is goi....?”

“Headmaster, Bai Yunfei is missing!” The man interrupted Mu Chen.

His words put an end to everyone’s words. “What did you say?!” Mo Yanbai’s face paled drastically.

“Bai Yunfei’s missing?! What does that mean?!” Mu Chen replied as well.

“Bai Yunfei disappeared without a trace, I don’t know where he’s gone!”

Attempting to calm himself down, Mo Yanbai wiped all emotion off his face. “Tell me what happened in detail!”

Without mincing words, the first elder retold what he saw happen to Bai Yunfei. He didn’t spare details on the battle, and then his recap of how Bai Yunfei ‘disappeared’ after the battle was told without room for error either.

After he spoke, the entire hall was completely still with silence.

Elder Qi was the first to speak after a while. “How can a living being just disappear like that without warning?”

“I definitely didn’t feel anything out of the ordinary at the time. Bai Yunfei disappeared right then and there, and I didn’t know how he did or how to find him either. Even his soulbeast partner couldn’t sense his aura.”

“If his soulbeast couldn’t sense him, then wouldn’t that mean....”

Mu Chen's face darkened.

The elder shook his head. "He shouldn't be dead. We might not have been able to sense him, but the soulbeast didn't feel the effects of having their partner die. That means Bai Yunfei is still alive."

Everyone sighed a breath of relief at that. They gave each other mystified looks, each of them completely unsure of what in the world was going on.

"Then....is Bai Yunfei perhaps playing a trick on us?" Elder Qi posited a half-step later, "Perhaps he has a goal here he can't tell anyone?"

"How could that be?" Mu Chen asked with furrowed eyebrows. "Do you really think someone of Bai Yunfei's strength would be able to escape the eyes of the first elder?"

Knowing that his own suggestion was a tad bit ridiculous, elder Qi shrugged and stayed quiet.

"The area where the black-scaled serpent lives," Elder Wu spoke up, "there shouldn't be any secrets there, should there? All of the nearby pockets aren't very close to the Black Cloud Forest, so Bai Yunfei shouldn't have found himself going into one, much less one we haven't discovered. It's even more strange that he disappeared without a trace and without being able to be traced, just how...."

The first elder shook his head in response. "It was only just a nest for the black-scaled serpent he fell into. Nothing strange about it. I scanned the surrounding ten kilometers for clues and found nothing either."

"Where are the people that came with Bai Yunfei?" Mo Yanbai suddenly asked. "Why are they not back with you?"

"They....aren't willing to leave." The first elder sighed. "Especially the soulbeast partner of Bai Yunfei. It's been sweeping around the entire area now without giving up. I didn't have much

of a choice but to return to the school and report the problem. That Zheng child was relatively calm-headed though. He promised that they'd be back by midnight."

The entire hall grew silent again. No one knew how to best address this issue since everyone was thinking just how preposterous the entire situation was.

Still stormy in expression, Mo Yanbai thought about the potential ramifications of this. Bai Yunfei was gone without a trace while in his Underworld School. If they didn't find him soon, then this would spell trouble for them.

"First elder." He spoke at last. "Bring elder Mu and elder Qi with you to search the area.....actually, I'll do it myself...."

He rose up from his chair and was preparing to leave when the new auras of several more people could be felt. "They're back?!"

The first elder noticed their auras as well. "I'll go greet them!" He spoke with a happier voice.

He disappeared as soon as he spoke. In no time at all, Zheng Kai, Long Lan, and even Xiao Qi were back in the hall.

The first elder was back now too, a much happier look was had on his face. Before even waiting for Mo Yanbai to ask, he spoke, "Headmaster, Bai Yunfei has been found!"

Everyone was shocked, but happy to hear it. "Found? Where is he?" Mo Yanbai asked.

"That's...." The first elder hesitated to answer. He turned to Zheng Kai.

Zheng Kai bowed to everyone first before replying, "While we did find Bai Yunfei....his location is a little strange...."

"What do you mean by that? Where is he?"

From on top of Long Lan's shoulder, Xiao Qi was the one to chirp the answer. "I sensed Yunfei on the other side of the mountain



range.”

Everyone was mystified yet again. “Weren’t you unable to sense him? How is he....on the other side? What do you mean by that?”

Xiao Qi shook his head. “I don’t know what happened, but I really did lose connection with Yunfei for a while. But then after a while, I was suddenly able to sense him. He’s really far away and I was only able to sense just a little bit, but from what I could see, he’s on that mountain over there.”

He pointed his left wing east.

Mu Chen followed Xiao Qi’s pointing with wide-opened eyes. “Are you saying....he’s on the other side of the Black Cloud Mountain Ranges?!”

Zheng Kai nodded. “That’s what Xiao Qi senses. Yunfei was with us when we killed the black-scaled serpent, but now he’s on the other side of the mountain ranges....it’s hard to believe, but that’s what Xiao Qi senses. We’ll be on our way to go find him, but seniors, how might’ve this happened?”

No one was able to respond to him. This was a question they still had no answer for.

“Making it out over to the other side of the mountain range from within Black Cloud Valley....how can that be?” Mu Chen muttered, “Are you certain your senses are right?”

“Of course.” Xiao Qi nodded. “I can sense him even now. Yunfei is on the other side! I don’t know why, but we’re going to find him right now!”

Xiao Qi was planning to leave the valley to go straight to where Bai Yunfei was. He actually wanted to just fly up and over the mountain range, but the mountain ranges was so high that it was beyond even the Ninth Heaven, which in turn was a point of height where only Chaos existed. Even Soul Kings had no method of surviving in such a place, so the only way Xiao Qi could leave

Black Cloud Valley was through the way he came. The only problem was, Xiao Qi didn't know how to follow that route. And since Zheng Kai said that they needed to transport the black-scaled serpent's gall back to the Underworld School, Xiao Qi came with them back to the school to see what could be done.

“You said the black-scaled serpent's nest led Bai Yunfei to the other side of the mountain range?” Elder Qi suddenly asked.

“Yes.” Zheng Kai nodded.

An odd expression crossed elder Qi's face. Turning to Mu Chen, he started to speak, “If I'm not remembering things wrong, then that place must be....”

Everyone else came to the same conclusion elder Qi was coming towards. Gasping as a collective whole, elder Wu cried out, “Crushed Stone River!!”

## Chapter 738: A Mysterious Place

---

The entirety of the elders from the Underworld School were in shock at the realization of where Bai Yunfei was. Like elder Qi, elder Wu's face darkened at the mention of 'Crushed Stone River'. She stood up to look at everyone, "Could....could it be a coincidence? Or...."

"Coincidence?" Elder Qi replied, "Quite a big 'coincidence' isn't it?"

"Could his disappearance mean he has perhaps entered 'that' place?!"

"That's far too good of a coincidence. Why would he 'disappear' for such a short amount of time and then 'appear' out again then?" Asked Mu Chen.

"If he really has entered 'that' place, then that would explain why his soulbeast partner wasn't able to sense him. And then being able to sense him again when he left 'that' place....that answers the question."

"Being able to go 'there' from within Black Cloud Valley?!" Elder Qi exploded with excitement, "Then would we not be able to...."

Elder Wu shook his head. "Did the first elder not say that he scanned an entire ten kilometers around the area? If there really was a 'passageway', then how would the first elder miss it?"

Zheng Kai had been listening to everyone talk to one another, but he couldn't make heads or tails of what was going on. "Elder Mu," He asked, "What are you all talking about? What is 'that place', and what 'passageway' are you talking about?"

It was not Mu Chen who replied, but Mo Yanbai.

"Nephew Zheng, you must be tired after running around for the entire day. Please take a rest. Nephew Bai will be fine. The first elder will take you out of Black Cloud Valley in a moment and

reconvene you with Bai Yunfei in Crushed Stone River.”

Zheng Kai crinkled his eyebrows. This was a secretive talk he was currently listening to, and he was worried about Bai Yunfei still. But if Xiao Qi wasn't receiving any danger signals from him, there wasn't much of a need for them to hurry.

Zheng Kai hesitated for a moment, but he bowed and left the hall soon after.

Xiao Qi and Long Lan both wanted to leave the Underworld School at once, but there wasn't anyone else that could take them out. Like Zheng Kai, they could only rest and wait for the elders to finish.

Back in the hall, the first elder spoke up after the three had left. “Headmaster, that Crushed Stone River....what exactly is it? I recall that it was just an ordinary mountain river, was it not?”

“It used to be just that before, but now....” Elder Qi shook his head, “It's become a ‘place of legend’.”

Afterwards, elder Wu retold the story and information she had gathered outside to the first elder. Like they planned beforehand, the first elder and elder Wu decided to take the strongest two disciples with them to Crushed Stone River. Zheng Kai and the other two soulbeasts came with them, as they had also the same destination.

Since Bai Yunfei's disappearance and reappearance over to the other side of the Black Cloud Mountain Ranges was far too likely to be relating to the ‘pocket’ they were talking about before, none of the elders saw fit to speculate about any other possible reasons. It surely had to be because of that ‘pocket’, but still, the school had to be sure. In order to clear away any confusion, Mo Yanbai had elder Zhao and elder Mu scour the place again to see if they could find anything.

Elder Qi was responsible for taking the black-scaled serpent gall

Zheng Kai gave him to try and heal the young girl.

And Mo Yanbai obviously couldn't handle every mundane task himself, so he sat in the hall and gave orders to manage everything.

.....

So what in the world did Bai Yunfei come across?

Let us rewind time for just a little bit....

Things went like how the first elder said. Bai Yunfei came down to the hole and looked at it. Then without warning, it was as if someone had swung a hammer onto the back of his head! Stumbling forward, Bai Yunfei fell into the hole!

It was like if he was a stalk of grass being planted into the ground when he fell into the hole. There was a dizzying sensation for just a moment before Bai Yunfei felt everything clear up. Rotating himself around, he planted his feet onto the ground.

But when he stood up straight and took a look around, Bai Yunfei was startled into silence by what he saw.....

The very first thing to tip off his senses was the fact that he shouldn't be standing on ground. The hole was very deep, and Bai Yunfei was well aware that he wasn't at the bottom of the hole. He should've been standing on nothing but air, but it felt like he was standing on solid ground!

But the most important thing was when he looked back up. The sight around him was completely different and unfamiliar to Bai Yunfei!

The surrounding fifty meters of ground was solid stone with all sorts of broken up stones making up the ground. Some were small like eggs, others were as large as a soccer ball. Some were smooth, others were jagged and sharp. Walking on such a ground would be difficult, if not impossible without injury for the common person. But even more importantly, everything was a blur beyond these

fifty meters!

Something akin to a white mist was enveloping the area and turning the air around Bai Yunfei into an undistinguishable blanket that looked like a waterbrush painting. He could just barely make out the sight of a mountain peak and several trees beyond the fifty meters, but he wasn't sure. Layers upon layers of mist were warping the sight that made everything unclear and mirage-like.

He couldn't see what was beyond those fifty meters, and neither did he know what this place was, but there was one thing that was clear to him.

This place wasn't the place he was in before!!

Stunned almost into inaction by the realization, Bai Yunfei rolled out his soulsense to try and scan the entire area.

But that was when he realized something else!

His soulsense....wasn't able to penetrate beyond these fifty meters!!

Like how everything looked very vague, Bai Yunfei's soulsense felt as though it was entering a swamp as soon as it tried to extend beyond the boundary. His soulsense was unable to take another step, and neither could he sense a thing from the chaotic surroundings.

“Xiao Qi.....”

In his shock, Bai Yunfei called out for Xiao Qi. But no sooner did he even attempt that did his face start to pale drastically, for he couldn't sense Xiao Qi's aura either!

“Poof....” The Fire-tipped Spear appeared into Bai Yunfei's hand along with the Cataclysmic Seal. His soulforce was already raring to go just in case for battle as he looked cautiously around himself.

“Damn....how did this happen? Why am I suddenly in a strange

place like this?” Bai Yunfei grumbled as he tried to find a hint to where he was at.

“Is this an illusion?!” His eyebrows flew up when that thought came to him, but he waved the thought away. As something of an expert on the Illusion Stones, Bai Yunfei was more than well aware of what the effects of an illusion felt like. He was also wearing a few pieces of equipment that fended off against illusions, and several of them, such as the Charm Bracelet, hadn’t shown any signs that he was in one. So for that reason, Bai Yunfei had to believe this was no illusion.

So if this wasn’t an illusion, just what in the world was going on here?

“I was definitely in Black Cloud Valley, so how did I get here? This is some sort of unknown land I was transported to....” Bai Yunfei thought to himself.

“Hold on, instantaneous movement?!” Bai Yunfei’s eyes lit up, “No....apportation!”

Those adept in space manipulation or Soul Kings are capable of ‘instantaneous movement’. Moving as fast as the eye could see or even sensing everything in an area, these people could even link one place to another in space.

But ‘apportation’ was a skill a level higher than ‘teleportation’. It was capable of exceeding the distance limit of teleportation and bring something from one space to another space.

Bai Yunfei had seen something like this before. When he first joined the Crafting School, he walked through a mysterious space as red as fire before. That was a very special pocket of the Crafting School.

“Was I brought to a spatial pocket?” Bai Yunfei wondered aloud, “But...how’d I get here?!”

“Hey....”

A weak voice spoke into his ear right as Bai Yunfei was in the middle of his anxious thinking.

“Who’s there!!”

Bai Yunfei cried out, whirling around with his left hand ready to strike. There was another flash of light as the permafrost mastiff came out from its ring to protect Bai Yunfei.

Since he was in the middle of nowhere with no one to rely on, Bai Yunfei had to make use of the permafrost mastiff.

But never did Bai Yunfei think that as soon as he did that, the whole world around him would start to change!



# Chapter 739: Passing Through

---

“Bz....”

The moment the permafrost mastiff appeared in the space and distributed its powerful aura into the air, the surrounding area started to tremble and shake violently!

Outside the boundary, the distinct shadows that previously could be seen slightly before were starting to mix. Black and white mixed with one another like paint being stirred with great vigor to form a chaotic mess of light and shadow.

A second later, the entire area began to shrink! As if being pushed inwards by the chaotic energy outside, the fifty meters was starting to grow smaller. In just three seconds, the boundary shrunk down to just under ten meters!

“Damn, what’s going on now?!”

Bai Yunfei swore out loud to himself. The Cataclysmic Seal trembled slightly before a five meter large barrier erected itself over Bai Yunfei and the permafrost mastiff.

By the time the barrier was fully manifested, the boundary was already nearly touching it....

“Pop....”

A faint popping sound echoed into the air when Bai Yunfei raised his left hand up to shield his eyes, then everything in front of him went bright.

Rays of moonlight began to sprinkle onto his face along with a gust of wind. It breezed through his clothes and brought a chilling frost onto his body. Putting his hand back down, Bai Yunfei was alarmed once again by the sight in front of him....

Underneath him was still the same stony ground from before. But no longer was he in a limited boundary of nothingness. Above

him was the night sky with a half-moon resting there. Countless stars filled the skies and gave little light to the otherwise dark area around him. There was also a rather short mountain with trees on it nearby.

Bai Yunfei was perhaps in a grassland at night now.

Wary, Bai Yunfei looked around himself. His soulsense scanned the area and found that nothing was blocking him from sensing anything within a kilometer away from him.

“What’s going on??”

Bai Yunfei muttered to himself like a broken record. He scratched his head, completely at a loss for words at what was going on.

He didn’t know how long he had been stuck in that spatial pocket, but surely at least ten minutes had to have passed before he was brought to the second location. As ‘experienced’ as he might be with everything, Bai Yunfei was still completely mystified with everything that was going on.

“So where is this place?” Bai Yunfei glanced around. This was very clearly not Black Cloud Valley since he could see the sky without an issue. If he ignored the fact of apportionment, Bai Yunfei still wanted to figure out where he was now.

“Eh? Isn’t that...Black Cloud Mountain Range?!”

An extremely large mountain range met Bai Yunfei’s gaze when he turned to the right. From how tall it was stretching into the heavens, Bai Yunfei could verify that this was the Black Cloud Mountain Range.

His eyes followed the mountain ranges, but the length and height of them made it impossible for Bai Yunfei to accurately tell where he was. He was at the very least not too far away from the Underworld School.

The feeling of being able to sense Xiao Qi again made Bai Yunfei smile. He couldn’t communicate with him, but the connection was

back again at the very least. Xiao Qi was just on the other side of the mountain range.

“Does this mean....I’m on the opposite side of the mountain from where I killed the black-scaled serpent?”

Bai Yunfei scratched his head. If this was the case, then if he were to turn left, he’d be able to make it back to the opening of Black Cloud Valley and return to the Underworld School.

Though he was unable to communicate with Xiao Qi due to the barrier that was the mountain range, Bai Yunfei was still at the very least able to send a signal that he was safe. Putting away the permfrost mastiff, Fire-tipped Spear, and Cataclysmic Seal, Bai Yunfei flew off into the skies leftwards.

“Boom!!”

A loud explosion rocked the world just as he took off into the skies. Nearly a kilometer away, something had exploded there, sending a figure flying upwards.

“Agh! Damn you!!”

The figure cursed out aloud. Somersaulting, the figure landed back onto his feet on the air.

This person was wearing purple robes and was relatively robust-looking. It was a peak late-stage Soul Exalt.

Coincidentally, the direction in which this person was knocked towards was the direction Bai Yunfei was in. Though the person managed to stabilize themselves quickly, they weren’t able to reduce the backwards motion in which they were flying at, so by the time the person came to a stop, they were already close enough to sense Bai Yunfei.

He whirled around to look.

The night made it hard to see, but that meant nothing for people as strong as this person and Bai Yunfei. With a direct gaze for one

another, both persons were able to see just who the other one was.

“Bai Yunfei?!”

The purple-robed man cried out Bai Yunfei’s name in shock.

Likewise, Bai Yunfei was surprised to recognize the person. He bowed with his hands clasped together. “How coincidental to meet you here, brother Lin. Pleased to see you.”

This young man was the junior headmaster of the Beast Taming School, Lin Dongxiao!

Lin Dongxiao had only been an early-stage Soul Exalt three years ago, but now he was a peak late-stage Soul Exalt just like Bai Yunfei was!

As surprised as Lin Dongxiao was to see Bai Yunfei, he didn’t seem all that surprised that he was here, for some reason. “So the Crafting School was quick to come here as well. Your esteemed school must be determined to win that thing then....”

“What thing?” Bai Yunfei asked, confused. The auras of several other people—presumably from the Beast Taming School—made Bai Yunfei decide he didn’t care enough for the answer to keep talking with Lin Dongxiao. “I was only passing through. I’ve a few matters to take care of, so I’ll be taking my leave first.”

Then under the amazed eyes of Lin Dongxiao, Bai Yunfei took out the Tempest Sword and took off.

“Pa—passing through?!” It wasn’t until Bai Yunfei left that Lin Dongxiao regained his wits. “What is he, an actor? Pah!” He snorted derisively.

Five figures soon came up by Lin Dongxiao’s side: two elders, two young men, and one young female. One of the two elders spoke up, “What happened, Dongxiao? Did you try forcing the pocket open again? And....who was that person?”

Lin Dongxiao nodded. “I felt a strange flow in the pocket here, so

I tried to make the most of it. But as you can see, it ended in failure.....”

He looked off at the direction Bai Yunfei disappeared from, “That person was....Bai Yunfei from the Crafting School.”

“Bai Yunfei!” The same elder cried out. “So even the Crafting School has come here?!”

“Must have. “Ling Dongxiao shrugged, “They came quite fast though.”

“How repulsive....the strong are starting to gather here in droves. The pocket hasn’t opened yet, that only makes our lives more cumbersome. Will we really have to fight the entire continent for the prize in the end?”

“I’ve been prepared to just force the pocket to open, even if it means it might collapse it. If we can’t have it, then no one else will.....that’s fine then. Let them gather here and stalk us. Even if we try again to force the pocket open, the others won’t sit idly and watch, they’ll try to force open the pocket themselves. We’ll just have to wait for the pocket to open by itself.”

“I had no idea the leak would spread so fast. It’s too late to regret such matters now, I suppose. Opening the pocket first is our only advantage now to get that thing....”

.....

On the other side, Bai Yunfei was already several kilometers away. He passed by two mountain peaks before noticing that just down underneath in this area was....a great deal of soul cultivators!

They were gathered in groups of threes and twos, but the entire area was filled with people. But the most terrifying thing about this was....that everyone was at least a Soul Exalt in strength!

And hardly anyone were mid-stage Soul Exalts, the vast majority of them were all late-stage Soul Exalts or peak late-stage Soul Exalts!

Furthermore, there were also a few Soul Kings gathered here!

Practically every few groups had a Soul King in their numbers!

Bai Yunfei had only caught a small glimpse when he flew by, but he counted at the very least twenty Soul Exalts and five Soul Kings in this small area alone!

“Damn, what’s going on here?! A party?!” Bai Yunfei thought to himself as he flew along. “What in the world is going on here for so many strong people to gather....”

Coming across such a large group of people like this in an unknown land meant usually one thing: danger.

Bai Yunfei had two options in front of him. The first was to remain behind and see what was going on. The second was to leave this place at once.

He chose the latter. Safety was paramount, and Bai Yunfei was by himself here. He could at the very least find Xiao Qi and the others and then come back here to see what was happening.

“Eh??”

The feeling of something watching him cut Bai Yunfei away from his train of thought. Eyes darting towards the right side of the forest, Bai Yunfei stared frostily at whatever was there.

He was being followed.

# Chapter 740: A Reunion Between Good Friends

---

A single person had been watching Bai Yunfei from afar down in the forest below. Though Bai Yunfei noticed him now, he didn't know just how long the person had actually been following him for.

“He's strong.”

Bai Yunfei could still see that this person in hiding was quite strong. People like this one were normally perfect in their attempts to hide themselves so that hardly anyone could tell that they were even there, but Bai Yunfei was different. With his especially sharp perception, he was able to sense not only the presence of a person, but their approximate strength as well.

A second quick glance told Bai Yunfei that he was already far away enough from the other soul cultivators all gathered in that one area from before. With him being in a relatively 'empty' area and a far ways away from the entrance to Black Cloud Valley, Bai Yunfei decided to change directions. Deviating from his path very slightly, he flew for the small lake near the forest.

He soon came to the side of the lake where he dismounted from his blade and stepped down onto the lakeside to pretend to rest and freshen up.

Bai Yunfei was in the middle of washing his face and drying himself up when he wrung his hands to dry. In mid-motion, his hands flew out to throw three separate daggers into a nearby bush and out from sight.

The Flickering Dagger!

For being a part of a skill that Bai Yunfei used to be sorely dependent on in the past, the throwing knives were no longer something Bai Yunfei preferred to use now. All of his enemies were

far too strong to employ such a tactic now, and so the throwing knives were no longer usable to a helpful enough level for that. But in cases like these, they were still helpful as a preliminary warning attack.

The Flickering Dagger was the one most suited for surprise attacks due to its special nature and construct. Practically disappearing from sight when it was thrown, the Flickering Dagger was special in that it could strike down the enemy without them even knowing when or where it struck from.

This particular Flickering Dagger was of an earlier make. It's grade wasn't very high and the upgrades put to it only made it on the level of mid-earth tier soul armament. Even its additional effects weren't anything considerably good. 'Increase in throwing speed' and 'increased penetrative force' were both normally obsolete effects but were still great in times like now. Using three Flickering Daggers for an ambush like this made it so that even late-stage Soul Exalts would have to exert a decent amount of energy to evade them.

“Whoosh!”

When the three Flickering Daggers drew close, a black shadow leapt out from the left side of a tree thirty meters away from Bai Yunfei. There was three separate 'thwocks' as the daggers embedded themselves into the tree and then flew out from behind it. They flew through a second and third tree before finally coming to a stop on the fourth one.

“Roar!!”

A second shadow came out from the first one with a roar. It detached itself from the first shadow to ten meters to the left and immediately turned into the size of a lion. Body shining bright with green light, the canine-like beast snapped its jaws menacingly at Bai Yunfei.

Bai Yunfei blinked. While he did expect an attack from a soul



cultivator, a secondary attack from a soulbeast was a bit out of his expectations. But this soulbeast was just an early-stage class six and overall not even a threat to him.

The one that was an actual blip on his radar was the first shadow. Just the fact that he dodged the three Flickering Daggers alone revealed how strong he was.

A late-stage Soul Exalt.

Bai Yunfei couldn't relax knowing that he was up against two enemies. Whether they were friend or foe or if there was actually any danger, the two shadows had still been following him, so Bai Yunfei had to make sure of everything first.

“Don't be so rude, Xiao Feng, he's one of us.”

The first shadow spoke before Bai Yunfei could, slapping the side of the soulbeast with a small rebuke.

Then the shadow looked up to Bai Yunfei and spoke a sentence that surprised him.

“Haha, so it really was you....but to think you get scarier and scarier with your introductions each time....Ol'Bai.”

Bai Yunfei was also able to see his face when the person raised his head. The first feature Bai Yunfei saw was the eyes that grew narrow when the person smiled, and from that alone Bai Yunfei could determine this person wasn't an enemy. There simply wasn't enough hostility in those eyes for that.

The face didn't look familiar, and Bai Yunfei was absolutely sure he had never seen this person before.

But the name he was being called by....

Ol'Bai....

Of everyone he knew, only one person would call him by such a name....

Jing Mingfeng!!

Bai Yunfei's eyes flew wide open. He stared down the young man in front of him, "Mingfeng?!"

The young man smiled again. "Haha, as expected from my brother, you can tell who I am in just a second. It's me!"

A wave of soulforce flowed out from his body, changing the tune of his aura and allowing Bai Yunfei to see who this person was. There was no doubts about it.

This person was Jing Mingfeng!

Not only shocked, but happy to see him, Bai Yunfei roared with laughter. "Haha!! Mingfeng, it really is you!"

He was already striding forward to greet Jing Mingfeng with a great big hug.

The two men hugged one another, their hands slapping the other on their back as a sign of just how joyful they were to see one another after so long.

The hug lasted only for a moment. Breaking away from each other, Bai Yunfei slapped Jing Mingfeng on the shoulder with mock anger, "Some good friend you are, stalking me like that until I exposed you. I was surprised to see someone who was so good at hiding themselves, but it definitely had to be you."

Jing Mingfeng laughed back. "I wasn't sure it was you at first, so I didn't want to pop out just yet. You're a mean one, Ol'Bai, attacking me before you knew I was a friend or not. If I didn't dodge those daggers, I'd have three holes in me by now."

"Oh come off it. Anyone that's shadowing me like that would definitely warrant me thinking they're an enemy. If you can't even dodge a few throwing knives, you're not a wind-type soul cultivator."

He gave Jing Mingfeng a look over. "You've done well. It's been a few years since I last saw you, but you're already a late-stage Soul Exalt, what a ridiculous growth."

Six years had nearly passed since he and Jing Mingfeng split ways in the Forest Pass Province. At that time, Jing Mingfeng had only just become a Soul Ancestor, but now he was a late-stage Soul Exalt. A growth rate like that was even more absurd than the one Lin Dongxiao had.

The only who could beat him in speed was Bai Yunfei....

Jing Mingfeng quirked his lips with anger. “I’ve never heard you say that before, but why don’t I feel happy about it? I was so prepared to be stronger than you when we meet again. And yet here you are, still stronger than me. How in the blazes do you manage to do this?”

Bai Yunfei chuckled. Looking at the small soulbeast next to Jing Mingfeng, he spoke, “Hey, isn’t this your wind howler? It’s grown this much already? How’d you raise it to become a class six?”

Beckoning to the wind howler, Jing Mingfeng recalled it to his side for him to pet. “Xiao Feng has seen his fair share of days with me. The both of us nearly died multiple times, I tell you. Life-or-death experiences like that are the best way to improve.”

The two men quickly sat down to talk. “Hey, Mingfeng,” Bai Yunfei spoke, “what are you doing here anyways?”

Jing Mingfeng blinked. “Why else? I’m here for the ‘Extreme King Pill’.”

Bai Yunfei blinked back. “The Extreme King Pill? What’s that?”

# Chapter 741: Extreme King Pill!

---

Jing Mingfeng was blown away by the look of confusion on Bai Yunfei's face. He gave Bai Yunfei an incredulous look as soon as he made sure Bai Yunfei wasn't pretending not to know. "Really? You don't know about the Extreme King Pill?! Why'd you come running all the way here then?!"

Bai Yunfei smiled in embarrassment. "Well....to make a long story short, I accidentally ended up here. I was only just heading on back to meet with my companions."

"Oh, well where are they then?"

Bai Yunfei pointed towards the Black Cloud Mountain Ranges and then to the south. "They're in Black Cloud Valley. I was heading back in that direction."

The Underworld School being in Black Cloud Valley was a rather big secret to those not in the know, so Bai Yunfei decided not to divulge the secret himself.

"Black Cloud Valley?! Don't tell me you came from within?!"

"Haha. I did. But how I came out....I don't really know myself, to be honest."

It took Jing Mingfeng two seconds to think before he responded. "Don't tell me....you went to the Underworld School?"

"Eh?" Bai Yunfei drew back in surprise, "You know about it?"

Seeing that his answer was spot on, Jing Mingfeng smiled. "Hehe, there's not many people that know about the Underworld School being there, but I'm one of them."

"So what did you do in there?"

"That's a story for another time, I guess." Bai Yunfei sighed, "It'll take too long to explain..."

But seeing the curious expression on Jing Mingfeng's face, Bai

Yunfei relented. Starting with the events of Formagua City, Bai Yunfei retold the events that led to him going to the Underworld School.

The story was listened to by Jing Mingfeng with wide-open eyes from start to finish. “Now I get it....” He sighed. “I was wondering what in the world happened there. People said everyone in the city was killed and that a group of people were doing some sort of dark ritual. So it was the Soul Refining School.”

“Let’s not talk about me,” Bai Yunfei decided then, “tell me, what’s all this about the Extreme King Pill? From what you said earlier, it’s what everyone else is here for?”

He pointed off to the side where it seems most of the soul cultivators were waiting in.

Knowing that Bai Yunfei really was clueless about the going ons happening here, he nodded. “Yeah. The area all around Crushed Stone River is filled with people. They’re all here for the same reason: the Extreme King Pill.”

Bai Yunfei’s eyes sparkled as he guessed the reason why such a pill was being so sought out for. “This ‘Extreme King Pill’....is it a legendary medicine of some sort?!”

“Yeah. It’s not your every day pill, I’ll tell you that.”

The fact that such a pill was able to catch the eyes of so many Soul Kings was already proof that it wasn’t an ordinary pill. “What does the Extreme King Pill do?”

“The Extreme King Pill....should tell you a good bit on what it does just from the name alone. The point of this pill....is to allow the person that ingest it a shortcut to the Soul King realm! To breakthrough and become a Soul King!! Even an early-stage Soul King can become a mid-stage Soul King after eating one, and a mid-stage Soul King can gain the same amount of power as from twenty years of training from what I heard!”

“What?!” Bai Yunfei’s eyes flew wide open in shock. “Such a pill like that can even exist? But how!”

“For someone of your strength and status, should you really be surprised about something like that? There’s all sorts of treasure in this world, and the world of soul cultivators has always been filled with goodies like that, you know? As good as the Extreme King Pill is, it’s not exactly as ‘inconceivable’ as you might think, right?”

Jing Mingfeng’s laughter reminded Bai Yunfei that his reaction was a bit too out of composure for him. Coughing once, he tried to recompose himself. “Medicinal pills.....what kind of sorcery are they? Wasn’t the Alchemy School wiped out years and years ago? How could any Extreme King Pills suddenly show up now?”

“The Alchemy School may have disappeared, but that doesn’t mean their pills have.” Jing Mingfeng laughed. “Pills from their school have been popping up every dozen years for the last thousand years. They’re always found in the hidden caves of several soul cultivators before our time along with their treasures. But it’s been nearly a thousand years since the Extreme King Pill last appeared. Only a pill like that could cause the entire continent to be worked up into a frenzy like this.”

“So....where is this Extreme King Pill? Do you know?”

“No one knew at first. I heard it was the Beast Taming School that heard about it first. I don’t know when it started or how it came to be with all the rumors, but long story short: There’s a pocket somewhere near Crushed Stone River. The Extreme King Pill will be in that pocket.”

“Crushed Stone River?” Bai Yunfei repeated. The name felt familiar to him, but where had he heard it before?

Vacancy Inn!

Boss Lei had asked him before if he was planning to go to Crushed Stone River!

That was the time news of the pill was spread throughout the continent, it would seem. It wasn't strange for Boss Lei to know of the Extreme King Pill since he was both a native of the province and Soul King. And for that reason, it wasn't weird for him to ask if Bai Yunfei and his group was headed for Crushed Stone River.

"The Beast Taming School found it first?" Bai Yunfei asked. "No wonder I saw Lin Dongxiao back there then. Then....was he trying to force himself into the pocket?!"

"What?" Jing Mingfeng replied. "Lin Dongxiao tried to break into the pocket again?"

"Again?"

"Yeah," Jing Mingfeng laughed, "they were the first to find it, so they've been here all this time. There were all sorts of people here by the time I got here, and he was said to have been trying this entire time without success.

"Actually," He leaned in secretively, "I tried a few times too, never got anywhere though."

"What exactly is this pocket? If people can't get in, how do we know there's an Extreme King Pill in there?"

"They say that an image of the inner contents appears once in a while from the mirages that comes out. They also said that a beast tamer was the first to realize that within one of the mirages was an Extreme King Pill!"

"Is the pocket so strong that even Soul Kings can't get in?!"

"It's the opposite actually. The pocket's so weak that Soul Kings don't dare enter it. If anyone beyond the strength of a Soul Exalt enters, then the pocket will collapse. The collapsing of the pocket means the space in there will fold in on itself, and that's bad news for everyone in the pocket."

"I see...." Bai Yunfei nodded in understanding. He opened his mouth to say something, but then he froze up as if he had just

realizing something.

What he thought of was of when he was teleported from Black Cloud Valley and apported into that one area right before he was brought back out to Crushed Stone River....

He didn't find anything there, but that wasn't the important part. The important part was when he called out the permafrost mastiff. The entire area started to collapse in on itself when it came out, and that was when he was 'thrown' out.

"What is it?" Jing Mingfeng asked.

"Ah, it's nothing." Bai Yunfei shook his head. "So if Soul Kings can't go in and Soul Exalts can't open the pocket, what can be done then?"

Jing Mingfeng shrugged. "Don't know. But from what I know....there's a rule to this pocket. It's probably going to open by itself...."

"From what you know?" Bai Yunfei asked, "How do you know that then?"

A smile appeared on Jing Mingfeng's face, "Someone told me."

Bai Yunfei didn't bother to chase the question and changed the topic instead. "But....isn't this a little too ridiculous still? For people close to becoming Soul Kings like you and I, an Extreme King Pill might be tempting, but not so much like this. Why are there so many people from so many factions here? Even the Soul Kings wouldn't try this hard for the next generation to get an Extreme King Pill, or bring so many people with them, right?"

"I never said there's just one Extreme King Pill, did I....?" Jing Mingfeng chuckled.

"What?" Bai Yunfei turned his head back towards Jing Mingfeng, "How many are there then?"

"Hehehehe...." Jing Mingfeng laughed. This was a situation he



liked to be in.

“An entire furnace worth!!” He declared.

# Chapter 742: Determined to Participate

---

“Clunk!!”

Bai Yunfei's head snapped back in shock and knocked against the sturdy tree trunk he had been sitting against. Rubbing the spot on his head, Bai Yunfei stared incredulously at Jing Mingfeng, “How....how many?!”

A pleased as punch smile was still on Jing Mingfeng's face as he stared at Bai Yunfei. “An entire furnace worth of Extreme King Pills!”

“And....that is how many, exactly?” Bai Yunfei's lips twitched.

“No one really knows how much that is, but rumors say there's enough for a ‘vapor’ to come out from them. And judging from what we know of the Alchemy School....an entire furnace would mean over a dozen pills at the very least!!”

“Over a dozen....”

Bai Yunfei's eyes bulged outwards, his heart pounding at the number spoken. Bai Yunfei could feel his blood practically boiling at the revelation.

Over a dozen Extreme King Pills!!

What did this mean? It meant that there were enough pills to foster at least ten new Soul Kings!

Soul Kings! Soul cultivators strong enough to be the pillar of their community just by themselves!

Just having one Soul King was enough to propel any faction into the middling ranks of society. Having three Soul Kings made them in the upper-mid ranks. Having five meant being in the higher echelons and being the strongest in the area almost! And having a total of ten Soul Kings made the faction one of the best!

Needless to say, this was an event good enough to propel anyone

to the levels of any of the Ten Schools or Five Families.....

Of course, everyone aspired to be as strong as either of two groups. Not only did it mean to be strong by having Soul Kings, there was another factor to it....

And right now, the chance to earn at least ten Extreme King Pills was a bombshell of drop of information to have.

.....

Bai Yunfei was all the more shocked by this revelation. Over and over again, he muttered the words 'Extreme King Pill' almost despondently. In his minds, the beginnings of a plan was starting to form.

Knowing what he was thinking about, Jing Mingfeng decided not to interrupt him and sat back to smile to himself.

But his patience wore thin after some time. "Hey hey, what's up? Ol'Bai, what are you thinking about now?"

Bai Yunfei only nodded at him in silent response.

"Are you going to....fight for the Extreme King Pills?"

Bai Yunfei quirked a smile at him, "But of course!"

Jing Mingfeng's mention of the Extreme King Pills sparked a fire in Bai Yunfei ever since the first time he heard it, but the fact that it was just one pill hadn't tipped the scales yet. With so many strong people fighting for them and such, Bai Yunfei hadn't the interest in fighting them all for just one pill. But if there was at least ten of them, then that changed things. Bai Yunfei would have to reconsider a few things.

For Bai Yunfei who was stuck as a peak late-stage Soul Exalt, having an Extreme King Pill was extremely tempting. His rate of training was beyond ridiculous and faster than anyone else he knew, but that all ended here. To breakthrough and become a Soul King within the next ten years was impossible with normal

training, and it was more than likely he wouldn't have any improvement at all.

Crossing the threshold to become a Soul King was the desire for practically every soul cultivator, but there was no one that desire to be a Soul King more than Bai Yunfei did. He wanted to find out what heights could be reached as a Soul King. All the Soul King enemies he had as of late was taking a toll on his mind, and Bai Yunfei didn't want to throw his life on the line with every battle. If he could find a way to increase his strength fast, then Bai Yunfei would finally be able to fight the other Soul King as an equal!

Bai Yunfei had confidence in his strength, present or future. If he became a Soul King, any Early-stage Soul King or even Mid-stage Soul King would be no match for him! If he became a Soul King, he wouldn't feel bothered anymore with all those annoying enemies coming at him!

So now that a shortcut to becoming a Soul King was right in front of him, how could he not take it!

And there were at least ten of them! He wasn't a greedy man by any standard, so being able to have just one would be more than enough for him!

.....

Jing Mingfeng nodded in excitement with him. "Haha....I did say so before. How could anyone give up the chance? It's worth a try even if we don't succeed. And because of the limitations of the pocket, we don't even have to worry about any Soul Kings barging in on our fights. With us two working together, everyone else doesn't even stand a chance."

Bai Yunfei nodded in agreement. He really was feeling excited now. If all his opponents were just Soul Exalts, then Bai Yunfei was completely confident in himself.

Of course, he didn't think he had a chance of monopolizing the

Extreme King Pills either. Trying to do that would only sign his death warrant and the criticisms of everyone. A dead end so to speak.

“The three of us. I’ve a friend who should be here soon. The three of us can work together, that should be enough to guarantee our lives.”

The two of them had already been speaking for quite some time now. It was finally getting bright, and Bai Yunfei could sense Xiao Qi’s aura getting closer and closer to him. He had been planning on flying over to him, but he gave up on the idea of going back to the Underworld School to stay here instead. Xiao Qi and Long Lan wouldn’t be able to go into the pocket with him, but Zheng Kai could on the other hand.

“A friend? What kind of friend? Reliable, I hope?” Jing Mingfeng asked.

“He’s a friend for life.” Bai Yunfei nodded. “He’s the second son of the house of Zheng, Zheng Kai. A Late-stage Soul Exalt with a space affinity.”

“The house of Zheng from the Capital?!” Jing Mingfeng remarked, “Zheng Kai....the ‘Sex Lord’?!”

Seeing Bai Yunfei nod, Jing Mingfeng asked, “How did you meet him? Did you go to the Capital?”

Bai Yunfei nodded again. “You haven’t been traveling the continents for long, have you?”

“Eh? How’d you guess?” Jing Mingfeng asked. “I actually was shut away in the backwoods for three years. I only just started wandering out.”

That was what Bai Yunfei figured. Otherwise, Jing Mingfeng should’ve known what Bai Yunfei was up to. Him opening a crafting class in the Capital wasn’t by any means small news. Jing Mingfeng should’ve heard about it if he was actively traveling.

But. Jing Mingfeng closed in meditation for three whole years!? That was where Bai Yunfei felt surprised about.

“You really went into meditation for three whole years?!” Bai Yunfei cried out, “What caused you to live three years like that?”

“It’s a long story!” Jing Mingfeng sighed. “I wandered the continent a bit after we split ways in Mo City. I even went to one of the three danger zones, the Lost Swamps. I wasn’t able to get far in, but my luck wasn’t half bad. I found a few things here and there, and then...”

One by one, Jing Mingfeng told Bai Yunfei what he had experienced while the other man listened as if in a trance. Half the continent had practically been traveled by him, and all sorts of dangerous adventure was had by him. Battles with criminals, exploring dangerous and mysterious places, he had done them both. An epic of his journeys could practically be written with room to spare.

But he said no more than one brief sentence about whatever happened during and after those three years of meditation.

Jing Mingfeng took a swig of water from his bottle after his story. “Don’t let me take up all the talking, Ol’ Bai. Tell me about yourself. I remember hearing that you went to Soulbeast Forest and took part in the soulbeast wave before I closed myself off. Was that true? Did you really train for so long there? Why didn’t you contract with a soulbeast yet?”

“Haha, I did contract with one, he’s just not with me right now. But he’s coming now with that friend of mine, they’ll be here soon.”

“Oh?” That got Jing Mingfeng’s attention. “What kind of soulbeast did you contract with? The best of the best can be had there in Soulbeast Forest, it has to be special, right?”

“Haha....” A chuckle escaped from Bai Yunfei’s lips. “In all

seriousness, Xiao Qi is definitely quite ‘special’....”

Bai Yunfei wasn’t in much of a hurry for Xiao Qi and the others to get here. In any case, talking to Jing Mingfeng about their journeys was a nice way to pass the time. They could also talk a little bit about Crushed Stone River, and like that, the two found themselves passing more than enough time....

“Boom!!”

An explosion from the north interrupted the two as they talked, cutting them off from any further conversation.

Bai Yunfei glanced over to the direction of the explosion, “Did something happen?”

Jing Mingfeng’s eyes were especially bright when he looked over at the source. Watching enthusiastically as people started to gather there, he said, “Hehe, someone couldn’t handle it any longer? Let’s go take a look! Come on!”

# Chapter 743: Gathering of Prodigies

---

Everyone was here exclusively for the Extreme King Pills. Jing Mingfeng estimated that already ten families of major importance were already gathered here. None of the families were getting along unfavorably with another it seemed, but that wasn't the case for the schools that were here. The schools were eyeing each other with a mean glare and kept to themselves. They were all competitors for the Extreme King Pills, so it wasn't strange for the schools to have such an unfriendly and competitive air to them.

It also wasn't strange that confrontations would break out, but those were generally silenced and put under control before an actual fight could. If not for the objective here today, everyone would've devolved into fighting a long time ago.

Together with Jing Mingfeng, Bai Yunfei flew down the road near Crushed Stone River. It didn't take long for them to reach a small mountain where the river seemed to flow into, and at the top of the mountain were two sparks of red and gold as the figures within the sparks fought one another.

Bai Yunfei and Jing Mingfeng came to a stop a good kilometer away from the battlefield to watch. When he saw just who were fighting, Jing Mingfeng quirked his lips in dissatisfaction, "Pft, it's just two Soul Exalts. And here I thought we'd be able to see a Soul King fight!"

The fighters were Soul Exalts like Jing Mingfeng said. The fire-type one was a Late-stage Soul Exalt, and the metal-type soul cultivator was a Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt. Their fight was loud and vigorous, but neither were aiming to kill. They were fighting, as it would seem, to just see who would be the victor and who would be the loser.

About a hundred meters away on both sides stood even more people. They were sprinkled about with some standing together in



groups and others standing by themselves to watch the fight take place.

“Do you know the two?” Bai Yunfei asked as they watched the spectacle.

“I do.” Jing Mingfeng nodded. “I’ve been here a while so I know a good bit about the people here already. The fire-type guy is from the Hengyang School and the metal-type one is from the Huayue School. Both schools are from the Southward River Province and are considerably strong—they both have three Soul Kings. I saw both schools bring one Soul King and three of their Soul Exalts when I came and they didn’t look very happy with one another. I had a feeling they’d fight each other sooner or later.”

Bai Yunfei glanced over to Jing Mingfeng. His notes on the people already gathered here was a little more detailed than he thought. Not bad. As someone once said, ‘if you know yourself and know your enemy, you need not fear the result of a hundred battles’. Knowledge was a great boon to have in a competition like this.

His eyes swept around the entire vicinity to look at each spectator. “Do you know how many people there are here then?”

“From my count up to yesterday, at least eighteen factions have gathered here. Most of them are watching this fight”

Jing Mingfeng pointed to a group of five standing on a mountain far to the right of the fight. “The ones there are from the Flying Snow School, the strongest school in the Southward River Province. They specialize mainly in elemental ice. That white-haired guy over there is Bai Han, someone who became a Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt three years ago. He’s known as the number one prodigy in his province. The old guy behind him is one of his school’s elders, a Mid-stage Soul King.”

Bai Yunfei followed his gaze to look at the young man named Bai Han. Sure enough, the guy had white hair to match his white robes

and trousers as if he was some sort of person made from snow. His face was clear and smooth, his body tall and straight, and both hands clasped behind his back. He watched the battle in front of him with a look of disdain on his face—the sight of which made Bai Yunfei frown.

Bai Han was decked completely in white, including his hair. Bai Yunfei shared the exact same surname as he did, but his hair was a completely natural color of black....

TL Note: Both Bai Han and Bai Yunfei share the same surname of 白, which means White.

Jing Mingfeng's finger moved away from the Flying Snow School to several hundred meters away. "Those are from the house of Ji in Rang City, one of the top-ranking factions in the Southward River Province. The two young ones are the heirs to the house of Ji, Ji Wushang and Ji Wubing. They're twins, as you can see, and both are fire-type Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt. Rumors has it that they both have an extremely strong unison soul attack that can beat anyone in their level of strength. The old man behind them is the head of the Ji, a Late-stage Soul King."

Again, Bai Yunfei followed to where Jing Mingfeng was pointing at to the three people standing in the skies. The two younger looking men were identical looking in appearance. Both were rather frail, had long hair, and eyes that had a piercing glance. They didn't look at all like morally upright citizens.

From there, Jing Mingfeng pointed at the third group of people. "They're from the Fire School. That's the second elder, and those three are the strongest students they have. See there....that Zhong Liyan, remember him? We met him five years ago at the auction house with the Tang, he's the guy who bought a dragonfruit. I heard he became a Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt after he ate it. As expected from the top ten schools, the students there defy all logic...."

This time, Bai Yunfei stared at Jing Mingfeng. “Aren’t you the same?”

He looked away back to the young man standing there. It really was Zhong Liyan.

Right as he was considering if he should head over and pay his respects, Jing Mingfeng started onto the next round of introductions. “Over there is the Wood School. They’re basically the same. One Soul King bringing along three young students.”

“Senior You?!” Bai Yunfei’s eyes widened, snapping his head towards the people Jing Mingfeng pointed at.

“Eh? You know them?” Jing Mingfeng asked.

Bai Yunfei pointed at the thirty-something year old man wearing green robes off in the distance, “That’s senior You Qingfeng of the Wood School. I know him.”

“You Qingfeng?” Zheng Kai squinted. “Oh, so he’s a friend of yours? He’s considered a very outstanding student from what I heard, despite his age. A Late-stage Soul Exalt, but he’s not as strong as the other one with him, Lin Zihao.

“Hey hold on....why do you call You Qingfeng ‘senior’?” Jing Mingfeng suddenly asked. “As strong as he might be, but in terms of hierarchy, you’re a lot higher than he is!

“Actually, no one should even compare to you in hierarchy. Your master is senior Zi Jin, you’re on a level of hierarchy far beyond the newest generation of soul cultivators.....” Jing Mingfeng shook his head.

Bai Yunfei chuckled. “Let’s not....talk about hierarchy when I’m outside the school. It’s only fine when I’m in the Crafting School.

“I came to know senior You a little after I started my journey as a soul cultivator. He helped me a long time ago, I never expected to see him here today....”

Bai Yunfei sighed with nostalgia.

He decided then that he'd go meet with You Qingfeng later, it'd be inexcusable otherwise. He heard from Zhao Xiluo say before that his sworn sister Chu Yuhe was taken by You Qingfeng off to the Wood School a long time ago, but it had been a very long time since then. Bai Yunfei wondered just how well the little girl had grown.

Ah. With how long it had been, perhaps calling her a little girl wouldn't be wise....

Memories of the times he last saw You Qingfeng sprung into Bai Yunfei's mind, causing him to feel a little happy over those memories.

By the side, Jing Mingfeng was still giving introductions. "Right besides the Wood School is the the Metal School. The one up front is the strongest student they have, Li Haodong. He's a Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt."

"Of the Five Elemental Schools, they're the first three to come. The Water and the Earth School have yet to arrive, but it won't be long now...."

Jing Mingfeng's finger drifted slightly farther away towards a group of two. "Those two are from one of the Five Families, the House of Wang. The younger one is the sole heir of the Wang, Wang Kunpeng and ranks third on the continent's list of prodigies. He's twenty-eight right now, but he became a Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt five years ago. People say he's about three to five years away from becoming a Soul King and probably doesn't need the Extreme King Pill. The one behind him is his dad, the head of the Wang and Late-stage Soul King."

Jing Mingfeng watched as the shocked settled in on Bai Yunfei's face.

A twenty-three year old becoming a Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt?!

That wasn't something the word 'genius' could describe. A 'freak' would probably be a better name, wouldn't it? Though he couldn't sense it accurately, Bai Yunfei could see that the aura of this person was anything but normal. Bai Yunfei didn't even want to look at him for too long just in case there was a misunderstanding and averted his eyes away to look elsewhere.

“Over there is the Wind and Lightning School. That's their strongest student, Lu Chenhong, he's mastered his schools arts I heard....

“And then over there is another one of the Five Families, the house of Li from the Westward River Province. The one on the left is the young heir, Li Yuchun, a Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt with an affinity for space....

Then we've the the Returning Sword School from the Blue Mist Province. They're said to be second-to-none to the Ten Schools and all their students learn the art of the sword with a pure offensive style to it. That young man in purple is the junior headmaster, Liu Zhe....

“Over there is the house of Yue from the Common Ridge Province....

“That's the Pure Melody School....

“And that's....”

# Chapter 744: A Completely Unexpected Development

---

With each person Jing Mingfeng pointed out to Bai Yunfei to introduce, he was not only able to tell him who each person was, but also each of their major accomplishments. Bai Yunfei was alarmed with just how knowledgeable Jing Mingfeng was and just a little filled with admiration at his thorough intelligence report.

Neither of the two were even really paying attention to the battle. With Jing Mingfeng introducing each person and Bai Yunfei listening, the two people fighting each other was completely forgotten about.

“....And that should be it. Not everyone is here, of course, but the major players are nearly all accounted for. I remember there was a wandering soul cultivator of some kind, but I don’t see him. He’s probably not interested in this fight.”

Jing Mingfeng finished off his introductions with just one final note to remember.

He did talk about the few people who didn’t show up to watch the fight, but they were given only a simple introduction. Eighteen factions were already gathered here, and aside from three of the second-rate groups that didn’t have any Soul Kings, every single faction had at least one Soul King with them. Most of the groups were primarily composed of having one Soul King and three or four Late-stage Soul Exalts.

When Bai Yunfei looked at each person there, he had the feeling that using the word ‘prodigy’ felt a little stale to use now. With everyone being able to be described as being a ‘prodigy’, the word had lost all its meaning almost. Everyone here was either a Late-stage Soul Exalt or Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt, some became one earlier than others, and some later. But whatever the case, they were all of the same level of strength as one another for now and

perhaps in the foreseeable future.

The Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt level marked the blockade in a soul cultivator's life. From there on out, it was remarkably hard for people to advance. Some could be ten years earlier than another before they finally were able to breakthrough and become a Soul King.

That was why the Extreme King Pill was such a priceless treasure and why so many people were willing to fight each other for one. If any one faction could borrow this chance to have their next generation become Soul Kings, it'd serve their faction a great deal of power and allow them to beat the other families.

The prize was tempting for all parties equally, so they came together, and it only made sense for some parties to agree to work together. Countless competitions had been started over the past thousand years, and the world of soul cultivators had always a certain 'rule' of sorts where they banded together. If any one faction tried to monopolize the prize for themselves, they were always certain to face a unified opposition force. To continue and try fighting the entire competition for the prize would only mean their sole destruction. No faction would dare fight off everyone else by themselves, so they formed 'agreements' with other factions for the best resolution.

Each group bringing about four Soul Exalts for the Extreme King Pills was about just enough for them. They were here to get the Extreme King Pills for themselves to use. They didn't care to fight for the Extreme King Pills and then give the others any of the remainders (though they'd love to gain a surplus if there was). What everyone was aiming for was getting just enough for their own party to benefit from. They didn't care what happened to the rest as long as they got what they came for. If the other factions fought and killed each other to tatters for the remainder, then they'd watch from the sidelines and laugh.

It wasn't as if they didn't want to monopolize all of the Extreme

King Pills, they would if they could, but it was an impossibility. It would've been a different story had the Beast Taming School not had the matter leaked, but it was a moot point now that everyone knew about it. Should any one faction try to act on their 'greedy' desires, then the other factions would rise up against them. No matter which one of the Ten Schools or Five Families they are, none of them would be able to handle the entire continent's soul cultivators.

.....

"Che, slugging at one another one punch after another, are they trying to see whose skin is thicker? It's not entertaining if they're not trying to kill each other...."

Jing Mingfeng complained whilst Bai Yunfei was thinking about the matter with the Extreme King Pills. He was still looking at the battle in front of him with a look of boredom.

As mentioned before, neither of the two combatants were trying to kill one another in hopes of trying to save up their strengths for the competition that laid ahead. Though they were fighting with a rather intense aura glowing from them, the ensuing blows coming from both Soul Exalts were less than impressive. They fought in the air, but without the usual intensity that came with blows enhanced with soulforce, their battle may as well be one between regular fighters using their arms and legs to fight. Two Late-stage Soul Exalt fighting like so was laughable and thereby justified for Jing Mingfeng to be so full of complaint over it.

Jing Mingfeng wasn't the only one to complain. Everyone else who was looking at the battle was also looking on with contemptuous expressions. Some were even heading back to their original spots.

"Forget it, let's go. Ol'Bai, you can tell me what you did in the Capital."

No longer interested in the battle, Jing Mingfeng turned around



to scoff and talk with Bai Yunfei.

Bai Yunfei shook his head though. “Hold on, I want to go visit some acquaintances first.”

“Oh, you talking about that You Qingfeng?”

“Yeah, since he’s here, it’d be rude of me if I didn’t go pay him a visit. There’s also Zhong Liyan, why don’t we go together?”

“Forget it. I don’t like talking with strangers. I’ll just wait here for you, come back when you’re done.”

“Fine by me. I’ll be back in a bit.”

Waving his hand, Bai Yunfei prepared himself to head for the right and meet up with You Qingfeng.

But at that moment, a new development started to take place in the battle ahead....

“You can shut up now!!”

There was a short roar from the metal-type soul cultivator, as if he was angered by something the other person said. Soulfence blared out from his body and enveloped his right hand with a shining golden light. With a mighty roar, he lashed out and slammed his right fist down onto the fire-type soul cultivator’s chest!

There hadn’t been any time for the fire-type soul cultivator to react. The fist slammed successfully onto his chest and sent him flying down like a meteorite!

Since no one had really been paying attention to the battle, this sudden development came to them as a surprise. Those who were already planning to leave were now looking back at the fight. But the aftermath of that one blow was what really caught the eyes of everyone, including the Soul Kings!

When the fire-type Soul Exalt was sent flying down to the ground, he did so with blood coming out from his mouth.

But....just about fifty meters after impact, something behind his back began to change.....

The direction in which the fire-type soul cultivator was flying towards wasn't either one of the places where their comrades were. Instead, the fire-type soul cultivator was flying towards an empty area near the mountain. Now in the airspace around it, the soul cultivator was expected to stabilize and orientate himself, but neither of the two things happened....

When his body came into contact with the space fifty meters away from where he used to be....it looked as if he crashed into a transparent but liquid-like wall. The soul cultivator's body descent was slowed down a bit, but then he went straight through into it!

There had been pain on the fire-type soul cultivator's face when he touched upon the wall. About to turn his head and see what was going on, his entire person disappeared from sight!

It was like a stone dropping into a body of water. As soon as he disappeared, the air around the mountain started to show several ripples....

# Chapter 745: Opening of the Pocket and the Appearance of the Extreme King Pills!

---

“.....”

Everyone watched as the fire-type soul cultivator disappeared beyond the airspace of the mountain with shock.

A brief moment went by without anyone saying a thing. Not even the Soul Kings were commenting on the situation. Everyone was far too shocked to do so as they looked at one another with rising joy.

There was a blur as a Soul King from the nearby group of the Hengyang School appeared in front of the area. Reaching a hand out, the Soul King touched at the ripples in front of him with a finger.

Everyone's eyes were on this Soul King, watching as he in turn looked at his right hand as if wanting to know what he was doing.

Everyone was waiting. Watching. Thinking about what would happen when this Soul King's hand would touch onto the ripples!

There was a flash of light from the Soul King's eyes before he decided to try and step into it!

A wave of change flowed across the Soul King's expression the moment his foot drew across. So furious that several nearby people could feel his killing intent, the Soul King unleashed an aura that dropped the temperature of the surrounding area by several degrees. Some of the other Soul Kings who were prepared to move in as well ceased their movements to watch as his foot slowly drew back down to its original spot.

Everyone then watched as the elder slowly drew back from the invisible 'door in front of him and retreat as if he had been shocked!

A series of ripples reverberated through the air at the same time he moved back, trembling as if reacting badly to something.

Realizing what this meant, every single Soul King blanched and shot the Soul King from the Hengyang School a displeased warning glare.

Having felt a little unwell already from what he had just done, the Soul King frowned when he felt the gazes of everyone else. He knew that what he did had earned him the ire of everyone there, but as only an Early-stage Soul King, he hadn't the right to be so 'brash' in front of them all. As if trying to make up for his loss of composure and foolish action, he drew back away from the area. "Everybody! This old man has verified that the entrance to the pocket has...already been opened!"

"Bzzzz....."

Everyone was sent into a flurry at what he said. All of the Soul Exalts there gave surprised looks at one another and then at the rippling area in front of them. Chatting to one another, they all looked excited for what that meant.

"Haha!! At last the pocket's open! Move aside, I'm going to be the one to go in first!!"

A loud voice cried out from a group from the left. A single person came shooting out then to fly straight for the mountain where the pocket was.

It was Lin Dongxiao from the Beast Taming School!

Everyone looked a little pensive when someone from the Beast Taming School came. While it wasn't accurate to say they were afraid of them, most of the people there were still slightly peevish at the idea of going against the powerhouse that was their school. Several of the prodigies stayed behind with their group to allow Lin Dongxiao to go in first, and even those from the Ten Schools stayed behind, but only due to their less competitive streak and

silent agreement with one another to see what would happen. Wang Kunpeng and Li Yuchun from the Wang and Li both just gave Lin Dongxiao a sneer when he passed by.

The elder from the Beast Taming School didn't seem to look inclined in stopping Lin Dongxiao from acting as arrogant as he was. He merely just stared at the entrance of the pocket with a faint trembling of the lip as if speaking to his other students about something.

Soon, the other groups started to set out. Lin Dongxiao was at the front of the group with his three other students to head into the pocket.

“Haha! I'll be going in first!”

Laughing merrily, Lin Dongxiao and his three fellow beast tamers disappeared from sight while the elder from the Beast Taming School came to a stop half a kilometer away from the pocket to stare at it.

Now that the students from the Beast Taming School was gone, everyone was now free to do as they pleased. The nearest group—the Hengyang School—took the initiative to have their two students go charging in after getting the approval from their elder.

“Bzz....”

But before they could go in, yet another development happened and caused everyone to look on in shock!

As if something had prompted its activation, the surrounding hundred meters of the pocket started to show a series of rippling waves!

It was as if the entire pocket was starting to grow agitated by something. The space inside the pocket was twisting in on itself and misting over as if being blocked by a fog of some kind. The scenery was starting to look nearly like a mirage with how unreal it looked, but everyone could still see a scenery of some kind!

A mountain, a forest, and some sort of river of water with crushed stones all around it were mixing together to form one whole piece of scenery. No one knew what was going on, but there was something about this scenery that immediately caught the attention of everyone there....

Within the foggy and illusion-like scenery and just five hundred meters above the mountain, there was a small grove of stone forests. In one of the stone trees was a single large furnace!

This furnace looked especially old and red in color. It had a dark glow to its surface and looked a little ordinary even. At a glance, this looked just like any other furnace or stove with several decorative markings running all over it. No one knew if it was just the distortion in the air or not, but a few 'wisps' of something was rising out from the furnace.

An indescribable 'smell' started to disseminate through the air, penetrating the seemingly illusionary scenery right in front of everyone's eyes. From the smell, everyone could immediately sense a fantastical 'aroma'....

The moment when the furnace appeared, everyone could instantaneously place their finger onto what this 'aroma' was. The eyes of all the Soul Kings were all shining bright with shock and joy, and the elder of the Beast Taming School couldn't help but exclaim out loud, "The Extreme King Pill!"

This was....the Extreme King Pill!

Aside from the Beast Taming School, no one else had really seen what this 'furnace' full of Extreme King Pills meant. Most of the factions there didn't even believe in the rumors of how many there were, but now that they were greeted with this sight, every single Soul King were already telling their Soul Exalts to head into the pocket to fight for the Extreme King Pills.

The illusionary landscaped started to change shape a second later. Everyone looked at it again, curious on what it would show

next.

There was a single person running quickly through the area. A closer look would reveal this person to be Lin Dongxiao!

He was by himself. Though he had gone into the pocket with three others, none of the three were to be seen at this moment.

But the most important thing was that he was running in the complete opposite direction of the Extreme King Pills' location!

Everyone had a strange look on their faces at that, though most of them were quite pleased to see it. The elder of the Beast Taming School on the other hand, looked as though he had swallowed something rotten....

“The pocket has opened, this must be showing what’s going on inside the pocket being shown over the fabric of reality outside of it! We should be able to see what’s going on for now, but who knows for how much longer? Peng’er, hurry on in and remember where the Extreme King Pills’ are located! And be sure to be careful, don’t let your greed overshadow everything else!”

The head of the Wang was already instructing his son on how to deal with this situation.

Wang Kunpeng’s eyes flashed with readiness. “Worry not father, I know what to do!”

And with that, he charged off into the pocket.

Several other soul cultivators were already running off towards the pocket with him.

“There’s another entrance over there!”

A person cried out from the other side. Looking over towards the source, they saw another ripple from when two people entered into the pocket from another side.

The pocket had more than one entrance!

Soon after, everyone was looking for the closest entrance to

them. There was no hesitation behind everyone's actions. Those who were previously hidden were now flying out from their hiding spots to charge for the closest entrance to them.

In a matter of moments, only just a few ten people were left. Every single Soul Exalt was gone from the area, leaving behind the Soul Kings that were there to accompany them and stand guard on the outside.

.....

“The pocket's open! Ol'Bai, let's hurry on in!”

The illusion created by the pocket had covered almost the entirety of Crushed Stone River. Bai Yunfei and Jing Mingfeng had both been standing at their original place when they saw multiple disappearing into the pocket. A little panicked now, Jing Mingfeng slapped Bai Yunfei on the shoulder as a way to urge his friend into motion.

Wrinkling his eyebrows, Bai Yunfei turned his head. Xiao Qi and the others weren't here yet.....

“There's no time to wait for your friend, it's going to be too late if we do! Crap!! The illusion's already starting to disappear! Does that mean the entrance will close up too?! Ol'Bai, we have to go!!”

Bai Yunfei's head snapped back to the pocket at Jing Mingfeng's words. True to his word, Bai Yunfei could see the illusion start to fade into obscurity!

If it was true that the complete disappearance of the illusion meant the entrance would disappear, then that meant the chance to get the Extreme King Pills would be gone as well!

“Tch, let's go!!”

With no time to lose, Bai Yunfei gave up on the idea of waiting to charge with Jing Mingfeng towards the pocket entrance.

The entrance closest to them was the one that first opened up.



Running quickly, they were able to give one last glance behind them before both entering beyond the ripples denoting the boundary of the pocket.

Not long after they headed in, the illusion that had been reflecting over the surface of the barrier disappeared, returning the scenery within the pocket back to normal.

But after the illusion disappeared, all of the entrances to the pocket was still rippling slightly, meaning they were still open....

# Chapter 746: Entering the Pocket and a Very Strange Restriction

---

Even though the illusion was gone, the entrances to the pockets were still there. All of the Soul Kings standing there looked a little surprised at that, some of them even wrinkling their eyebrows at the sight.

“What a strange pocket this is. Does this mean the entrance will last for a longer time? A pocket that only opens after a set amount of time like this one shouldn’t behave like this....”

The one who spoke was the red-robed elder representative from the Fire School. His aura was blazing wildly so that he looked like a human fireball with his aura intimidating the others. His eyes were glued to the entrances of the pocket as he muttered to himself.

“How truly strange. I’ve never seen a pocket have this many entrances either. It’s almost as if the pocket meant to have multiple people enter it....” The green-robed elder from the Wood School muttered in confusion next to him.

“Who knows how many years this pocket laid undetected.” The elder from the Metal School spoke up. “It’s not implausible to say the Extreme King Pills have been resting here for a thousand years. With how ridiculous the rules of this pocket is, I wonder just what kind of precursor created this pocket. I’d have to wager that someone as strong as a Mid-stage Soul Emperor would have to be responsible for this. Is this the place where he died then? If he’s dead, then...”

He didn’t finish talking, but the other two elders with him knew what he meant.

If there really was the body of a deceased Soul Emperor in there, then the Extreme King Pills would only be the tip of the iceberg in

terms of treasure....

It was a guess no one really had the answer to though. If this pocket really did belong to a Soul Emperor, then how could anyone be so easily allowed in? Besides, no Soul King was even able to enter the pocket, so that made this theory a little less plausible.

The elder from the Wood School sighed. "It's useless guessing about anything with these restrictions in place. We can't even go in, so we can only hope one of our youngsters will be able to get the prize...."

The other two nodded. "Now that the pocket is open, we shouldn't have to dwell about these things. But the longer we wait, the more annoying this will become. Those factions who haven't yet arrived will soon be here, and that only means more competitors for the Extreme King Pills. There aren't enough pills for everyone, so a battle will surely break out. Once it does, the safety of our younger ones will be hard to guarantee...."

The elder from the Metal School nodded in agreement. "I agree, but nothing can be done about it. It's not as if we can't stop the others from going into the pocket, can we?"

His question was more of a joke than a question. Combined, the three of them might be able to push back one or two factions without trouble, but that would be an egregious act, one that would paint them out to be immoral characters. Neither would they care to do such a thing anyways.

.....

Aside from those three, the other Soul Kings were gathered in either groups of three, two, or by themselves. They couldn't enter the pocket or know what was going on, so the only thing they could do was wait outside.

The Soul King from the Hengyang School stood alone next to a tree, his eyes shining with a calculative light. Of all the Soul Kings,

he was the one most unnerved by the current situation.

No one knew what had happened really when he touched the pocket and tried to gain entry, and the events that transpired in that moment brought not small amount of vexation to the Soul King.

He withdrew from the barrier almost instantly when he tried to enter, everyone saw that. It wasn't because of the pocket starting to show signs of instability that he did it though....

In reality, the reason why he left so quickly was because of the repelling force from within!

It was as if the pocket was actively trying to force him out!

He even felt something like the aura of a person furious at him before he was 'pushed' out!

"Impossible.....all investigations indicated that this pocket was sealed for a thousand years, how can this be...."

A guess was already formulating in his mind. This guess was a chilling one and his eyes reflected his sentiments with a look of dread and terror.

"I have to be wrong. Those people stronger than me can be found anywhere. The Beast Taming School came into this pocket earlier and felt nothing, I have to be wrong...."

The 'outside world' was looking calm, but what about inside the pocket where every single prodigy was?

.....

Bai Yunfei felt stifled the moment he crossed over into the barrier. It wasn't too different than the feeling he got after he crossed the barrier that protected the Underworld School, but this one was far more noticeable in its effects. Everything was a pure white light in front of him, and it felt like all five of his senses, six including his soulsense, had shorted out. But they came back to

him after a moment.

“Clack....”

Hearing the sound of something solid beneath his feet, Bai Yunfei looked down to see a boulder about the size of a dinner table. He had entered the pocket through the air, but somehow, he was now standing at the ground level almost.

The very first thing Bai Yunfei did afterwards was call out his Cataclysmic Seal and adopt a defensive position to scan the vicinity.

Wind blew through the area, blowing parts of his uncut bangs over his eyes.

All was clear.

Verifying that there was no danger around, Bai Yunfei let out a sigh of relief and looked ahead to the mountain in front of him. “Mingfeng, why do I feel like this pla—”

Already turning to Jing Mingfeng as he spoke, Bai Yunfei came to an abrupt stop when he realized something.

He was alone.

Jing Mingfeng had entered with him through the pocket, but now he was nowhere to be found!

He got over the shock soon enough to think about what might’ve happened. “The entrance....how strange. It splits us apart even if we enter through the same entrance at the same time. Is....is that why Lin Dongxiao was all by himself....?”

He was one of the people that saw Lin Dongxiao running by himself earlier and thought it was strange to see since he had entered with three other people. But now he knew the reason. He didn’t know why exactly, but the pocket was forcibly separating everyone so they would have to be by themselves.

“But....what’s the point of splitting everyone up? There’s no one

within a kilometer of each other.....what is this pocket trying to do?”

Bai Yunfei looked up to the skies. It was a blue sky with a few white clouds, but he didn't see the sun here. This was very clearly not the real sky and just a 'fake' rendition of it from within the pocket. Staring at it for two seconds longer, Bai Yunfei took off into the skies to check the ground from there.

But after he leapt, Bai Yunfei nearly stumbled back face-first into the ground—he wasn't able to Skywalk into the sky!

Skywalking meant the formation of elemental energy to act as a temporary platform for the feet to either kick off or stand upon. By Skywalking, Soul Exalts could ascend into the sky!

Steadying himself so he didn't fall, Bai Yunfei's eyes were wide open now. “What's going on now?!”

He raised his right hand and circulated his soulforce to it. There was a bang as a fireball appeared in his hand. No problems there.

Bai Yunfei vanished the fireball and scratched his head.

He tried to leap into the skies again.

It was a fruitless endeavor that resulted in the exact same result as his first attempt. He flew a good few dozen meters into the air before his legs tried to kick off against the sky again—only to fall back down.

Elemental fire had indeed formed underneath his feet, but it hadn't condensed to form solid enough ground for him to leap on. For all good this was, it meant his feet were basically just burning elemental fire.

“We can't Skywalk in here then?!” Bai Yunfei concluded after his second attempt. “There's even a 'restriction' like that?!”

This situation was something Bai Yunfei knew to be special to pockets in general. ‘Restrictions’!

A spatial pocket in the simplest sense of the word is a separated bubble of space that exists outside normal space. The most basic ones came in the form of space-type soul armaments and could only store dead objects inside its otherwise small area. More advanced pockets of space had generally very few differences between them and reality and allowed people to go into them. Strong enough factions had one or two of such pockets to store their more peculiar things in there.

There were also very special types of pockets a few of the even stronger soul cultivators had where they could stay and train in without disturbance. These pockets are bigger than their weaker counterparts and would normally replicate the outside landscape such as the mountains, trees, and water. In a way, the pocket ‘copied’ what was outside into the inside so as to make it very hard to discover. These types of pockets would not allow entry from anyone else without the master of it saying otherwise.

And lastly, there were a few very special pockets that had its own ‘rules’. ‘Restrictions’ that it could impose, such as not being able to burn anything inside, having a stronger force of gravity than outside, etc. But of course, these types of pockets were extremely rare.

And if Bai Yunfei’s guess was right, then this pocket he was in was very much one of those very rare pockets!

He couldn’t Skywalk in here!

Bai Yunfei hadn’t the strength to unravel or even explain the restriction in this place. Giving up on trying to experiment with it, he looked around the place to see if there was anything else.

To come across such an annoying problem right off the bat was a bit vexing, and it made Bai Yunfei worried on what other problems he’d run into in here....

# Chapter 747: The Massacre Has Already Begun!

---

The next thing Bai Yunfei attempted to do was use his Tempest Sword, only to find out even flying soul armaments were unable to be used. Aside from his shock, some begrudging respect was to be had as well. With no way to fly through the skies, Bai Yunfei could only try the last remaining option to simply run up towards the mountain.

He could vaguely remember the outline of the landscape where the Extreme King Pills were. With that in mind, he plotted his course and ran accordingly in that direction.

Bai Yunfei took in the sights around him as he ran towards the strange mountain. All sorts of smaller peaks were adorning the place along with trees and grass. There were even a few insects, flies, and small rodents hiding throughout the landscape and near the rivers. In the river, a few fish were swimming lazily through it. If not for the restriction on not being able to fly, this place would've looked just like an ordinary rural countryside place.

Halfway up the mountain, Bai Yunfei was scaling the place like a graceful monkey. Leaping from foothold to foothold, he made it to a small flat area of the mountain before scaling another very tall tree. As soon as he reached the canopus, he stuck his head out to look around.

Aside from the mountains within his line of sight, this height and area should allow Bai Yunfei a great vantage point to take in the sights of everything.

But it was with disappointment that Bai Yunfei looked away. He couldn't see a thing. The mist around the area he was in was blocking almost half his sight, and the other mountains nearby had the same fate to them. He couldn't see anything that might've looked interesting or even anyone. The other mountains were all



relatively far away too despite how close they might look, and his soulsense was unable to stretch that far.

But if there was one thing Bai Yunfei could confirm, it was that this pocket was even larger than he imagined, stretching beyond the horizon with its size.

Looking closely in hopes of finding something, Bai Yunfei's eyes perked with light when something did pop up. Hopeful, he leapt off the tree and began to run down towards the right.

He saw several people over there!

They weren't Jing Mingfeng, but it was without a doubt one of the other prodigies that entered the pocket. In situations such like this where there were too many unknowns, it was best to travel with a group of people. It wasn't a half-bad choice to make in this type of competition, since the issue of the Extreme King Pill could be put aside until afterwards.

Even though he did see somewhere there, Bai Yunfei had no desire to want to call out 'hello there' or 'hold up'! He hid his aura instead and made sure to get closer to them without them noticing he was there or calling out to them.

Since he couldn't Skywalk and had to run with relative stealth, it took a while before Bai Yunfei was able to reach the area where he saw the others. They were already gone by then, but Bai Yunfei could see the footprints of their group that seemed to lead to behind another mountain.

"Boom!!"

As Bai Yunfei was studying the footprints to see where it was going, he heard an explosion just several hundred meters around the mountain.

"Someone's fighting?!"

Bai Yunfei's heart skipped a beat with curiosity and surprise, but he suppressed the desire to send his soulsense out to see what was

going on. Instead, he inched forwards slowly without leaking his soulforce.

Bai Yunfei came to a clearing several minutes later with a tuft of grass and trees bordering the right side. Over there, several trees had fallen over and the ground nearby was cratered like cheese. There were even a few burn marks—this was clearly the signs of a battle.

But the most important part was that a person was laying on a part of the scorched earth! Or to be even more specific, the corpse was!

Bai Yunfei's eyes focused in on the corpse. This body was already burnt so heavily that the robes and hair were all burnt away, but it was still identifiable as being a male.

“Someone's already killing the others, how excessive....”

A secondary sweeping of the area revealed that this corpse was missing its space rings, meaning that someone had already taken it. Bai Yunfei sighed, but he understood why.

Everyone that was in this pocket right now were all contenders for the Extreme King Pill. A furnace filled with Extreme King Pills didn't mean everyone here would be able to get one. Many of the factions here probably wouldn't be in the 'sharing' mood either. So the simple solution was to fight. Fight and kill for the prize.

Bai Yunfei could understand that much, and he did anticipate such a thing would happen. He just never thought that it would happen right off the bat.

Needless to say, this person was killed by someone else with great vigor. Then after killing this person, the one responsible ran away.

Or actually....the person was in hiding....

“Whoosh!!”

The sound of rapidly displaced air came whistling from behind

Bai Yunfei's head. Swinging his right arm nonchalantly, he smacked a relatively long black needle down to the ground with his bracer.

There was a flash of red light as a fiery longsword suddenly flew through the air to pierce Bai Yunfei's forehead!

The 'suddenness' of this person's attack didn't bring any type of panic from Bai Yunfei. Without even resting his arm when he knocked the needle away, Bai Yunfei flexed his five fingers and brought it forward. The tip of the blade struck the palm of his hand, but rather than stab into it, the blade started to bend!

A moment afterwards, a person flew out from behind the trees to stand ten meters away from Bai Yunfei.

Not even bothering to give chase, Bai Yunfei dropped his arm to look at the surprised youth. "Was this person....killed by you?"

.....

At the same time in a forest in another part of the spatial pocket.

"Lin Dongxiao! Don't get too ahead of yourself! Everyone's here for the Extreme King Pills and fighting fair and square, doing this is far too much!"

A young man wearing white robes was sitting on the ground, his right arm clutching at his bleeding left shoulder. In front of him was a giant black bear and a golden horned tiger at his left and right. This speaker was speaking with a quivering voice, and his eyes were filled with dread when he looked at the two soulbeasts in front of him. Still, he managed to find enough anger in him to howl at the figure sitting on top of a tree branch a hundred meters away.

The one sitting there was Lin Dongxiao of the Beast Taming School. Cracking a smile at the predicament of the other person, Lin Dongxiao said, "Haha...but of course. This 'fight' you're talking about, doesn't it mean exactly that? It's going to happen

sooner or later, so why not start it now? You're from a two-bit school, coming to an event like this should've told you that you're only heading towards your death....”

“What?!” The young man's face paled even more. “What...what are you going to do?! I admit I'm not stronger than you, and I can't even look for the Extreme King Pills anymore. Don't you da—agh!!”

Before he could even finish speaking, the black bear in front of him struck out with a furious paw onto his body!

He went flying in a spray of blood and gore!

On top of the tree, Lin Dongxiao touched gently at the space ring he was holding. “What a group of idiots. Do they really think this is a ‘friendly’ competition? In a place where no Soul King can enter, it's a paradise for killing. What naive idiots, it's better that they go visit the underworld sooner rather than later!”

“The strongest ones here are the Peak Late-stage Soul Exalts, and the strongest soulbeasts are only late-stage class six. And I....I have an endless stock of soulbeast puppets....”

An ecstatic light entered Lin Dongxiao's eyes. “Who can possibly be my opponent in here?!”

“The Extreme King Pills.....were found by our Beast Taming School, it's only right that belongs to us!

“In here....I am the strongest!!”

# Chapter 748: Coming One After Another

---

“Was this person....killed by you?”

Bai Yunfei calmly asked the black-robed person in front of him.

The person stared anxiously at Bai Yunfei, choosing to stay quiet rather than answer his question. Bai Yunfei’s casual neutralization of his two attacks had been more surprising than not. This person was also trying his best to figure out who Bai Yunfei was. Flipping through each and every single prodigy, the person hadn’t even a single clue on who Bai Yunfei was though.

Bai Yunfei waited for two seconds before he decided that he had enough of waiting. Speaking to himself, Bai Yunfei soliloquized, “I get trying to thin out the competition sooner rather than later, but to be this vicious....isn’t that a bit too much?”

“Pah!” The other person overheard Bai Yunfei’s words and sneered. With his grip still on his longsword, the man spoke, “The prize is a treasure nearly a thousand years old. Everyone should’ve realized it’s kill or be killed in here a long time ago. You coddled geniuses know nothing about the savage reality of this world....and spare me your high-and-mighty attitude, who cares about that? I highly doubt you’ve ever killed anyone before in your life!”

Bai Yunfei was again surprised by this person’s words. From what he was saying, this person had to be a wandering soul cultivator. He rarely saw people like him.

He didn’t even want to talk about morality with this person. It was just meant to be a small quip and not a debate. Ignoring the issue, Bai Yunfei closed his eyes and asked, “Are you planning to kill me too?”

His calm demeanor was unsettling to the other person. His eyes gleamed as they looked all around. No other person or soulbeast was there, meaning it was safe to fight. A murderous gleam

entered his eyes.

“Shaa....”

A few meters to the left of this person, the grass there started to rustle with wind. Having been stuck in silence as he waited, Bai Yunfei couldn't help but look over to the source of the rustling....

“Bzz....”

All at once, the aura of a Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt started to blaze out from the person at once. Like a leopard leaping at its prey, the other person immediately closed the distance between him and Bai Yunfei and struck out with his sword poised to stab into Bai Yunfei's throat!

That wasn't the entirety of his attack. At the same time he was moving, a dozen black needles came flying out to strike at Bai Yunfei from the left!

A nasty sneer was on the other man's face as he lashed out. He fully expected Bai Yunfei to be caught off guard by the two-pronged attack and be stunned into inaction until his death!

But he was in the one that was stunned however. His sword stab had....struck nothing but air!

In that one moment the person took action, Bai Yunfei fell seemingly backwards to be almost parallel with the ground. He zipped backwards and then flew back onto his feet as if nothing had even happened to begin with.

Even with the sword of the other person hitting nothing but air, its relative direction to Bai Yunfei allowed the man to continue forward. Kicking against the ground, he charged after Bai Yunfei to try to attack again with another sword stab towards him.

“Clang clang clang....”

As he was setting forward, the front of Bai Yunfei's person flashed orange with light. There was a series of clanging sounds as

the ten needles were deflected away!

“Whoosh....”

Bai Yunfei’s hand waved while the other person was distracted, summoning a flaming object from his space ring and sending it forwards.

Sweat pooled onto the back of the other person. If this flaming object were to fly straight into him, he wouldn’t have enough time to dodge it!

But the object flew away from him. The very next thing he saw was Bai Yunfei push his palm down towards the ground. The flaming object—now a healthy distance away—came crashing down into the ground like a miniature wall!

A muffled thud exploded from the earth along with an equally muffled howl, but the latter was cut short after a second. Paling in the face, the man let out a mouthful of blood next!

The howl that came from the part of the forest behind Bai Yunfei had been from his hidden soulbeast partner. Because of Bai Yunfei, the soulbeast was dead! And the death of his soulbeast partner meant a devastating blow to his soul!

Because of how fast Bai Yunfei attacked, the other person hadn’t even felt his soulbeast partner in trouble until it died. Looking back towards Bai Yunfei, the man’s eyes widened and his face paled yet again!

A flaming red spear was flying straight for his chest!

Spooked beyond belief, the man threw himself backwards and raised his longsword up in an attempt to block the Fire-tipped Spear.

“Clang....pcht!”

A joyous light entered the man’s eyes when he saw the spear collide with his sword. But then horror sunk in when he realized

something wrong with his defense....

The Fire-tipped Spear had simply destroyed his high-earth tier crimson longsword when it collided with it. In disbelief, the man could only watch as the spear continue onward through his high-earth tier armor and out his back!

As the life faded away from his body, the man heard one last sentence before he died.

“What you said earlier isn’t wrong. In this world, it’s kill or be killed....”

Bai Yunfei burned the corpses afterwards. He didn’t really feel anything after he killed this person; instead, he felt a lot more ready for anything else now.

In truth, his previous ideology of how the competition for the Extreme King Pills would be a friendly was far too optimistic. The cruel world of soul cultivators hadn’t such a happy sight like that. Killing was fundamentally the fastest and best way to reap the profits, and even if he didn’t want to kill anyone for the pills, he’d be put on the list of being one of the first people to be killed.

“We’re all representatives of the next generation of our schools. Why must we kill each other....?”

Bai Yunfei sighed. It was a fruitless endeavor not to kill, but he had to get his mind back into the game. Calming down, he looked around the place to see what to do.

“Seems like I can’t approach anyone else but friends so easily. Wonder how I’m going to get back to Jing Mingfeng....”

Bai Yunfei was climbing a decently-sized mountain now. He wanted to look at the surrounding area and scout for anything else that might help him.

Suddenly, the air a kilometer above his head started to fluctuate wildly before a single person in blue appeared out from nowhere!



This newcomer was an extremely vigilant one. Already ready for anything when he appeared, his eyes zoomed in onto Bai Yunfei the moment he was in.

The two looked at one another, their eyebrows raised in surprised recognition before they opened their mouths to speak.

“You?!”

Simultaneously. Outside the pocket in Crushed Stone River.

The elder from the Wood School heaved a heavy sigh. “Another youngster has gone in. The competitors are increasing with each wave....”

“Already ten people have come in the last half day.” The elder from the Fire School nodded his head, “It’ll be an even higher number soon enough. There’s by my estimate around a hundred people in the pocket, I wonder what’s going on inside now....”

“Fights are inevitable in there.” The elder from the Metal School commented, “But self-preservation won’t be too hard if they work together.”

None of them knew that the pocket was dividing everyone the moment they entered, and that everyone was already fighting one another with the intent to kill....

The elder from the Wood School raised his head up to look at the skies, “Here comes another!”

Several figures came into view then, allowing each of the elders to see just who they were. “The Underworld School!” One of the elders called out in shock.

Seven beams of light came flying in to land on the top of the mountain on the other side of the river.

When the light dispersed, the people from the Underworld School and Zheng Kai’s group was revealed!

Now at a stop, the two elders from the Underworld School

scanned the area. They were a bit surprised to see all the Soul Kings gathered in the area, but when they saw the transparent bubble and the fluctuating ripples all around it, one of the elders cried out, “The pocket’s already opened! There’s the entrance!”

The first elder’s eyes honed in on the pocket. “So many Soul Kings are already here I see....then have all the little Soul Exalts entered already? I wonder what’s going on inside....”

“Yunfei’s inside it!” Xiao Qi cried out from his perch on Long Lan’s shoulder.

“That must be why your connection with Yunfei got weaker then, he’s inside the pocket. He must’ve saw the pocket open and went in before we got here. Let’s go inside ourselves then!” Zheng Kai suggested.

Zheng Kai was already aware of the deal with the Extreme King Pills. Prior to their arrival here, the first elder had explained the situation with him, Xu Ran, and Han Yue. The latter two looked grim, but they nodded and followed Zheng Kai into the pocket.

The moment the three disappeared, another beam of cyan light flew into the area like a meteor to come to a stop a decent distance away from their group.

The first elder regarded this new beam of light with great shock, “The One Azure Leaf Boat...Yun Liantian! He’s here as well?!”

# Chapter 749: Meeting Another Friend

---

This new person was someone Bai Yunfei came across once in Soulbeast Forest. One of the five wandering soul cultivators, Yun Liantian!

It was back with the battle over the Black Dragon King. Right before his death, Yun Liantian appeared onto the battlefield and took his soulgem.

Yun Liantian stood on top of his One Azure Leaf Boat, his robes swaying gently in the wind. The years had done nothing on his face, and he stood there with the very same vulture-like expression he had from years ago. “Hah, what a lively place this is....” He observed.

It took him two or three glances to see the general shape of the people gathered here. The first glance was towards the pocket in front of him, “It’s good timing for us then. We might not have seen it the pocket opening, but it would appear the rumors of there being an Extreme King Pill is true. And if so many Soul Kings are out here, then....only Soul Exalts can enter it. Go in, my disciple. Your master will wait outside.

There was a young man in black standing right behind him. He bowed at Yun Liantian’s words. Raising his head, everyone could see the dark expression on his face—it was that the young boy Yun Liantian once referred to as ‘Gui Su’ back in Soulbeast Forest.

Or perhaps it was best to say the young man now.

On Gui Su’s shoulder was a black cat the size of his palm almost with how it was curling in around his neck. If people didn’t give a second look, everyone would’ve thought the cat was actually a cape.

There was an icy-cold look of determination in Gui Su’s eyes. “Yes, master.” He replied to Yun Liantian.

He leapt off the One Azure Boat and flew straight into the pocket soon afterwards.

Every single person in the area was only just getting over their shock at Yun Liantian's appearance. Some paled a bit, and several of the Soul Kings from the lesser factions gave shared looks of fear and concern.

“That's Yun Liantian! What's a hot-headed mad man like him doing here?!”

“He has a youngling with him, is that his disciple? I've never even heard of Yun Liantian having a disciple!”

A Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt...he's clearly here for the Extreme King Pill. This spells trouble, a disciple of that Yun Liantian can't be up to any good. Him joining in on the competition only means it's even more trouble for ours....”

“We should be thankful it's him that came here and not Feng Jianyuan. It would've been a bloodbath if the disciple of that person was here....”

“What are you doing mentioning the name of that demon?! He hasn't even appeared in the last ten years or so, he might be dead even!”

“He's the most vile of the five wandering soul cultivators, how can he die that easily? I'm sure he's just biding his time training somewhere. If he advances in strength again, then our world will see another bloody massacre....”

“.....”

.....

The disturbances happening outside the pocket went unknown to the Soul Exalts inside. They had no way of knowing what was coming in. All they could do was look for others inside the pocket, whether they be enemy competitors or friendly allies. Some were already long dead inside....

On the hillside of one part of the pocket, Bai Yunfei was currently staring down an equally surprised young man in front of him. “You?!”

The other person stared back. Like his robes, his hair was flowing freely in the wind. His handsome face was twisted slightly with surprise as he stared at Bai Yunfei. “You?!” He echoed.

A smile soon appeared on Bai Yunfei’s face afterwards. He took a small step backwards to maintain a polite distance from the other person. “Long time no see, Yue Feng. It’s a surprise to see you here.”

This person was the one man he met once before outside Ventia City in the Northern Ridge Province, Yue Feng!

It had been back when Bai Yunfei first left Soulbeast Forest. He was in some trouble with the house of Liu after he killed their heir. When the last wave of the Liu was out for Bai Yunfei’s blood, Yue Feng had appeared to kill one of the enemies for Bai Yunfei. He had helped him out, and in a sense, the two were friends that once stood shoulder to shoulder together in a battle.

Other than that, Yue Feng was also the disciple of Hai Dongqing, another one of the five wandering soul cultivators.

Snapping out from his surprise, Yue Feng remarked, “Bai Yunfei? It’s you? Haha! Long time no see!”

It was a happy occasion to meet someone he knew and was friendly with. As he was about to start reminiscing with Yue Feng, Bai Yunfei noticed him looking around himself as if searching for something.

“What’s wrong? Did you come with someone else?” Bai Yunfei asked.

“I did.” Yue Feng nodded, a little frantic. “She was just right behind me, where did she go? Did she not enter the pocket? That can’t be....”

“She came in,” Bai Yunfei answered, “but she was transported somewhere else. This place is strange. Even if we head in the same entrance with another, we’ll be forcibly split apart.”

“What!? This pocket can do that?!” Yue Feng cried out, the panic on his face intensifying, “This spells trouble then! It’s dangerous for Yuexia to be by herself!”

Bai Yunfei levelled a strange look at him, “A girl? She’s a Late-stage Soul Exalt or Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt right? She shouldn’t be in too much trouble if she came in here then....”

“No!” Yue Feng clutched at his head in vexation, “She’s only just a Mid-stage Soul Exalt! Damn! I would’ve told her to stay behind if I had known!”

“What?” The danger was apparent to Bai Yunfei now. “A Mid-stage Soul Exalt? Why’d she come in then? Did you not know everyone fighting for the Extreme King Pills are all Late-stage Soul Exalt almost?”

“I....” Yue Feng sucked in a deep breath, “Yuexia has always stuck by my side since she was young. I came here with a second Late-stage Soul Exalt, but I didn’t want to leave her behind by herself so we decided to take her in with us. I didn’t know this would happen if I brought her in....”

His right hand flew up to the spot around his neck. Eyes lighting up with joy, Yue Feng cried, “Oh! Han Xiong’s with her!”

Focused now, Yue Feng closed his eyes. “I can sense him! Thank goodness....I can find out where she is then!”

“Han Xiong?” Bai Yunfei asked. “Brother Yue, what do you mean? How are you managing to do that?”

“Oh, Han Xiong’s my soulbeast partner. I had sister Yuexia hold onto him when we came in. Since they’re together, I can sense where she is then. As long as I can find him, I can find Yuexia!” Yue Feng explained to Bai Yunfei. Whirling to his right, he spoke,

“Brother Bai, I’ll be taking my leave now then, would you care to accompany me?”

“I was about to ask the same.” Bai Yunfei nodded.

Yue Feng leapt up into the air in an attempt to Skywalk before Bai Yunfei could warn him and subsequently tumbled back down like Bai Yunfei had when he first tried.

Seeing the look of surprise on Yue Feng’s face, Bai Yunfei spoke up, “We can’t Skywalk in here, brother Yue. And neither can we use flying soul armaments. We can only run.”

Yue Feng clicked his tongue at Bai Yunfei’s explanation, but he didn’t seem to mind much. Soon enough, the two people were well on their way away....

# Chapter 750: A Blocked Path

---

“Brother Bai, I remember you having a bird-type soulbeast before, correct? Is it not with you? And that blue-eyes wyrm....did it split ways with you?”

Remembering the two soulbeasts that had been with Bai Yunfei before, Yue Feng asked him about the two.

“Ah, they didn’t come in with me. It’s a long story, but I found myself in Crushed Stone River by accident and found the pocket. I wasn’t able to wait for them and headed in first.”

“Oh....” Yue Feng nodded. “You’ve gotten quite famous, brother Bai.” He smiled, “I heard you established the first class on crafting in the Capital’s academy. How amazing.”

“Haha, I can’t disobey my master. I didn’t have anything else to do but spend some time in the Capital anyways.”

“Anything else to do?” Yue Feng’s lips twitched at that. “How carefree you are, brother Bai....” he sighed.

“You’re already a Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt so fast. I’ve trained my entire life to get to this stage, so I admit I feel quite ashamed of myself....”

Bai Yunfei smiled. Getting to where he was now was nowhere as ‘carefree’ as Yue Feng said it was.

“There’s a fight over there!”

Yue Feng’s attention was caught by something else. He turned his head towards the right along with Bai Yunfei, who noticed the influx of elemental energy as well.

Off in a distance a little over a kilometer away, the two of them noticed a fight taking place between Late-stage Soul Exalts. Their soulforce was heavily mixed with one another as a testament to how intense they were fighting.



“Boom!!”

There was a loud explosion as a bolt of purple lightning came crashing down from the skies, immediately annihilating a person!

“One of them died!” Yue Feng commented.

Bai Yunfei nodded. His senses were already noticing that the survivor was already leaving the battlefield. Evidently, this survivor had already noticed Bai Yunfei and Yue Feng and was trying to escape.

“This....” Yue Feng looked slightly breathless. “This competition is a lot more harsh than I expected. The killings have already begun....”

“There’s far too many people in here, it’s unavoidable to have deaths occur. I’ve already met one person before you, and there’ll definitely be much more. Many people will die here today, I’m afraid.”

The anxious light in Yue Feng’s eyes grew a little darker at that. “Then there’s no time to waste. I have to find Yuexia and Yu Li!”

The two continued onwards even faster now. They traveled through a small ravine before the two seemingly came to a stop at the same time to give each other strange looks.

“Hey....so people are already doing things like this....I seem to recall everyone coming in here for the Extreme King Pills, why does it feel like their objective has changed?”

Yue Feng shook his head with a sigh.

Bai Yunfei had the same look on his face. “I feel the same way, but thinking about that isn’t going to help us. Everyone has their own way of doing things, and it seems to me that we’re not in the company of a few friendlies.”

A flash of cold light entered Yue Feng’s eyes. “Come on out!” He snarled, “There’s no need to ambush us, I don’t have the time to

deal with you lot!”

It was quiet for a small moment, and the impatience in Yue Feng’s eyes only grew more concentrated.

Then at last, four people came out from the left and right side of Bai Yunfei and Yue Feng. And to the right of the two was a single soulbeast!

It was an ambush!

One of the men in blue robes stared strangely at Bai Yunfei and Yue Feng as if measuring them up to see just why they were so calm when being ambushed.

Of the four of them, they had two Late-stage Soul Exalts and two Peak Late-stage Soul Exalts. There was also two peak late-stage class six soulbeasts.

In the pocket where everyone was split up when they entered, how could this particular group of four not be?

They were actually from different factions. Somehow meeting one another in the pocket, the ‘like minded’ fellows decided to band together for one common goal.

That was what Bai Yunfei thought, anyways.

A wrathful type of aura was radiating from each of the four. Two of them had a few scrapes and injuries on their person, meaning that they had very clearly been a part of a battle recently. Subsequently, this meant there was at least one other person to be ambushed by these four before Bai Yunfei and Yue Feng.

These people were very evidently just like the person Bai Yunfei killed beforehand. But that person, as greedy as he was, was working by himself while these people were working in a group. In other words, this was a group of raiders.

Perhaps it was because of how undisturbed these two males were, the four ambushers looked slightly unnerved. In order to break the

stiff air that was starting to settle, a gray-robed man barked out at the two, “Cut the chatter and leave behind your space rings if you know what’s good for you!”

“You’ll let us go if we hand over our space rings?” Bai Yunfei asked with interest.

His seemingly agreeable words was a bit startling to hear, but the man only snarled in anger, “As long as you don’t try anything, we’ll just make sure you won’t be able to continue on for the Extreme King Pills! Wait here and we’ll let you leave in one piece after we get the Extreme King Pills!”

“Oh....” Bai Yunfei couldn’t help but smile, not even a child would believe in their words.

“They even have two soulbeasts with them....brother Bai, how many can you take on at the same time?”

Compared to Bai Yunfei, Yue Feng had a slightly more stiff expression his face. He was looking at the enemies around him before whispering to Bai Yunfei.

“How many can you take on?” Bai Yunfei asked in return.

“How about I take the one in front of us along with his soulbeast and the other person to the left?”

A sliver of surprise crossed Bai Yunfei’s eyes at Yue Feng’s conservative answer. The difference in strength between the two of them wasn’t all too different from one another, and in a normal one-on-one fight, their strengths couldn’t even really be compared. Excluding Bai Yunfei’s circumstances, Yue Feng was the disciple of Hai Dongqing, one of the five wandering soul cultivators of the continent. If he was weak enough to be done over by one or two people of the same level as he was, then he’d be a disgrace to his master’s name.

Bai Yunfei acquiesced. “We split them then. That’s fine. I’ll take the ones on the right side.”

Their conversation was spoken with relative silence, but not so quiet that the others couldn't hear them. Infuriated by what they said, the gray-robed man roared, "Watch yourself you damnable brats! Do you think we're going to be bea—"

"Oh stow it! I'm rushed for time as it is, let's get this over with!"

Yue Feng exploded forward in a burst of violet light, cutting the other man off mid-sentence. Disappearing from Bai Yunfei's side, Yue feng dashed to the Late-stage Soul Exalt twenty meters to the left with a punch aimed at his eye.

"Bang! Ahh!!"

There was a howl of pain as the person was blown backwards. He smashed against one tree, snapping and breaking through it to continue onwards through another three trees. He tumbled onto the ground for a few meters before coming to a stop where he remained unmoving.

He was knocked out.

Everyone was stunned by Yue Feng's actions other than Bai Yunfei. They looked at Yue Feng as if they had just seen a ghost, their eyes wide open with shock.

Instant knockout!

Yue Feng had completely neutralized a Late-stage Soul Exalt before the person could even finish speaking!

He was already moving onto the gray-robed person before anyone else even realized it. His feet now a blur, Yue Feng was already halfway to the person.

"Brother Bai, the sooner the better!"

At the same time as Bai Yunfei and Yue Feng were fighting in another section of a forest an indeterminable distance away.

"Xiao Xiong, are you sure brother Yue Feng is in this direction? We've already walked a long time and still haven't seen anyone?"

A crystalline-like voice broke the silence in the forest. Several rustling sounds echoed in the forest as a large shadowy figure emerged out from behind the trees.

This shadowy figure was a two meter tall brown bear!

The brown bear surveyed the area around it like how a human would. Turning towards one direction, it growled twice as if calling out to someone.

Behind this brown bear was a comparatively small figure in blue. It was a young female in, roughly twenty-four in age maybe. She had a rosy-white skin tone that complimented her large eyes and ovalish face. In those eyes, a hint of anxiety was reflected in them as they darted around the place. In her arms was a small white cute-looking ferret.

Bai Yunfei had seen this young woman before. It was back in Ventia City where the two shared the same restaurant despite not actually talking to one another. She was Nangong Yuexia, the one Yue Feng was looking for.

# Chapter 751: Li Yuchun

---

The ‘Xiao Xiong’ Nangong Yuexia was referring to was anything but ‘small’. This giant brown bear is the Yue Feng’s contracted soulbeast partner.

TL Note: Xiao means small/little. A common prefix to pets/nicknames.

It was a late-stage class six brown bear with an affinity for both lightning and earth. It wasn’t capable of human speech, but its intelligence was top notch and comparable to that of humans. It had been shrunk to a miniature-sized version of itself prior to them entering the pocket. Since they were all split up, the bear saw fit to it changing into the size it was now to guide Nangong Yuexia towards the direction of Yue Feng.

The bear took a few steps deeper into the forest before it stopped. Vigilantly, it looked around with bared fangs and a guttural growl.

“Eh? Xiao Xiong, what’s wrong?” Nangong Yuexia stopped as well. Her eyes lit up, “Did you find out where brother Yue Feng and senior Yu Li are?!” She speculated.

Something was wrong with that hope though. Her eyes narrowed right afterwards, “But....I don’t sense their auras....eh? Are....are people fighting over there?!”

As fragile as she seemed, this young woman was still a Mid-stage Soul Exalt in strength. Spreading her soulsense outwards, she started to look at the battle taking place several hundred meters away.

“Shhh.....shhhh.....”

The sounds of the trees and bushes rustling could be heard as someone ran through the forest. It was a panicked type of run from what Nangong Yuexia could sense, and whoever it was, they were running in her direction.

“Someone’s coming! Who is it?”

Nangong Yuexia looked worried. Inching closely to the brown bear for protection, she held the white ferret to her tightly for comfort. The ferret’s ears perked upwards as it stared at the same direction Nangong Yuexia was, its eyes as vigilant as the brown bear’s.

It squirmed out from Nangong Yuexia’s embrace to stand on top of her left shoulder. Fur bristling, the ferret started to growl.

“Gr.....”

The brown bear growled several octaves lower then, brown light leaking from its giant frame. Like the ferret, its hair was standing up on its ends and the bear’s claws were looking sharp and ready for combat.

“Whoosh!!”

A golden beam of light shot forth from twenty meters away. Within this light, a thirty-something year old man could be seen running away as if his life depended on it. His face was deathly-white and his hair a frazzled mess. The golden energy around his person was fluctuating wildly as if out of control, but the most important thing was his left arm.

It was.....gone beneath the left elbow!

His entrance into the vicinity of Nangong Yuexia took him slightly to the left of her. His eyes widened with joy when he saw her, relief flooding his systems at the thought of being saved. He deviated from his original flight path to head for her, “Save me!” He pleaded with all the hope he could muster.

“Please save me!! There’s someone that’s going to ki—”

Something blew open his chest before he could finish. His head bent down to look at it. Horrified, the man’s eyes slowly started to fade in light before he fell to the ground just ten meters away from Nangong Yuexia. He was dead.

“Ah!!”

A high-pitched scream came forth from Nangong Yuexia. Her pace, already slightly pale with anxiety, drained of blood almost immediately. Her hands, shaking now with fear, flew to her mouth to hide her scream. And her eyes, wide open in shock, stared at the corpse in front of her.

A pool of blood was already forming around the corpse, especially where the hole was in his chest. Based on the size and shape of the hole, Nangong Yuexia could determine that it was about the shape of a fist!

Right before this person was killed, Nangong Yuexia saw a black ball of some kind fly straight through his chest and produce the hole and killing the man!

The black ball flew away from Nangong Yuexia after it killed the first person. Affected by gravity, the ball fell to the ground and left behind an insanely deep hole....

“How....how....how did he die?!”

The events that had led up to the death of this man in front of her had nearly been far too fast for Nangong Yuexia to see, and she still couldn't really determine what it was exactly.

“Shh.....shhhh.....”

Several more rustling sounds. Someone was walking towards her. Far more calmly than the first person though. It was a casual jaunt with naught any fear.

A single person dressed in black and violet robes emerged from behind the bushes in the same direction the first male came from. He was a young skinny man with a tall nose and thin lips. His eyes were fiercely-lit with a light that screamed out the intentions of an unkind person. This man spelt trouble.

This person was one of the people Jing Mingfeng told Bai Yunfei about before. In the Westward River Province lived one of the Five



Families, the house of Li. This person is Li Yuchun!

The first thing he did was look at the corpse of the man in front of him before shifting directions to Nangong Yuexia.

His eyebrows lifted up in surprise. “A Mid-stage Soul Exalt?”

Then he looked towards the hostile brown bear next to her. “And this soulbeast isn’t very weak....”

“Who....who are you?”

Nangong Yuexia asked, her voice practically a whisper.

“That’s not for you to know.” Li Yuchun replied. “Because....you’ll be a corpse in just a moment!”

His words were chilling to the bone to hear. Bringing his right hand up, he pointed his index finger at Nangong Yuexia and fired a beam of black light out from it. It formed a fist-sized sphere of black light as soon as it left his fingers and flew towards Nangong Yuexia with blinding speed!

“Roar!!”

The brown bear had sensed Li Yuchun’s hostile aura at once. Roaring furiously in response, it slammed its right foot down onto the ground. A giant boulder flew up in between the sphere and Nangong Yuexia to protect her. Not ending things there, the bear swept the girl into its arms and took off towards the right.

Only a second had passed since the two sides sprung into action. The black ball of light soon came into contact with the giant boulder, but rather than collide with it, the black sphere had simply....gone straight through the boulder. Although it emerged from the other side a little smaller, the ball of light continued onwards to hit a tree from behind where Nangong Yuexia used to be standing in.

Nangong Yuexia’s eyes flickered from the boulder to the tree as she was being carried away by the bear. From both where the ball

had hit the boulder and the tree, a hole the size of the ball was in its place!

“This.....” Nangong Yuexia’s face paled drastically, “You’re a space-type soul cultivator!”

She announced this to Li Yuchun, but her eyes widened even more when she realized another important fact....he wasn’t standing there any longer!

The shadow of a person flew up behind her then. Li Yuchun had appeared out of nowhere with a jet-black blade in his right hand to slash unmercilessly at the head of Nangong Yuexia!

“Shnk!!”

The sound of something sharp tearing through flesh was heard as blood sprinkled everywhere. Shocked, Li Yuchun drew his sword back and looked down at the purple claws that had scraped past his chest.

He looked down at the wounds on his chest first before back to the brown bear, whose body was now glowing purple. “So a soulbeast with an affinity for both lightning and thunder, no wonder you’re a fast one.....” He remarked begrudgingly.

“Xiao Xiong, are you okay?!” Nangong Yuexia saw the blood sprinkling down from the bear’s left arm. She was alarmed. Though the brown bear had managed to repel Li Yuchun, its arm was equally hurt.

She turned back to Li Yuchun with a face as red as a tomato, furious at the situation she and the bear was in. “You—! What kind of person are you?! Why are you attacking us for no reason! I’m telling you, my master....my master is Mu Yanling!!”

“Mu Yanling!?”

There had been a sneer on Li Yuchun’s face when he first regarded her and the bear. But when he heard the name ‘Mu Yanling’, his face drew blank with shock.

Nangong Yuexia's teeth gritted together at his reaction. Determined to act, she flew through several complicated hand seals. Light as blue as the ocean burst out from her body to spread into the surrounding area. And soon, the entire area was reflecting that same color before it contracted in on itself with Li Yuchun as the target!

The pigmentation of the blue light intensified as it condensed. Reaching half the diameter in less than a second, the light was already a very sapphire blue in color. It started to swirl around to form a two-meter tall and one-meter wide ball of water with Li Yuchun inside!

In no time at all, Nangong Yuexia had trapped Li Yuchun inside her attack!

“Let's run, Xiao Xiong!!”

She didn't bother to continue attacking after she finished the 'Water Prison Technique' and immediately made plans to run away!

She knew this person wasn't someone she could fight and win against. Even with the brown bear and ferret, Nangong Yuexia had a very slim chance of success! This person was a space-type soul cultivator! Battles against such people were intensely difficult to win against since no elemental energy was enough to overcome the difference between them. The space element....didn't fall under the 'five elements' system!

A wind-type soul cultivator could win against another wind-type soul cultivator if their wind blade was a lot stronger than the other. But....if a space-type soul cultivator attacked, the collision of any elemental energy would by default be swallowed up by space, making such attacks 'unblockable'!

She knew in her heart how terrifying battles with a space-type soul cultivator was, hence why Nangong Yuexia was so quick to use her master's name. By taking advantage in the shock of the other

person, she used a soul skill to stall for time and make her escape in hopes she could borrow the brown bear's speed to get away from this person.

The brown bear wasn't slow to pick up on her plan. Lifting her to its shoulder, the brown bear took off in a bright beam of violet light towards the direction of Yue Feng....

“Boom!!!”

Droplets of water flew everywhere as the Water Prison Technique burst apart from the inside. A drenched Li Yuchun swung his wet hair to behind his shoulders to look at the escaping three beings with a small look of astonishment.

“Haha.....what a plan that girl had....the disciple of Mu Yanling eh? That's a bit of trouble.....

“But it doesn't matter,” He chuckled, “you're going to die anyways!!”

His right foot kicked off against the ground to disappear from his original standing position. He reappeared another hundred meters away before repeating his previous action to speed towards Nangong Yuexia!

## Chapter 752: One Against Many

---

Back in the small ravine, Bai Yunfei and Yue Feng were still battling the people ambushing them. Despite the superiority of their strengths, getting rid of these people wasn't as easy as a snap of the fingers. The enemies were after all either Late-stage Soul Exalts or Peak Late-stage Soul Exalts in strength. People who managed to make it this far are all people with a large amount of experience gained from battle. In situations where life and death was split only by one small line, experience was a huge deciding factor.

Yue Feng had only managed to get rid of the Late-stage Soul Exalt because of the element of surprise. After the battle had truly begun, Yue Feng was busy juggling the gray-robed man and his soulbeast partner. Bai Yunfei had to deal with two other soul cultivators and a soulbeast by himself.

It didn't take long to see that Bai Yunfei and Yue Feng had the upper hand in the battle despite having the fewer numbers. Whether it was in their movement, defense, or offense, they were beyond any of the enemies. In just twenty minutes, the two were hardly injured while the others were more than lightly injured.

“Damn! Who are these guys? How are they so strong?!”

The gray-robed man cried out as he lashed out with a punch onto Yue Feng's shoulder. It collided and knocked Yue Feng back, but then he was struck with an elbow and sent flying away several meters. If not for his soulbeast partner attacking from the side, he would've been struck by Yue Feng's leg to the face. Steadying himself, the man watched as his soulbeast partner tried its best to attack Yue Feng with a pained expression.

His soulbeast partner was a luminous tiger. As a metal-type soulbeast, it was capable of producing eye-blinding light that made visibility almost impossible. Offense and defense wise, the tiger

was very strong, and whenever Yue Feng landed a leg or fist onto it, there was always something akin to a metallic clang from its skin.

There was an annoyed look on Yue Feng's face as he fought with the tiger. He had wanted to finish this battle in a hurry, but he had yet to actually finish off anyone else. Nearly half an hour had already passed since the battle began, and his patience was running thin. Murderous with annoyance, Yue Feng was no longer willing to try and just knock out these people. In order to get to Nangong Yuexia and Yu Li sooner rather than later, he'd simply use his soul skill to kill these people.

“Eh?!”

His eyes widened as if sensing something. Head snapping off into a random direction, Yue Feng's face paled with anxiety!

“Crap!!! Yuexia's in trouble!!”

Yue Feng's face was of fright and anxiety as he communicated with the brown bear through their soul bond. The warning signals he was getting from it was telling him that Nangong Yuexia was with the brown bear, and that they were both in danger!

He hadn't any signal from the bear before that they were in danger, so Yue Feng hadn't been too worried beforehand. But now that this was the case, Yue Feng was more worried than before. And because of that worry, he inadvertently let himself open to an attack!

Realizing his chance, the gray-robed man leapt forward. A golden sword appeared in his hand for him to lash at Yue Feng's head. The tiger roared and pounced to attack at that spot as well!

“Yue Feng!”

Bai Yunfei had Yue Feng in his sights due to their positioning, so he was in prime position to see what was going on, and to call out a warning in advance to him.

“Clang!! Tzzzzzkt...”

There was the sound of metal hitting metal and fabric being torn as Yue Feng bolted into action. Bai Yunfei’s warning had given him enough time to bring out a dazzling violet sword to block the other sword and leap out of the way just in time to dodge the tiger’s claws.

He hadn’t managed to dodge the claws completely. The fabric on the back of his robes was torn to shreds and sparks were sent flying as the tiger’s claws raked against the armor underneath. Yue Feng wasn’t hurt, but the blow was enough to send him away several steps with a pale face. The claws had done a number on him with the concussive force.

“Bastard, you can f\*ck off now!!”

Furious at the state he was in, Yue Feng waved his right hand with furious aplomb and a burning gaze!

“Crack!!”

A clap of thunder and a violet bolt of lightning struck the sword Yue Feng was holding. Raising the sword, he sliced across the body of the luminous tiger!

“Aooo!!”

A pained howl echoed through the ravine as the tiger was surrounded by a net of violet lightning. A scorch mark was on the right side of its waist as it started to roll around the ground!

“Brother Bai! Something’s happening over there, I have to hurry over!”

Not even caring for the gray-robed person or the tiger after he struck it, Yue Feng turned to Bai Yunfei.

Bai Yunfei was at that time slamming a fist onto a Late-stage Soul Exalt sneaking behind him. Swinging his Flameblade Bracer, he the other soul cultivator and soulbeast on his right looked away

from him and glanced over to Yue Feng. He nodded. "That's fine. You go ahead, I'll take care of these people."

"Thanks! Be careful now then!"

Even as nervous as he was, Yue Feng nodded in thanks to Bai Yunfei. Now with a new goal, Yue Feng turned away from the people there and took off towards the other side of the ravine, traveling fast enough that not even his person could be seen.

"....."

All the enemies were a little stunned to see him go. Most of them had already given up almost on winning against the two and were in the middle of considerations if they should run away or not when Yue Feng decided to 'abandon' his comrade and leave.

This was a chance for them! The despair that had previously been in their eyes were now replaced with hope.

They didn't really know what was going on, but only one person was left now! They had a chance to win!

The luminous tiger was only just rising back to its feet now. Ready to fight once again, the gray-robed man's eyes lit up with determination. He glanced over to his two other comrade without hesitation, "Kill him!!"

The three Soul Exalts and two class six soulbeasts all leapt towards Bai Yunfei in one great attempt to kill him!

Bai Yunfei's right hand was a blur as he shook it. Having previously been fighting empty-handedly, Bai Yunfei took out the Fire-tipped Spear and the Cataclysmic Seal.

"Well....it's about time for me to show my actual skill. I wanted to ask a few questions, but forget it....time to finish this!"

.....

Towards the north side of the ravine in between two giant stones, a single figure was standing behind one of them to stare



through the cracks at Bai Yunfei as he fought the five, a maliciously happy smile on his face.

“Hehe....so we meet again here....Fight then! Fight until you’re both exhausted and ready to collapse! I’ll be the one to end your life afterwards!!”

# Chapter 753: A Hero Saving the Maiden

---

Nangong Yuexia was right now in the middle of her escape. She was holding tightly onto the large leg of the brown bear from their position in a large expanse of grass, her teeth biting nervously into her cherry-red lips. Under her palms on the brown bear, a devastating wound could be seen! The muscles and flesh around this bone-deep wound were slowly pulsating as if it was trying to regenerate the missing chunk!

The brown bear had a dispirited look on its face. Aside from the wound on its right leg, the rest of the bear's body had injuries all over, sprinkling the grass and ground with drops of blood.

Right next to Nangong Yuexia's foot was the loveable-looking white ferret. Like the bear, the ferret was heavily injured with one part of its fur gone. Ice was the only thing keeping the wound in stasis as it tried to use its soulforce to heal its wounds.

Nangong Yuexia had blood on her person as well, but the majority of it belonged to the brown bear. There was a relatively deep wound on both her waist and right shoulder, but not enough to be debilitating. Also on her left shoulder was another wound where blood was still flowing down from.

“Clack, clack....”

The close sounds of footsteps caused Nangong Yuexia's face to pale. Whipping her head towards the source, she looked to where a shadow was just coming into view with a look of dread.

Li Yuchun was moving slowly towards her with a small smile on his face. His robes were a little messy-looking, but he himself was unharmed. His right hand was still holding onto the black sword from before with droplets of blood still hanging on the tip.

“I admit, I'm a little astonished at how far you managed to run, but I've no interest in playing this game of cat-and-mouse

anymore. I'll let you die a quick death..."

He brandished his sword as he spoke. Cutting at the air, a beam of black light emerged from the blade and flew a hundred meters away to strike at Nangong Yuexia!

"Gr...."

The brown bear looked flustered. Trying its best to force its soulforce to cooperate with it, the bear was trying its hardest to ignore the wounds it had. From its soulbond with Yue Feng, it could tell that Yue Feng wasn't too far away. They just needed to hold out for just a little longer and help would soon be here!

But the attack coming at Nangong Yuexia was quick, and in no time at all it was already coming very close to where they were!

"Bang...."

The spatial attack sent by Li Yuchun came to a stop just fifty meters away from Nangong Yuexia. Something had crashed into it and reduced the attack into a wisp of black energy to quickly fade away into the atmosphere!

'Now now....frightening a young miss like this so badly is an act far too unbecoming of a man...'

A faint voice spoke from behind Nangong Yuexia, prompting her to turn her head. Right behind her was a young man in white who quickly stepped past her to stand in front and shield her from Li Yuchun.

This young man had a straight back and a tall figure. His hair was fair and his face handsome. Held in his hand was a single black folding fan that made him look all the more gentlemanly.

Who else could this be but Zheng Kai?!

"Zheng Kai?!"

Li Yuchun realized as soon as his attack was defeated. The expression on his face seemed to change slightly for the worse at

his entrance. It wasn't a too drastic of a change where he was afraid of Zheng Kai, but he did look at the very least surprised enough to see him here that he called out his name.

Zheng Kai was a little surprised as well at being called out like that. He looked closely at Li Yuchun for a moment to see just who this person was before finally breaking out in a smile.

"I know who you are, you're brother Li from the house of Li in the Westward River Province, aren't you? So you've come to this place as well."

These two people knew each other!

That wasn't all that strange though. It was totally normal for youngsters of the same generation to know someone else from one of the Five Families. The two had seen each other many times before, but it didn't seem like they liked each other very much.

The current head of the Li had only one son, and that son is Li Yuchun, a youngster who was a little older than Zheng Kai but was weaker than the eldest brother of Zheng Kai, Zheng Cheng. Still, he had plenty of cousins—one of which was a Soul King who was a little older than Zheng Cheng was. So in terms of generational hierarchy, the house of Li was slightly beneath that of the Zheng, but that was only on the surface. The reality of things was slightly different.....

Not only was Li Yuchun just a little bit older than Zheng Kai, he was also a space-type soul cultivator, though that didn't mean the two were particularly friendly with one another. The two were rivals since their first meeting, and their last meeting had been just three years ago.

"Don't poke your nose where it doesn't belong!" Li Yuchun sneered at the smiling Zheng Kai.

His sword became a blur for a moment as he sent another spatial attack at Zheng Kai. This spatial attack wasn't really meant to do

damage onto Zheng Kai, but to go beyond him and hopefully hit Nangong Yuexia behind him.

“Whoosh!”

Zheng Kai flourished the fan in his hand, a spatial attack of his own coming out to strike at the one incoming. Like before, the two attacks struck each other and was canceled out to become just wisps of black energy.

The fan Zheng Kai used wasn't something he used to just make himself look nice. It was a very powerful space-type soul armament.

“It's hard to have a chance like this to save a maiden, how could I just let the chance slip away?” Zheng Kai smiled calmly at Li Yuchun. “Now that I'm here, I can't just simply stand aside and let this pretty little miss be killed by you. I'm sure you're doing all of this to reduce the amount of competitors for the Extreme King Pills and not for revenge of some kind, so let's call it quits here. Do you really think a Mid-stage Soul Exalt like her is going to be a threat for a Late-stage Soul Exalt like you?”

Li Yuchun sent a glowering glare at Zheng Kai. “I said....don't poke your nose where it doesn't belong!” He spat one word at a time.

Zheng Kai closed his eyes, the smile finally dropping from his lips. He took in a deep breath and sent a cold glare in return at Li Yuchun, “If you're going to be like this, then so be it. Shall we fight then?”

He turned back to look at Nangong Yuexia, “Shouldn't you be running away now, young miss?”

“Ah?”

Not expecting to be spoken to, Nangong Yuexia looked strangely at Zheng Kai, “I....you....”

Zheng Kai held his palm up to stop her, “No need to mince

words. Just go. I'll worry if you stick around."

That's when it really hit Nangong Yuexia with what was going on.

This stranger was truly trying to save her! Her large eyes blinked once in uncertainty before she bit her lips. She scooped the ferret into her arms and whispered something into the ears of the brown bear. Right in front of his own eyes, Zheng Kai watched as the bear turned into a miniature-sized version of its older self before the girl took it into her arms.

With both animals in her hands, she stood up and bowed to Zheng Kai. "Thank you."

Then without hesitation, she turned away and ran off.

When she was just a hundred meters away, a second figure popped out just twenty meters behind her to lash out with a sword strike onto her—it was Li Yuchun!

"Clang!!"

His sword struck Zheng Kai's fan mid-stroke. Zheng Kai had moved in between the two before Li Yuchun could fully attack Nangong Yuexia!

"I don't get this chance everyday to save a maiden. How could you possibly try to stop me from being successful?"

Zheng Kai smiled. He pushed outwards with his right arm, forcing the longsword in Li Yuchun's hand away before he lashed out with a left punch at Li Yuchun's face!

## Chapter 754: Battle Between the Space-types

---

The fact that Zheng Kai had blocked his attack for a third time infuriated Li Yuchun. In all honesty, he hadn't even really cared about if Nangong Yuexia died or not, otherwise he would've killed her earlier in his pursuit rather than delay. But now that Zheng Kai was sticking his nose in where it didn't belong, he couldn't give up now. To do that would be to symbolize he was listening to Zheng Kai, and by extension that meant he was afraid of Zheng Kai.

Both these thoughts were unbearable to have.

He didn't particularly want to fight Zheng Kai either. Already twice had he attempted to try and kill Nangong Yuexia, but the damnably determined Zheng Kai was there to stop him both times and save the girl. Not only was he saving this girl, he was also allowing him the first step in every exchange!

"I don't want to bicker with you, but if you keep getting in my way then I won't show you any mercy!"

That was what Li Yuchun was currently thinking.

Zheng Kai's incoming left punch was met by a left hand of Li Yuchun. The two hands collided with one another and brought Li Yuchun a half-step backwards. From their positions, Li Yuchun was forced to look at the face of Zheng Kai, and Li Yuchun looked all the more disgusted by the face of his. With each second that passed, Li Yuchun's killing intent increased in intensity!

"Go die!!"

Li Yuchun spat out the two words and twisted his longsword to pull the sword back to slice at Zheng Kai's head!

"Hey there, what's all this about dying? You're far too violent."

Zheng Kai bantered with a faint smile, though his reaction was brutally swift. He pulled his left hand back and kicked off against

the ground to get away from the path of the sword.

The sword missed Zheng Kai by inches, but from the tip of the sword a beam of black energy was already shooting out to cross that short distance to strike down Zheng Kai!

Zheng Kai's pupils narrowed at the sight. His retreat took him to only just ten meters away before his momentum died. Concentrating on his soulforce, Zheng Kai swiftly disappeared from sight before the black energy could hit him!

The blade of black energy continued to fly onwards beyond where Zheng Kai used to be. It flew a little longer before disappearing away from sight, failing to do its job of hitting Zheng Kai.

Li Yuchun was fully focused on trying to locate Zheng Kai as soon as he disappeared. Sensing something to his right, he snapped his head there just in time to see Zheng Kai appear just ten meters away!

Zheng Kai made an exaggerated motion with his hand as if to wipe the sweatdrop away from his forehead. "Hey, are you serious?!" He grumbled. "If I was any slower with my reaction you would've been able to scoop my brains out with a ladle!"

His eyes floated over to the direction Nangong Yuexia was escaping to. The person in question was already gone from sight, drawing a smile from Zheng Kai at his accomplishment.

That expression infuriated Li Yuchun even more. Nangong Yuexia wasn't even an issue of contention for him anymore. His anger was fully focused on Zheng Kai. Drawing all his soulforce in his body, Li Yuchun prepared himself to fight with all he had.

"This is my best time to kill him. No one will know who did it if I hide his body here!"

He glared at Zheng Kai. He was determined to kill Zheng Kai in this pocket!



“Eh?”

Zheng Kai turned his gaze back towards Li Yuchun, the aura coming from the other male catching his attention. Noticing the look being given to him, Zheng Kai gasped. “Hey hey! Don’t tell me...you’re really trying to kill me?”

In response to Zheng Kai’s question, Li Yuchun struck out with his sword thrice to form three separate blades of spatial energy towards Zheng Kai’s direction!

The largest difference between an attack of spatial energy and elemental energy was the fact that there normally wouldn’t be a bright display of light from a spatial attack as was normal from elemental-based attacks. Spatial energy generally formed distortions that’d rip through the air without sound and be generally empty of elements. The only noticeable thing about it would be the spatial energy’s flight path.

No longer smiling to focus on the battle, Zheng Kai focused in on the three spatial attacks coming at him. His legs pushed against the ground to take him towards the right, and then he disappeared from sight again!

He reappeared twenty meters away with the same inertia as when he first was dodging the three spatial attacks.

Teleportation was a skill that space-type soul cultivators employed most.

But no sooner did Zheng Kai reappear did his face blanch slightly. His right hand flew up with his fan to shield his head from attack above.

Li Yuchun had at some point appeared above him to attack with his sword!

“Clang!”

There was another clash of metal and sparks as the black sword landed on top of the fan.

“Chhh....”

In the quick moment the two weapons clashed against one another, the black sword twisted just ever-so-slightly to make it away from the fan to strike at the right hand of Zheng Kai!

Zheng Kai swiftly pulled his hand back, but Li Yuchun's attack had been swift to transition into a slash to aim at his unprotected right shoulder!

As fast as Li Yuchun was, his attack failed to hit anything with Zheng Kai once again teleporting ten meters away.

A look of surprise was finally on Zheng Kai's face, since Li Yuchun was nowhere in sight when he looked up! Eyes-widening, Zheng Kai gritted his teeth and teleported away again.

“Whoosh!”

Just scant milliseconds after he teleported, Li Yuchun's sword appeared in the position where he was once standing.

Zheng Kai appeared again another twenty meters away, but Li Yuchun was already gone from sight just as quickly as he had disappeared!

This time, Zheng Kai whirled around instead of teleporting away. The fan disappeared from his hand in favor of a dagger to strike at seemingly nothing.

“Clang!”

A person materialized into sight from where Zheng Kai struck out, revealing the figure of Li Yuchun. Somehow, Zheng Kai had deduced where Li Yuchun would strike from and attacked first. Much to Li Yuchun's surprise, he had to pull his sword back to protect his chest from a dagger strike.

Capitalizing on his chance, Zheng Kai aimed a kick onto Li Yuchun's stomach. The kick failed to hit anything though with Li Yuchun simply teleporting away.

Zheng Kai didn't pull his foot back. His other foot pivoted around on the ground to spin his body and leg around to kick at the position behind him.

“Bang!” This time, there was collision as Zheng Kai's foot slammed into Li Yuchun's body. It had been a solid blow where his sweeping leg hit the right arm of Li Yuchun. Li Yuchun stumbled backwards a step or two, but he was ultimately unharmed.

The fan was once again back in Zheng Kai's hand as he sent two spatial attacks towards Li Yuchun to take advantage of his distracted moment!

In the moment before the two attacks could collide with Li Yuchun, the person disappeared from sight and reappeared another twenty meters away.

.....

The exchange between Li Yuchun and Zheng Kai was stop and go with their attacks forcing the other to teleport from place to place, making for what seemed to be a very dazzling fight.

A battle between space-type soul cultivators didn't really emphasis the factor of 'speed', or 'trajectory'. It emphasized attacks that couldn't be blocked and teleportation.

“Haha! This is a battle I like, again!!”

There was an excited glow from Zheng Kai's eyes as he again charged at Li Yuchun to attack!

“Bang! Bang....”

“Bang! Bang....”

The area was filled with the sounds of fist hitting fist and leg hitting leg. Every so often, the metallic clang of weapons could be heard, but only every so often. The two fighters were like apparitions with how they were disappearing and reappearing in random areas of the field. They disappeared when one person

appeared, and appeared when another person disappeared. Every time they clashed with either their fists or weapons, they would disappear shortly afterwards again only to clash again in another place. Their soulforce was completely all over the place as they unleashed one spatial attack after another.

The two were comparable in strength and were both of the same affinity. In this strange battle, just what would the outcome possibly look like?

# Chapter 755: Battle In the Middle of the Small Ravine

---

“Ah!!”

A person on fire flew ten meters into the air after having been struck. He came flying through a boulder before finally down onto the ground, spent in both momentum and energy to even consider getting back up to fight.

The man had been punched with a flaming fist from Bai Yunfei. He drew his right hand back to step half a step backwards just in time to dodge a tiger claw poised at his chest. His left hand drew the Fire-tipped Spear up to stop the gray-robed man from stabbing him with his sword from his left.

He punched outwards with his right hand, slamming it into the tiger right on its waist and drawing a pained roar from it before he sent it flying away. Not even drawing his hand back this time, Bai Yunfei swung it to the side to block a blade of wind with the Flameblade Bracer. The attack bounced uselessly off from the bracer before he kicked off the ground.

His leap upwards into the air hadn't been fast enough to prevent something from slamming into his back. Rather than do any harm to him, the blow merely aided Bai Yunfei in his leap up to go a few dozen meters. He landed softly on the ground and turned to stare at the remaining two soul cultivators and two soulbeasts.

A minute had gone by since Yue Feng left Bai Yunfei to deal with the five soul cultivators and two soulbeasts, and in that time, Bai Yunfei had managed to only just deal with one of the Late-stage Soul Exalts. Not only had he managed to do so while dodging the fierce attacks of the other four, Bai Yunfei had also managed to break out from their encapturing after the deed.

The gray-robed man was a Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt and his

soulbeast a late-stage class six luminous tiger. There was also a stout man in green robes that was a wind-type Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt with his late-stage class six four-armed wind ape. The blow Bai Yunfei last experienced on his back had been when the wind ape slammed one of its fists onto his back. His armor had nullified most of the damage by dissipating the concussive force in the punch and neutralizing the elemental wind from messing with his internals. All that was left by the end of the punch was just a light jolt that merely served to push Bai Yunfei away more than hurt.

“He’s....strong! How is he this strong? Just how many soul armaments does he have?!”

A look of disbelief was on the gray-robed man’s face. He hadn’t a single clue that fighting Bai Yunfei would end up like this. In just that one minute of battle, Bai Yunfei had fought with a level of skill far beyond what the group expected from a lone person. None of their attacks even seemed to make a dent onto Bai Yunfei with how he was punching them or blocking with his arms. Even worse, he was essentially shrugging everything off like how he simply allowed a single blow to hit his back to aid his escape. The worse they managed to do to Bai Yunfei was ruin his clothes.

And that was when the gray-robed man could see Bai Yunfei’s body. Both sides of Bai Yunfei’s arms and hands had defensive covers on them, and when he took a closer look at them, the man realized that the grade of each of the four soul armaments were at least high-earth tier in quality!

“Impossible! Is he....is everything he’s wearing heaven-tier?!”

The man’s lips twitched and spasmed in disbelief at what he was seeing and thinking.

“He’s just a brat relying on his high-leveled soul armaments to fight us! I doubt he’s really strong enough to defeat all four of us! Attack him all at once! Don’t attack where he’s wearing a soul armament! If we kill him....then all of his soul armaments is ours!”

There was a tint of hesitation as he spoke. He gritted his teeth and spurred his soulforce into the golden longsword in his right hand, extending the blade another meter in length with light. Settling into an offensive stance, the man prepared to launch a soul skill.

The eyes of the other man lit up at his words. He nodded and prepared to attack Bai Yunfei with all he had.

The two soulbeasts growled menacingly, prepared to tear Bai Yunfei to shreds.

Bai Yunfei's head was turned in the direction Yue Feng disappeared to. He couldn't even sense his aura anymore, which by extension meant he wouldn't be able to catch up if he didn't finish up soon. He turned his head back towards the gray-robed man when he heard his shout, but not before casting a quick glance to the right a moment before.

“Forget it....no point in being merciful. It's a battle of life or death, so I shouldn't be holding back either. I don't really have time to be messing with these people....”

For the first time since the battle begun, killing intent began to leak from Bai Yunfei's person. From the Cataclysmic Seal at his side, Bai Yunfei withdrew the fireseed within it and had it melt into his body.

The gray-robed man felt a chill go up his spine the moment the look in Bai Yunfei's eyes took a change. He could see some sort of ephemeral form of fire come out from the strange weapon by Bai Yunfei's side come out and enter Bai Yunfei's body, and when he realized what it was, his eyes widened in shock, “Tha—that's...!”

He never managed to say the words ‘essence fireseed’ since Bai Yunfei's aura began to spike rapidly the moment before he could!

Dual Flame Artes: Coil Form!

Bai Yunfei was a man who was already a Peak Late-stage Soul

Exalt. In his Berserk Mode, he could fight a Soul King on equal levels almost. In his 'coil' form, Bai Yunfei could still manage to make do with an early-stage Soul King while maintaining the level of a Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt. In a way, his 'coil' form was a mode in which Bai Yunfei was already pushing the limits and essentially a Soul King.

Power coursed through his body in unending amounts the moment the second fireseed entered his body. Bai Yunfei looked around himself with a curious glance, he could've sworn the atmosphere of the pocket was drawing away from him as if stung from something.

"As I thought...this pocket can't handle the energy of a Soul King. How strange, how can such a tremendous pocket like this be so 'fragile'?" Bai Yunfei muttered. "If that's the case, I can't use Berserk Mode or else the pocket will collapse."

"Die!!"

While Bai Yunfei was off thinking to himself, the gray-robed man was already in motion. Kicking off to the ground to launch himself at Bai Yunfei, the gray-robed man unleashed a shower of golden light as his sword danced in the air. Golden swords were starting to materialize all around him before shooting forward to shower Bai Yunfei in a rain of swords!

"Whoosh!!"

The wind around Bai Yunfei was starting to pick up in speed at the same time the gray-robed man took action. A violent gale of wind was kicking up stone and grass within a hundred meters of him, hundreds of wind blades forming as well to cut at the surrounding trees and boulders into pieces before closing in on Bai Yunfei.

"Roar! Roar!"

Then the luminous tiger and four-armed wind ape leapt forward



to strike at Bai Yunfei!

# Chapter 756: Unable to Withstand Even A Single Blow

---

“Boom! Boom! Boom....”

Explosions rocked the ravine along with earth tremors and violent bursts of wind to accompany them. Bai Yunfei couldn't even be seen anymore with everything happening around him. All that could clearly be seen were the golden swords raining down, the wind blades ripping through the place, and the explosions that erupted from the ground.

“Tsk tsk....those two men play it rough. I wonder if that brat's going to die after all that....”

From his hidden spot on the right of the ravine, a single person was watching the disaster that was taking place there with shock and just a little bit of excitement. Before he could finish what he was saying, his eyes bulged outwards in shock as he realized just how wrong he was about the situation!

“Bang! Bang!!”

Two explosions that didn't sound at all like elemental energy caused explosions was heard before two black figures were flung straight out from the dust storm!

And at a closer glance, everyone realized it was the luminous tiger and four-armed wind ape that had been thrown out! They flew a hundred meters away before tumbling to the ground in a jumbled mess.

“Bzzz.....”

A soft humming sound could distinctly be heard above everything else. From the chaos that was the dust storm, a crimson-red light started to expand outwards. One second later, a giant red 'boulder' came flying out from the dust storm without at all caring for the myriad swords or wind blades hitting it.

Whenever they hit the object, they only managed to create a few sparks before disappearing into the atmosphere, spent of energy!

But if that wasn't enough, the object continued to fly forward unimpeded by everything that was hitting it to fly at the gray-robed man!

“What is that thing?!”

The usage of his most powerful attack was extremely taxing on the gray-robed man. Practically bent over on the ground, the man had barely any time but to widen his eyes and brace his arms in front of his chest to protect himself from the incoming object....

“Bang....pcht!!”

The object collided into his person with a large thud. Like a kite with no strings, the man was flung flying into the skies with a great deal of blood coming out from his mouth.

“Im....impossi—”

The other soul cultivator watched his companion fly through the skies with a wide-open jaw. A streak of red light flew out from the dust storm before he was finished talking to strike him down!

His pupils dilated with fear at the sight. Waving his right hand at once, an orange-colored shield appeared over his person. It glowed even brighter as he poured more of his soulforce into it, and soon, the shield was about three inches in thickness.

“Clang!”

“Crack!”

“Pcht!”

The red streak of light broke through the golden shield in seemingly no time at all, shattering it into multiple golden pieces before entering the wind-type Soul Exalt and exiting out his back!

“Thwock!”

The red streak of light continued several dozen meters forward before finally embedding itself halfway into a large boulder where it continued to tremble a bit.

It was then that everyone could see a crimson-red spear in the boulder!

“Boom!!”

An explosion followed quickly afterwards when the giant Cataclysmic Seal came crashing into the ground!

The gray-robed man had been right underneath where the Cataclysmic Seal came down on! And just a little under a hundred meters away was the Soul Exalts Yue Feng and Bai Yunfei knocked out a little earlier!

In other words, three people had all met the same fate underneath the Cataclysmic Seal. Words weren't needed to explain how they were right now.

“Pow!”

The wind-type Soul Exalt, the one spear through the heart with the Fire-tipped Spear, fell back down to the ground near them...

.....

The gale of wind around Bai Yunfei slowly started to die down now that nothing was feeding it with energy. Bai Yunfei stepped out from it, the Cataclysmic Seal back by his side now in its originally small size. He walked past the corpse of the wind-type Soul Exalt and took out the Fire-tipped Spear from the boulder.

“Gr.....gr.....”

The weak but mournful cries of two soulbeasts could be heard a little farther away. Turning his head, Bai Yunfei watched as the luminous tiger and four-armed wind ape shivered with fright as they looked at him.

With their fatigue and the deaths of their soul cultivators, the

two soulbeasts were so heavily injured that they were no longer capable of fighting.

The two soulbeasts howled once with fear at the sight of Bai Yunfei coming closer. Summoning the very last of their strengths, the two leapt away from him to escape.

Bai Yunfei didn't bother to give chase. He merely shook his head and turned away. Two soulbeasts without their soul cultivators were no threat to him. He didn't really care to kill them either.

.....

A little farther away, the person in hiding from behind the two boulders was shaking where he sat. His eyes were wide-open in disbelief with what he had just witnessed.

He didn't say anything for a very long time, his mind trying its best to process everything.

Finally, his body started to shake with fear. "Impossible....just impossible...! How is he so strong, how can he be this terrifyingly strong?!"

He was trying his best to calm his racing heart now, though the fear was still prominent in his eyes. Whatever initial bravado he had when plotting his idea to attack when both sides were tired was gone now as he realized just how wrong that plan was now....

"I have to escape!!"

That was the only thing on his mind now. He couldn't hope to fight Bai Yunfei here. His only hope was to run as far away from Bai Yunfei as was possible!

Taking in one deep breath, he bolted from the boulder like an arrow into the direction of the ravine. He took one final glance to look at where Bai Yunfei was, but he couldn't see Bai Yunfei anywhere!

One second later, his eyes widened in fright as he realized just

where Bai Yunfei was!

“Is it me you’re looking for?”

A voice spoke from behind his head. Slowly turning it to look at the speaker in the face, he was treated to the sight of Bai Yunfei walking out from one of the boulders to stare icily at him!

His fearful face was clear for Bai Yunfei to see the moment he raised his head. Bai Yunfei started, a look of surprise on his own face when he realized this person was familiar. It took him a second to really think who this person was before he exclaimed, “You?!”

There was a look of glee on his face when he fully placed just who this person was. Smiling, Bai Yunfei spoke, “So you didn’t die after all. That’s good. I’ve a few questions to ask you...”

# Chapter 757: The Dreg of the Hornets

---

The man hiding behind the two boulders made for a rather comedic sight with how his head was a size bigger than average. This was the the leader of the ‘Hornets of Plum Valley’, the Boss Hornet, Yi Feijian!

Twice had the two met before. First was back in Vacancy Inn back when ‘Rapist Hornet’ tried to do away with Huangfu Rui. The entire group had been taught a quick lesson and forced to flee the inn, but the lesson hadn’t been too harsh since they all managed to get away in one piece. Bai Yunfei and the group hadn’t even really bothered to keep them in mind, and it only took a few days before the Hornets were forgotten completely.

But the second time they met was what made Bai Yunfei really furious with them. It was back in Formagua City when they met Huangfu Rui during their escape. Once again, the group tried to do away with Huangfu Rui before being attacked and killed. Even though Huangfu Rui wasn’t hurt, Bai Yunfei was still furious with the group anyhow and vowed to kill every single last one of them if they met again.

From what they heard from Huangfu Rui near Formagua City, several of the Hornets corpses were there where Huangfu Rui fought, but there was still one person left unaccounted for from her story. Huangfu Rui didn’t say anything about the big-headed person, and so Bai Yunfei figured that the person somehow managed to escape with his life during that event.

So never did he think that he’d meet ‘Boss Hornet’ here of all places.

A flicker of light crossed Boss Hornet’s eyes, prompting Bai Yunfei to smile in warning. “It’s best that you don’t do anything unwise, else I won’t mind breaking one of your legs or arms before asking my question.”

Boss Hornet stopped almost immediately, his body shivering at the threat.

His courage was all but gone now. He hadn't seen how strong Bai Yunfei really was back in Vacancy Inn, but now he had truly seen what power Bai Yunfei had after the fight less than a minute ago.

Bai Yunfei was a figure far more powerful than he was, and it was possible Bai Yunfei was at the limits of what a Soul Exalt was capable of. In his many years of wandering the continent, Boss Hornet had seen many weaklings and was always vicious to them when possible. On the inverse, he was also always afraid of those stronger than him.

Like a balloon, his courage deflated away from his person as he took two staggered steps backwards to lean against the boulder. "If I answer your questions, will you spare my life?" He asked, tired.

His question was very appropriate for his situation, but the regret he was feeling right now was enough to turn his intestines green. If only he had not thought that he could benefit from waiting for Bai Yunfei's fight to finish. He figured either Bai Yunfei or the other side would be killed, and the other side far too tired to fight back against him.

But reality had other plans, and it was too late now. If only he had known, he would've ran away sooner instead of staying behind.

He had ventured into the tiger's den hoping for treasure and met with the tiger. What a blunder. What a terrible blunder indeed....

Bai Yunfei leapt right in front of him and measured him up with one quick glance. "As long as you answer my questions, I will."

That got his attention. "On your word then! As long as you spare my life, I'll tell you some very useful information! It relates to the Extreme King Pills!"

He gave out his bargaining chip at once. It was his best chance to



survive and was also very important and relevant information anyone here would want to hear, hence why they were in this pocket to begin with.

“Oh?” Bai Yunfei perked an eyebrow, not expecting to hear such a line. He smiled. “As long as you can answer my questions you may leave.”

“Then as you say....” Boss Hornet replied.

Bai Yunfei cut into his words before he finished. “Were you or were you not near Formagua City in the past week or so?”

The fact that Bai Yunfei looked completely indifferent to potentially hearing about something regarding the Extreme King Pills was astounding to Boss Hornet. His lips twitched a bit at the ridiculousness of the situation, but he hadn’t the power to say anything about it in fear of angering Bai Yunfei. He nodded, “I was. My brothers and I made the mistake of entering Formagua City and was attacked by some kind of terrifying soulbeast there. Several of my brothers were killed underneath, and the others above ground. I....I’m the last survivor....”

Just thinking about the name ‘Formagua City’ brought back terrible memories of what happened then. How several more of his brothers had died trying to get back at a young girl there. Just thinking about it made him want to howl with distress.

Bai Yunfei didn’t care at all for the look on Boss Hornet’s face. “When you escaped Formagua City, did you head towards the mountains to the south?”

The lips of Boss Hornet twitched as if bracing himself for impact, “Yes...”

“Then surely you must’ve seen my young sister, correct?”

“That....I didn’t do a thing to her...”

“Did you or did you not.”

“Yes....”

“When your brothers came out, you must’ve been the last to show up? And when they were killed, did you see it?”

“Eh? Ye—yes....”

One question at a time, Bai Yunfei’s eyes were glowing with increasing intensity now. Now was the time for him to ask the most important question.

“Then did you see the one who killed your brothers? And did you or did you not see what he did to my young sister?”

“Eh?”

Boss Hornet blinked. He didn’t expect things to progress like this. His eyes narrowed with concentration as he tried to think about what really did happen that day. But when Bai Yunfei’s eyes were seemingly staring deep into his own, the man shivered and tried to ignore everything else to think. “I....I remember seeing a middle-aged man appear, but....it was dark that day, so I didn’t see what he looked like. And....I ran away before he did anything....so I didn’t see what he was doing to the little girl....”

The more he spoke, the more panicked he started to feel. Boss Hornet knew that this was a worthless answer as far as Bai Yunfei was concerned. It was the same as not answering Bai Yunfei’s questions, which in turn meant his life was still in jeopardy.

“Oh...” But much to his surprise, Bai Yunfei didn’t look as disappointed as he thought. It was almost as if Bai Yunfei was expecting him to answer that way. He didn’t say anything more after that ‘oh’ and chose to think to himself about something.

Not knowing what in the world Bai Yunfei was thinking about, Boss Hornet started to worry. Him having to wait was driving him to madness, and his eyes were already shaking somewhat as he tried to think about what to do.

“Alright then, tell me what you know about the Extreme King

Pills.”

At last, Bai Yunfei broke his silence to speak to Boss Hornet, causing him to leap with fright at the suddenness. “I...I can tell you where the Extreme King Pills are!”

“Oh?” Bai Yunfei’s eyes lit up, “You know about it?”

“I do.” Boss Hornet nodded. “I saw the mountain where the Extreme King Pills are located next to a while ago outside the pocket. If my estimation isn’t wrong, then it’ll take half a day to get to that mountain. I was actually just coming from that direction just now!”

Bai Yunfei gave him a smile that didn’t quite reach his eyes. “You came from that direction? You knew where the Extreme King Pills were and so you headed in the opposite direction of it?”

“I....” Boss Hornet stuttered, knowing how absurd his answer was. “That’s because....there was a lot of stronger people blocking the path up ahead. I knew I wasn’t a match for them and decided to double back for the meantime, that’s why I’m here now....”

A look of understanding crossed Bai Yunfei’s face, “Do you know who those people were?”

“I...I do! They were two beast tamers! They were extremely strong and controlled two or three late-stage class six soulbeasts each! All of the other soul cultivators they fought died just like that! And they....when I left, they were fighting against the students from the Wood School!”

Bai Yunfei’s eyebrows had furrowed when he heard about the beast tamers, but then the final part of Boss Hornet’s sentence was what really caused Bai Yunfei to look astonished!

“You mean...the beast tamers are currently attacking the people from the Wood School!?”

## Chapter 758: That Figure....

---

Bai Yunfei's surprise was in turn surprising to Boss Hornet. Quickly guessing that Bai Yunfei must know the five, Boss Hornet quickly replied, "That's correct. When I last saw them, two of the people from the Wood School was being attacked by two of the beast tamers."

"When, and where?"

"It was about half an hour ago in that direction...." Boss Hornet pointed towards the left. It should be a twenty-minute run if you run full speed. Right by the river. By the time I left the battle was already very intense, I'm sure it's already over by now."

Bai Yunfei followed Boss Hornet's finger to look, but he narrowed his eyes at what he heard. "Are you saying the people from the Wood School are already killed by the beast tamers?"

He didn't really believe in that. Though the people from the Beast Taming School had the advantage in numbers, the Wood School weren't ordinary soul cultivators. They were the best of what their school had to offer and wouldn't be so easily killed by beast tamers.

"I only saw a bit of the fight before I left. The two people from the Wood School were ambushed by the beast tamers. I think there was also a few wandering soul cultivators from the Westward River Province with them before they were killed by the beast tamers during the three-way battle. The students from the Wood School had to be tired from that battle, I didn't see their strongest student, Lin Zihao, there either. One of them was only a Late-stage Soul Exalt and the other a Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt, so..."

With how many people that were participating in the fight for the Extreme King Pills, it didn't mean to say that everyone here was the best of what their particular faction had to offer. Some of the participants were merely the closest ones their faction had that

could get there in time. For example, some factions had a few select strong people participating, but not their best. Several others had students conveniently located within the vicinity as well.

The students from the Wood School was a very good example of this. This group right here was comprised of the students who were training in the nearby provinces before they got the message to hurry on over to the Westward River Province. Of these students, their strongest one, Lin Zihao was conveniently there, but You Qingfeng and the other one with him were not strong enough to be normally considered for this competition had their school more time.

The Beast Taming School had the most time to prepare out of all the schools. Aside from Lin Dongxiao, the other three members with him were the elites of the school. In every sense of the word were they stronger than You Qingfeng, whether it be in talent, skill, or strength.

“So you mean....Lin Zihao wasn’t with them?”

Bai Yunfei asked Boss Hornet.

“Ye—yes.”

From what Bai Yunfei remembered, the Wood School had only three people enter anyways. So that meant You Qingfeng had to be one of the two people fighting!

What little hesitation Bai Yunfei had before he listened to Boss Hornet was now gone. He had to head over to where You Qingfeng was as soon as possible!

You Qingfeng had been kind to him in the past. It wasn’t a particularly heavy favor, but it was especially special to Bai Yunfei considering how weak he was before. Like the favor with Zheng Kai, Bai Yunfei had never forgotten about it, so he didn’t dare daze about on his feet now that he knew one of his benefactors was in

danger.

Boss Hornet knew just from looking at Bai Yunfei's face that he was going to head on over to the battlefield. He hesitated for a moment, but he ended up saying, "I've said everything you asked for without lying. The battle's over there, so could you spa—"

"You're coming with me!" Bai Yunfei glared at him.

He took Boss Hornet by the right hand and immediately took off into the direction You Qingfeng was said to be.

But the moment Boss Hornet's hand was latched onto, a fierce light crept into his eyes at the absurdity of the situation!

Bai Yunfei not willing to let him go was the last straw for Boss Hornet. No matter what, he wouldn't allow himself to be controlled like so! He'd die if he was! Having nothing left to lose, Boss Hornet decided to put his life on the line in order to fight Bai Yunfei for it!!

With all things considered, Boss Hornet was a man who killed many many people in his life, so he knew just how dangerous cornered people could be. His current situation was already enough to push Boss Hornet beyond what fear could even induce onto a person, and now he was willing to do anything to survive.

A cornered rat would bite a person if need be, a desperate dog would climb a wall, and an anxious bee would sting a person if it had no other choice.

So Boss Hornet chose to fight for his life one last time!

"Die!!"

Eyes filled with all the utmost resentment he had for Bai Yunfei, Boss Hornet let loose a tremendous roar to bolster his courage. A jet-black dagger appeared in his hand as he swung it straight at Bai Yunfei's heart!

But what he didn't realize was that Bai Yunfei was smiling

sinisterly in response to his actions....

“Halt!!”

As if uttering a chant, Bai Yunfei spoke one word and that word only with an imperative voice.

Then as if responding to his activation word, the Charm Bracelet on his left hand flashed once with white light!

Though Boss Hornet didn't exactly come to a stop like Bai Yunfei expected when he said 'halt', the expression on Boss Hornet's face looked exceedingly startled. As if some sort of mysterious power had slammed full force into him, Boss Hornet's movements became extremely slow by several degrees over!

Bai Yunfei reached out with his right hand to slap the dagger in Boss Hornet's hand away. At the same time, his left hand came up to yank Boss Hornet's head!

“Look at me!”

He commanded. The expression on Boss Hornet's face slackened immediately as his eyes met with Bai Yunfei, looking at him with such an attentive gaze that it looked like he was in love.

All emotion was quickly gone from Boss Hornet's eyes now. His face was slugged like an idiot without emotion or thought as he continued to stare at Bai Yunfei.

Bai Yunfei's eyes narrowed. Summoning his soulforce, he had the Charm Bracelet activate with light again. His soulsense swiftly penetrated into Boss Hornet's mindspace to rummage through it!

This was a deviation of the mental link ability of the Charm Bracelet, soul scanning!!

In the chaotic 'space' that was Boss Hornet's mindspace, Bai Yunfei could 'see' a series of mixed paintings. The vast majority of them were jumbled and undistinguishable, but there were a few that caught his eye....

One painting for example had an image of Crushed Stone River with a mountain of some sort there. There was also a painting of several people hard at work fighting one another, and another painting of the battle Bai Yunfei had just been in....

Though he called this ability ‘soul scanning’, it was but a poor imitation of what it really meant to Soul Scan. Soul Scanning was an extremely powerful ability that Late-stage Soul Kings were capable of doing to gleam information off of people. With the Charm Bracelet, Bai Yunfei could replicate that same ability to a lesser extent to look into someone’s mindspace and hopefully come across the information he wanted to see.

Because of the questions he asked Boss Hornet, the relevant memories of those events were fresher and more clear in Boss Hornet’s mindspace compared to the others. With these paintings, Bai Yunfei could confirm that he hadn’t been lying.

But those paintings wasn’t what Bai Yunfei was after. Scanning through them, he finally came to what he wanted to see most right as Boss Hornet’s mindspace was finally starting to collapse....

One painting in particular was very dark with one figure in there glowing with elemental energy. Even despite the illumination from that energy, the figure was hard to describe or even see. But the more the painting moved, the more Bai Yunfei could make out the features of the person....

.....

“Plop....”

Boss Hornet’s body collapsed to the ground, his eyes vacant and his breathing non-existent.

Bai Yunfei’s ‘soul scanning’ was a method that essentially brute-forced its way through into a person’s mindspace when they were least prepared. It was a method that harmed the soul the more he rifled through their memories and would lead to the person’s



death if Bai Yunfei wasn't careful. Boss Hornet's soul being extinguished was a result of such an event, and even though his face looked calm, his soul was gone and his person was dead.

“That person is Dongfang Ming eh....”

Bai Yunfei muttered to himself with some disappointment. He hadn't been able to see very clearly what that person did to Huangfu Rui in the end.

Still, what little he saw was enough for Bai Yunfei to burn into his mind for the rest of his life....

# Chapter 759: Meeting You Qingfeng Again

---

“Roar! Roar!!”

Two soulbeasts roared loudly through the plains, accompanied by one tremendous explosion after another and a burst of multi-colored light. From far away, this scene looked almost beautiful to watch.

But from up close, this ‘beautiful’ scene was anything but. Within one of the flickering beams of light was a terrifying-looking soulbeast that was snapping and biting down with its jaws with a bone-chilling ferocity.

There was a total of six soulbeasts and four soul cultivators here. At the current moment, the six soulbeasts were currently surrounding two young men dressed in light green, and the other two soul cultivators were standing on the outside of the entrapment.

Two of six soulbeasts were earth rhinos, one was a brown dire wolf, another was an elephant with four golden tusks, the fifth was a dark-green beetle, and the last was a gray praying mantis.

Not only were the majority of them of different affinities, they were also all late-stage class six soulbeasts! Another distinguishable feature was the crimson-red look in their eyes and their emotionless expressions. They also looked like they were going insane with bloodlust.

The two people the six soulbeasts were fighting were bloodied all over. Their green robes had long since been stained red from all the attacks the soulbeasts had done. Each time the soulbeasts attacked, the two would just barely move away or avoid being hit.

“Boom!!”

There was an explosion as the male on the left lashed out with his sword to block a wave of elemental energy from the praying

mantis. Retreating backward to dodge the dire wolf's attack, he made two backward steps to come back to back with his companion.

"Huff....huff....senior You, I....I can't hold on for much longer!" The male coughed, his breathing labored and his body heaving with pain. "They're trying to tire us out, and if we don't do anything, they'll completely drain us of energy without them feeling a thing!"

"Don't give up, the message slip has already been used. I don't know how vast this pocket is, but if Zihao is nearby, he'll come running over in no time. We can't escape, so we must hold out here. We just need to wait for Zihao."

The other male behind him spoke. This male was thirty-something in age and had a steady but mature face. Though he was in a dangerous predicament, his eyes were unflinchingly determined as he stared at the nearby soulbeasts and spoke to his companion.

This person was none other than the one Bai Yunfei once met when he first became a soul cultivator, an outstanding student of the Wood School from all the way back in Jadewillow City, You Qingfeng!

Many years had passed since Bai Yunfei last saw him, but there wasn't much that looked different to You Qingfeng now.

"Damn!! If only we didn't use that much energy in the previous battle, how humiliating is it to be treated by the beast tamers like this?! I never thought that they'd be willing to stoop so low. If they're willing to kill students from one of the Ten Schools, are they not afraid the others will challenge them?!"

The first man who spoke cried out, his hand balling with anger as he stared at the two beast tamers.

"Killing should be expected if everyone's aiming for the treasure

in this pocket. It's a safe tactic, and I'm sure they were already planning on weeding out the weaker competitors. If they kill us, who's going to know they did it? I'm sure most people in this pocket are already aware of this fact...."

You Qingfeng glanced over at the two smiling beast tamers as well, a forced smile on his face. Though he fully anticipated that the Extreme King Pills would have a dreadful battle between the competitors, he never expected the Beast Taming School pick their fights like this.

"Tch! What bastards the beast tamers are, they can control three soulbeasts each! If it was just me versus the tamers, I would've knocked the two flat a long time ago!! And if only we had soulbeast partners...."

"....." You Qingfeng couldn't help but shake his head at the naivety of his fellow student. There was no such thing as having dirty tactics in a battle like this. If the students of the Beast Taming School didn't use soulbeast puppets to fight, they simply wouldn't be the Beast Taming School then.

He had to agree with his companion on the aspect of having a soulbeast partner though. Most schools would generally have their students find a soulbeast to contract with, especially if they were among the strongest of their peers. Most of them wanted a soul contract so they could stand a better chance of breaking through, hence why most decided to find one when they became a Soul Exalt. Another common thing was finding a late-stage class six soulbeast to contract with since that soulbeast would have a better chance of becoming a class seven. Needless to say, the result was something that was good for both soul cultivator and soulbeast.

In fact, the group had been on the way to Soulbeast Forest to find a soulbeast to contract in when they were told about the Extreme King Pill and decided to change directions here.

.....

“Boom boom boom....”

The earth beneath their feet started to shake, causing both You Qingfeng and his bushy-eyed companion to blanch. They kicked off into the air just in time before the two giant rhinos stampede through the area where they used to be. There was a clash of sparks as the two rhinos hit each other head-on and continued past each other.

They fell back down to the ground just in time for the giant elephant and beetle to come at them next, embroiling them in fierce combat once again. With how tired the two were, they were hardly willing to use any of their more stronger moves. It was more energy-conservative for them to just spend all their effort trying to evade being hit, but even that was a very hard effort.

On the other side of the battlefield, the two beast tamers watched as You Qingfeng and his friend try their best to survive with a look of disdain. “This is the strength of the students of the Wood School? It’s nothing much....I was thinking I’d lose three late-stage class six soulbeast to deal with them.” Spoke the skinny one.

The fatty one next to him laughed. “It’s a lot easier than expected, but it’s best we don’t take any chances just in case they run away.”

The first time they were caught in this encirclement, You Qingfeng unleashed one of his most powerful attacks in order to scatter the crowd and hopefully secure a kill. When the battle started to drag out, You Qingfeng was forced back by a water-type late-stage class six soulbeast.

Not only do the core students of the Beast Taming School have soulbeasts on the same level of strength as You Qingfeng and his companion, but they also had more than just ‘three’ of them. Losing one or two wouldn’t be too devastating of a loss and could easily be replaced.

That was how the Beast Taming School operated.

“Defeating them isn’t really a problem, but....should we just kill them? They’re not the two-bit wandering soul cultivators like the group before. If news of this gets out....” The skinny one hesitated.

The fat beast tamer had a ruthless light in his eye, “Hehe, so what if we kill them? No one is here to see, who’ll know we’re the ones that did it?”

“That’s true, then let’s....eh? Someone’s here!!”

The skinny beast tamer’s head snapped towards a different direction just in time to see a bolt of red light come flying over!

“Fast!” He cried, “Is this someone else from the Wood School?!”

But the fat beast tamer shook his head, “Can’t be, don’t you see he’s a fire-type soul cultivator? Looks like he’s coming towards us, most likely going to try and do something....hmph! He’s looking to die if he’s coming by himself!”

He was already commanding the praying mantis to break out from the encirclement. It turned away from You Qingfeng to fly at the incoming red streak of light!

“Bzz....”

The wings on the back of the mantis back started to flutter, and in no time at all, it started to fly! Like a rocket exploding into orbit, it flew into the skies and unleashed a large blade of elemental wind out from its blade arms.

The incoming person didn’t seem to pay the attack any mind as he flew forward. Just about a hundred meters away now, the person within the red streak of light waved his hand, sending a small red object outwards with increasing speed to block the blade of wind!

“Pow!!”

As if struck by a large wall, the praying mantis came to a screeching halt. It stuck to the red object as it flew in the opposing

direction to fly straight into the encirclement!

“Boom!!”

The large object smashed into the ground, coming to a stop only when it was submerged almost a hundred meters into the ground. Beneath the object, a second crater about twenty-meters deep could be seen before the praying mantis staggered on out from it.

“.....”

Everyone was deathly silent as they watched the praying mantis fly shakingly upwards. You Qingfeng and his bushy-eyed friend had been at the edge of this ‘giant stone’, and the two beast tamers hadn’t even had time to react to what they saw. And since they were stunned, their soulbeast puppets were doing nothing either.

Right in front of their very eyes, the giant ‘stone’ started to shrink in size before it flew away from everyone to go back to the incoming youth’s side.

Then the youth walked up to You Qingfeng.

“Senior You, it’s been a long time since we last met....”

# Chapter 760: Battling the Students of the Beast Taming School

---

You Qingfeng blinked a few times in recognition of the fact this person was talking to him. What was being said sent him into another round of surprise, though.

The smiling expression on this person's face confused You Qingfeng. He didn't recognize this person, but he could at least confirm that he wasn't an enemy of theirs. Easing up a bit, he glanced at his companion to stand down before looking back at this person to try and see who he was.

He was strong, there was no doubt about that. Otherwise, he would never cut into a battle like this without a second thought. But this person was far stronger than he was, and it seemed that....he knew him? And to be called 'senior'? This was....

Something about this person was familiar to You Qingfeng. His eyes glimmered with light as he thought hard on just who this might be. He had definitely seen this person somewhere before. He just couldn't put his finger on it.

After a long moment of silence, You Qingfeng gave up, "And you are....?"

The smile didn't disappear from Bai Yunfei's face. "It's been many years, it's normal to have forgotten about me, senior You. Do you remember of the events seven years ago in Jadewillow City in Azure Cloud Province? This junior is...."

"Bai Yunfei!!"

You Qingfeng burst out with realization.

Bai Yunfei's hints had reminded him of who he was, and You Qingfeng couldn't help but look on in shock after he declared Bai Yunfei's name.



Bai Yunfei smiled and nodded. “Haha, it’s me. Long time no see, senior You.”

“You....you’re....” Even though Bai Yunfei was right in front of him, You Qingfeng still found it hard to accept it. His eyes were blinking rapidly, unsure of the truth in front of him. “Are you really Bai Yunfei?” He asked in doubt, “The Bai Yunfei from Jadewillow City?!”

“Bai Yunfei?” The bushy-eyed companion next to You Qingfeng repeated, “Bai Yunfei....the genius from the Crafting School?”

You Qingfeng snapped to his companion, and then back to Bai Yunfei with even more doubt and confusion. “You...”

A little embarrassed, Bai Yunfei scratched his nose, “That’s me as well, haha...”

This time, You Qingfeng was finally fully convinced of who Bai Yunfei said he was. His eyes were still wide-open, “Bai Yunfei...it really is you! How...but how?!”

The bushy-eyed companion of You Qingfeng was still staring at Bai Yunfei and at You Qingfeng. He was confused how his senior knew of such an outstanding person from the Crafting School. But. What did ‘but how’ mean? Was it normal to greet an old friend as if they were seeing a ghost?

Bai Yunfei smiled. “It’s a rare opportunity to meet with you here of all places, senior You. But let’s put this off in the meanwhile, we’ve some annoyances to take care of first.”

He gave a close look at the two people in front of him, “You’re both quite injured, please stand aside, I’ll handle the two beast tamers.”

Though the two were standing straight and tall, their soulforce were practically fully depleted and their wounds were surely taking a toll on their bodies by now. They were merely putting up a strong front, but it wouldn’t take much to send them falling

over.

“What....let you handle them?!” The bushy-eyed one stared incredulously at Bai Yunfei. “You’re going to handle the two beast tamers by yourself?!”

“Don’t worry, it won’t take long.” Bai Yunfei smiled.

His Cataclysmic Seal was already flying into the skies, shining orange in light as it did to protect You Qingfeng and his friend in a barrier.

Bai Yunfei stepped forward to look at the two beast tamers standing there.

From in the barrier, You Qingfeng stared blankly at Bai Yunfei, not sure of how to take in all of this. He wanted to say something, but Bai Yunfei was already more than far away. You Qingfeng hesitated, but in the end, he said nothing. All he could do now was watch and try his best to recuperate as much as he could in this limited time.

.....

Bai Yunfei’s arrival onto the scene had been a little surprising for the two beast tamers, and they hadn’t done a thing while Bai Yunfei was talking to You Qingfeng due to their surprise. It was only when You Qingfeng started talking that the two beast tamers started to pay attention to the conversation.

“Eh?” The skinny one blinked. “Bai Yunfei? I think I heard that name somewhere before....”

His fatter companion was quicker to put the figure to the name. “Bai Yunfei?! The same Bai Yunfei from the Crafting School?!”

“What?! Even the Crafting School’s here?!” The skinny beast tamer cried out, “This spells trouble if the Crafting School is here to fight for the Extreme King Pills!”

The fatty had been listening intently to You Qingfeng and Bai

Yunfei speak to one another, his face a dark color. “He knows the people from the Wood School! He’s really here to help them! Damn....”

“Bai Yunfei from the Crafting School...I heard a lot about him recently. Didn’t he open a crafting class in the Capital? He shouldn’t have heard about the Extreme King Pills to come here to Crushed Stone River that fast....senior Zhu, what should we do?”

In the time the two were talking to one another, Bai Yunfei was already done with his conversation and walking towards them!

The skinny one picked up on that. “Senior Zhu, should we fight?” He asked again.

The fat beast tamer contemplated with himself for several quick moments. Eyeing Bai Yunfei when he was just fifty meters away, he snarled. “Fight! Why shouldn’t we?! So what if he’s from the Crafting School, are we afraid of them or something?!”

“Halt!!” He spat at Bai Yunfei.

“Skree!!” The giant beetle screeched menacingly, moving in between Bai Yunfei and the beast tamer.

The two rhinos came in from the left and right, their horns poised and their feet pawing at the ground ready to charge at Bai Yunfei.

Bai Yunfei paused briefly to level a calm stare at the two beast tamers.

With their soulbeasts surrounding Bai Yunfei and the person in question coming to a stop, the fat beast tamer felt his courage be bolstered. “Crafter,” He announced, “Stick your nose somewhere else!”

Bai Yunfei’s eyes swept over the two beast tamers without at all caring for the other soulbeasts there. “I’ll give you both one minute to leave this place. I’m willing to not fight you both.”

“What??”

The impudence of Bai Yunfei was astounding to hear, and the fat beast tamer was practically boiling over at his words. “How dare you!! Do you really think you can beat the both of us by yourself?!”

The two of them were the cream of the crop and one of the strongest their school had to offer. Very few people were even able to compare to them, and this was something like a mark of pride for them. So to have Bai Yunfei speak to them like so was infuriatingly insulting.

Bai Yunfei’s eyes narrowed, he wouldn’t be bothering with any more words with them. There were no hard feelings lost between him and the Beast Taming School. In fact, Bai Yunfei had more complaints than anything else with them. It was only because of him not wanting to waste any soulforce that he was giving them the option to leave. But since they weren’t willing to do so anyway, Bai Yunfei wouldn’t cry over killing them.

“Whoosh....”

The Fire-tipped Spear appeared in his right hand as Bai Yunfei prepared himself to fight the two beast tamers.

“Hmph!! How arrogant! If you’re so willing to die, then I’ll be more than happy to kill you! Attack!!”

Fully intent on killing Bai Yunfei now, the fat beast tamer waved his right hand, commanding for his soulbeasts to attack! And at the same time, his other beast tamer companion did the same thing with his own right hand!

“Roar! Roar! Roar!!”

Several soulbeasts leapt forward at the same time towards Bai Yunfei. The giant beetle came from the front, the rhinos came from both left and right, and the giant wolf was coming from straight behind to attack Bai Yunfei all at once!

# Chapter 761: Illusions That Shock the Enemy

---

The beetle was like a tank with how fast it was approaching and how large it was. The dark green light around the beetle started to converge in its single horn. Tilting its head down, the beetle pointed its horn and flew forward to try and strike Bai Yunfei down!

The soulbeasts coming from the sides and behind were already closing in as well. Under the magnificent control of the two beast tamers, the four soulbeasts were moving in unison and the gaps between their attacks minuscule. Even if Bai Yunfei were to dodge the first attack, one of the other soulbeasts would be sure to get him.

First to attack would be the giant horn on the beetle's head. Everyone was looking expectantly on what Bai Yunfei would do in response, but....he was just standing there!!

“Is he too scared to move?!”

The beast tamers smiled in delight. Though it had started quite rocky, things were finally looking to be smoothing out for them. The giant green horn of the beetle was already moving into a jab at Bai Yunfei's person!

“Pcht!!”

Everyone could hear the sound of something being penetrated as the giant horn of the beetle stabbed straight into Bai Yunfei's waist and tore it in two!

“Wha—”

You Qingfeng's face drained of all color as he watched Bai Yunfei get torn apart. Likewise, his companion had his eyes wide open and his jaw dropped in utter shock at the results. Even the two beast tamers hadn't expected Bai Yunfei to die so easily with just one blow....

But then everyone realized something was wrong. The two halves of Bai Yunfei quivered for a moment before disappearing from sight!

“What’s going on?!”

The skinny beast tamer cried out in disbelief, was this a mirror image?! But he had been so sure that the ‘real’ body had been the one to be hit by the beetle’s horn! How was it that a mirror image was the one to be hit!?

The fat beast tamer had a similar reaction to Bai Yunfei’s disappearance, though his following action was a lot faster than his friend. “He’s over there!”

The giant stag beetle was already following his tamer’s command towards the left where Bai Yunfei was currently leaping from. The fat beast tamer was exceedingly fast despite his physique, and his right hand was already forming commands for the rhino soulbeast to follow. Roaring strangely, it flew towards Bai Yunfei to try and slam him into the ground!

“Bang!!”

There was a loud bang as Bai Yunfei was flung to the ground and then stampeded over by the other rhino as a follow-up!

Like a bullet, Bai Yunfei was thrown into the air after the second rhino was done with him and straight into the fanged maw of the wolf!

“Kshhh!!”

A pair of shiny rows of teeth bit into Bai Yunfei’s body, snapping him in half starting from the waist!

But just like last time, Bai Yunfei’s body disappeared as soon as the wolf’s teeth bisected him from the waist. Everyone watched as the fragments dissipated and were reduced to smoke!

“Again?!”

This time, the fatty could hardly hide his surprise. He was starting to have some misgivings about Bai Yunfei. When the rhino slammed into Bai Yunfei, the fat beast tamer had been even more confident they had the right body! This wasn't an illusion and this wasn't some sort of fast-moving mirror image! But right now.....

“He’s over there!!”

The skinny beast tamer called out, forcing the other to look over to the right side of the beetle.

“Whoosh!”

A flash of red light surged out from the beetle’s shadow before charging straight for the two beast tamers!

This time, it was the real Bai Yunfei that was attacking!

The previous two Bai Yunfeis had simply been the +12 additional effect of the Fire-tipped Spear, Doppelganger!

It was a distraction, the two of them. Solely meant to distract the four soulbeasts, the doppelgangers made sure at least three seconds of time would be given to the real Bai Yunfei to use the Wave Treading Steps and Flash Step to get close. By sticking to the beetle, Bai Yunfei was able to slip in through the cracks to attack the two beast tamers!

Bai Yunfei’s charge was like an arrow released straight from its bow. The two beast tamers were hardly left with any time to react before the enemy was right in front of them! For people as adept in fighting with soulbeasts from far away, they were ill-equipped for close-ranged combat and were not a match for anyone in their same level of strength!

But as elite students of their school, both beast tamers had a plethora of high-quality soul armaments. They also had a few soul skills to supplement their own personal skill and could fight for at least an extended period of time without giving away much of an advantage. They could at least fight long enough for their

soulbeast puppets to make it there and help them out. But if they were to fight against the elite students of one of the other Ten Schools, such as the Crafting School.....

And that was why the two beast tamers were so panicked! They couldn't allow Bai Yunfei to get close no matter what!

“Ahh!!!”

Furious, the fat beast tamer's body shined with violet light before a long spiral-shaped soul armament was thrown like a lightning bolt towards Bai Yunfei.

“Die!”

The skinny beast tamer wasn't slow in his reaction either. He didn't take out any soul armaments, but his left hand did shoot a beam of orange energy into the ground. There was a slight shaking sensation from his part of the ground before a giant orange python erupted from the ground as if exiting from the water. It dove back into the ground another meter away and tore apart at the dirt in its path to go snaking towards Bai Yunfei!

They were also sure to move back just so they could widen the distance between them and Bai Yunfei.

The object the fat beast tamer threw was a lot faster than expected, and it was almost like actual lightning as it zoomed towards Bai Yunfei's face!

But even with the object thrown at him, Bai Yunfei didn't look like he had any intentions of slowing down. He only held his left hand outwards as if to grab onto the incoming thing....

“Clang!!”

Violet light burst out from where the object collided with his gloved hand before Bai Yunfei swung his hand to the side!

Just like that, the terrifying lightning bolt like soul armament had been tossed aside by Bai Yunfei!



In the next moment, the ground in front of him burst open to reveal the orange python to come snapping at him with its jaws wide open!

“Crack!”

A clap of thunder thundered into the area as Bai Yunfei’s feet lit up with violet light. Then as fast as fast, Bai Yunfei zipped past the giant maw of the python!

The Flash Step!

Lightning Boots stats:

**Equipment Grade: Mid Earth**

**Elemental Affinity: Lightning**

**Upgrade Level: +10**

**Defense: 900**

**Additional Defense: 460**

**Soul Compatibility: 13%**

**Equipment Effect: Use soulforce in exchange for a 100% increase in movement speed for 1 second.**

**Cooldown of 1 second**

**Upgrade Requirement: 100 Soulpoints**

With his Lightning Boots and Flash Step, Bai Yunfei was able to quickly close the distance between him and the two beast tamers so that only fifty meters remained!

The two tamers were trying their hardest to retreat now, but Bai Yunfei was clearly catching up to them. It wouldn’t even take ten seconds for Bai Yunfei to be right in front of them!

“Don’t come over!!”

The fat beast tamer cried out in a fearful bluster. The battle had only been for half a minute and it seemed like Bai Yunfei had them on the top of his palm. He still couldn’t even understand how those

two ‘mirror images’ felt so real, and the increase in Bai Yunfei’s speed and strength was enough to make his heart race with anxiety and shock.

“Bz!!”

At the same time the fat beast tamer cried out, Bai Yunfei could a loud buzzing sound from the area to his left. The praying mantis was coming for Bai Yunfei!

This praying mantis had been struck by the Cataclysmic Seal at the beginning of the battle, so the blade arm on its right was heavily damaged and ruined. It was still shaking as it moved, but it was clearly unable to sense the ‘pain’ it was in. All of its soulforce was being used to aid its forward speed so it could catch up to Bai Yunfei as quickly as possible and catch him before he could catch up to the beast tamers. Using its one remaining good arm, the praying mantis chopped at the waist of Bai Yunfei!

“Clang!!”

The blade arm of the mantis was stopped by Bai Yunfei’s Fire-tipped Spear, but....Bai Yunfei had actually been brought to a stop!

And because of the angle of its attack, the praying mantis continued to fly forward towards the two beast tamers while Bai Yunfei was forced away!

The two beast tamers looked on in relief as the praying mantis flew towards them. Now that they had the mantis in between them and Bai Yunfei, Bai Yunfei wouldn’t be able to attack them as easily as he had before. And this meant that the two would be able to call for their other soulbeast puppets to encircle and attack Bai Yunfei, which meant the two of them would be safe!

But one thing the two beast tamers hadn’t noticed was that when Bai Yunfei and the praying mantis came into contact with one another, something had flown out from Bai Yunfei’s left hand....

That thing was a crystalline little hoop!

# Chapter 762: The Might of the Beast Taming Ring

---

The crystalline hoop detached itself from Bai Yunfei's left arm when he and the praying mantis clashed with one another, and it had gone unnoticed by the two beast tamers due to the relief they were feeling. They had been glad that Bai Yunfei had been stopped, but just two seconds later when both Bai Yunfei and the praying mantis were at a stop, the fat beast tamer who was controlling the praying mantis realized that something was coming towards the mantis.

“What is this?!”

He cried out. His heart rate skyrocketed again when he thought Bai Yunfei was throwing some sort of powerful soul armament as an explosive or something towards him. Those of the Crafting School used soul armaments that were beyond the levels of what normal soul armaments could do, but he realized that the hoop wasn't going for either him or his other beast tamer friend. It was flying straight for the praying mantis for some reason. As long as he himself was safe, the beast tamer didn't really care if the hoop was targeting the near-dead praying mantis.

But then he realized something was off with the incoming ring. True, it was flying with considerable speed, but the amount of energy coming from it was pitiful as if it hadn't any energy to begin with.

Though he didn't really understand what was going on, something was definitely going on. The fatty sneered and pointed his finger, commanding the praying mantis to cut at the incoming hoop.

The skinny beast tamer was already making several commands with his hands. Right behind Bai Yunfei, one of the rhinos, wolf, and even the large elephant was making another attempt to kill Bai

Yunfei. Each soulbeast let loose a loud roar before they charged.

Since the fatty was controlling the mantis, his attack onto Bai Yunfei was a little slower with the second rhino and beetle, but he managed to have the two soulbeasts go in to surround Bai Yunfei anyways.

“Eh?”

Bai Yunfei felt something tighten around his right leg. Looking down, he realized that the tail of the orange python from earlier had wrapped around it! Rather than disappearing when it failed to hit him, the python had merely used its tail to sink his leg into place!

In one sparse second, the tides of battle were already starting to change with Bai Yunfei being at the receiving half of things!

The looks of joy You Qingfeng had when he was watching Bai Yunfei earlier was already turning back into concern again while the two beast tamers looked pleased at their handiwork.

Compared to them, Bai Yunfei was still as calm as ever almost as if it didn't even matter if he was a disadvantage or not. Perhaps things were going as he planned, but even when his right leg was caught, Bai Yunfei simply stabbed his Fire-tipped Spear into the ground behind his foot!

“Pcht....”

Like stabbing into tofu, the spear sunk deep into the ground before....

“Boom!!!”

+10 Additional effect of the Fire-tipped Spear, explosion!

As if an underground bomb had gone off, a wave of fire burst out from where the Fire-tipped Spear had stabbed into the ground. The blast had been so strong that Bai Yunfei's entire person was thrown a few meters to the left away from his original position.

Subsequently, this meant Bai Yunfei was able to move far away enough to dodge everything since....the only thing wrapping around his leg now was a piece of the snake's tail!

The explosion from his spear had stabbed into the area where the snake had been, and so the explosion had thus eviscerated it!

Bai Yunfei didn't even glance at the portion of the tail wrapped around his leg. His eyes were stuck on the path ahead as he leapt forward, his left hand arcing from left to right as if to cut something.

Right in front of him, the praying mantis was just waving its remaining hand in a circular motion when Bai Yunfei waved his left hand. As if being controlled, the hoop followed Bai Yunfei's motions to dodge the blade arm of the praying mantis!

And then after it dodged the blade, the hoop flew to the top of the mantis' head!

As soon as the two touched, Bai Yunfei's eyes lit up with a powerful gleam of light!

The wrist-sized hoop began to expand in size and circumference. Turning into the size of a wash basin, the hoop then slipped over the mantis' head and over its neck!

Not knowing what the hoop was doing, the fat beast tamer looked on in confusion, but it was too late to do anything. The hoop had already tightened around the mantis' neck!

“Success!”

Bai Yunfei's eyes shined even brighter with light. He was already a good fifty meters ahead from the other soulbeast, meaning he had some time to act. With one swift motion, he pointed his left hand at the fat beast tamer!

“What are yo—agh!!”

Initially about to order the mantis to cut the hoop away from its

neck, the beast tamer was surprised by Bai Yunfei pointing his finger at him. He was going to say something more, but then a fierce stabbing pain in his head forced him to cut all communication short and clutch at his head before he let loose a pained howl!!

Bai Yunfei’s finger was the activation signal for the Charm Bracelet to activate its pseudo-soul attack onto him. It wasn’t a very strong attack, but it was enough to jolt the beast tamer’s mind and cause him to have a look of concentration. And then the resulting scream was because of the sudden lighting up of the ring around the mantis’ neck!

Needless to say, this ring was the most prized possession Bai Yunfei had to use against those of the Beast Taming School, the Beast Taming Ring!

Beast Taming Ring stats:

**Equipment Grade: Mid Earth**  
**Elemental Affinity: None**  
**Upgrade Level: +10**  
**Pet Loyalty +50**  
**Defense: 2200**  
**Additional Effect: Pet Loyalty +25**  
**Soul Compatibility: 65%**  
**+10 Additional Effect: Gain the ability to control the soulbeast wearing this item.**  
**Success rate is dependent on the difference in mental strength between user and target.**  
**Upgrade Requirement: 100 Soulpoints**

With all his uses of the Beast Taming Ring to this point, Bai Yunfei was a master of it. As soon as it snapped in place around the mantis’ neck, Bai Yunfei summoned all of his mind power and connected with the Beast Taming Ring to storm into its mindspace!

Then without waiting for even the fat beast tamer to react, Bai Yunfei immediately took control of the cognitive mindspace of the mantis with his soulsense!

“Senior Zhu! What’s wrong?!”

The howls of the fatty caused the skinny beast tamer to look at him, his hands supporting the other from falling to the ground.

But even before he could steady the man, the skinny beast tamer felt the mark of death descending down on him. Straightening with extreme fear, he tossed himself to the side at once!

As a Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt, the skinny beast tamer had more than enough reaction and speed to get himself far away enough from his original spot. The moment he was out of the clearance zone, a giant golden light swept across the area where he used to be!

But even though he had managed to get away, the fat beast tamer friend of his was still barely managing to get back onto his feet!

“Pcht....”

A single object tumbled through the air, blood spilling through the air all over!

“Se—senior Zhu!!”

The skinny beast tamer cried out in abject shock at what he had just witnessed!

“Plop....”

There was a soft thud as the flying object tumbled next to the skinny man’s side. It rolled a bit longer before finally coming to a stop, allowing everyone to look at just what it was. And when the skinny beast tamer saw it, his face drained completely of blood!

This was....the head of the fat beast tamer!

That golden beam of light had been an attack that decapitated the fat bast tamer when his guard was down!

Blood was pouring out like a fountain from his headless corpse just a few meters away....

Horrificed, the skinny beast tamer stared at the decapitated head and then to the killer of his brother, his eyes filled with a blank shock.

“How....how! How how how how how!!”

The skinny beast tamer cried out again and again as if that was the only word he knew. He started to retreat as if he had just seen a ghost—the horrifying thing was that it wasn’t Bai Yunfei that had killed his brother, it was the soulbeast puppet of the fat beast tamer, the praying mantis!

For no reason whatsoever, the soulbeast puppet had killed its master, a beast tamer, without warning!

It was because of that reason that the skinny beast tamer was frightened completely out of his mind.



# Chapter 763: Escaping From the Madness Ahead!

---

The instantaneous kill was something even Bai Yunfei was startled to see. He had been planning on controlling the praying mantis to send an attack command onto its master, but he was only imagining something like snapping his leg since he had to deal with the soulbeasts behind him first.

So it was to his great surprise that the praying mantis attack was so devastatingly brutal and swift. That fatty hadn't even been able to do anything before he was attacked by his own soulbeast puppet. And without any proper guard of any kind, the fatty was simply decapitated by the blade arm of the praying mantis without fuss nor trouble.

It couldn't really be blamed that the fatty was far too weak. As one of the strongest students in his generation, the beast tamer was actually very strong and wouldn't die easily. But because of how strange the circumstances was and his ignorance of the abilities of the Beast Taming Ring, the fat beast tamer wasn't able to wrestle back control of the praying mantis.

The control he had over the praying mantis was gone thanks to what Bai Yunfei did, and though the results of that wasn't enough to severely wound him, the beast tamer was still quite injured in a way like if an ordinary commoner was thwacked behind the head with an iron rod. In these circumstances, the praying mantis was meant to protect him from Bai Yunfei, so how was he supposed to know his protector would actually become his executioner?

Soulbeast puppets were tools for war for those of the Beast Taming School. They were like large soul armaments that could be freely controlled just like how Bai Yunfei could freely control his soulbond armaments.

By direct comparison, if Bai Yunfei was using his Cataclysmic

Seal to attack people and suddenly went out of control to smash into Bai Yunfei, how was he supposed to react or defend in time to it?

So even as unlucky the fat beast tamer was, his death wasn't unjustified. The overwhelming effects of the Beast Taming Ring was beyond what anyone else knew, and even a Soul King of the Beast Taming School had already lost his life due to the very same soul armament. A mere Soul Exalt had no chance against it.

Still surprised by the unexpected results of the Beast Taming Ring, Bai Yunfei was quick to capitalize on it. While the skinny beast tamer was trying to retreat, he was already issuing a command with his mind to have the praying mantis aim another chop at the beast tamer!

“Whoosh! Bang!!”

The skinny beast tamer leapt several meters into the air to avoid being struck by the blade. But a beam of orange light flew forward and struck him in his shoulder, severing a chunk of it from the rest of his body.

A large body of sweat pooled on the forehead of the beast tamer from the pain he was in. If not for his fast movements, it would've been his life that would've been lost rather than just his shoulder. Still retreating, he gaped in fear at Bai Yunfei, “Who...how did you do that?!”

He knew that the soulbeast puppet that was normally under senior Zhu's control was now being controlled by someone of the Crafting School!

It was a piece of information that threatened to shake his entire world. He joined the Beast Taming School when he was young and spent his entire life training in it. Many many battles had been fought and won by him, but never had he ever heard of someone managing to do what Bai Yunfei did. Never had an ‘outsider’ been able to control the soulbeast puppets of the Beast Taming School!

But it was clear to see that something had ‘wrestled’ senior Zhu’s control away from his praying mantis! It was completely incomprehensible to him. A question without any foreseeable answer and something he was in complete shock and denial over.

“Whoosh!!”

As if in response to his question, the praying mantis let loose another blade of elemental energy again, The beast tamer managed to dodge this one attack with a calmer mind, but still, he was in complete fear at his current situation!

And how could he not be? His unbelievably strong senior Zhu had been killed for some inexplicable reason, and now he was by himself! He had always followed his senior around, and now that he was by himself, the only thing he could think of doing now was to....flee!

Not even a speck of courage was left in him now. He hadn’t the balls to even think about fighting Bai Yunfei again. Even as afraid as he was, it wasn’t too hard to understand just why!

As a beast tamer, he relied on using soulbeast puppets to fight. To fight against someone who could ‘use’ their soulbeast puppets against them without trouble was terrifying and an enigma. How could any beast tamer be brave enough to keep on fighting?!

“Don’t come over!!”

In his fright when he saw the praying mantis come for him, the beast tamer waved his right hand to call out a pangolin-like soulbeast from his ring. It stood in front of him in a protective stance to stop the elemental attack from the mantis from hitting him.

“Bang!!”

The pangolin was only a mid-stage class six soulbeast in strength, but its defensive properties were far beyond that classification. And since the praying mantis wasn’t at its peak strength, the

elemental attack it attacked with wasn't nearly enough to break the pangolin's scales. Under the control of the beast tamer, the pangolin roared and bounded forward to whirl around in the air. Its four claws extended outwards to grab onto the praying mantis and then tried to rip it apart with its sharp fang and teeth. In one bite, the pangolin was holding onto the mantis' head!

The beast tamer gave up on the praying mantis as soon as it was stopped by the pangolin. He pointed a finger at Bai Yunfei, crying out, "Go die!!"

Three soulbeasts sprung onto Bai Yunfei from behind. Having not been used to fight earlier due to the beast tamer's shock, the three soulbeasts were now being commanded to hold Bai Yunfei off while he made his escape. The beetle and other rhino had stopped moving since the fat beast tamer was the one controlling them, but the other three were still being controlled just enough to stall for time.

Under his careful control, the beast tamer had the giant elephant raise its two giant feet up into the air before slamming them back into the ground with an bright orange wave of energy!

"Crackle....."

A giant two-meter deep crack ran through the ground from where the elephant stepped to chase after Bai Yunfei!

The sudden tremors in the ground had been sudden enough to catch Bai Yunfei off guard. His feet staggered to keep their balance, but he managed to leap into the air before the ground beneath him crumbled away into the chasm opening up there.

He wasn't safe in the skies either. As soon as he leapt up, a giant shadow flew up with him to slash at him with several elemental energy infused strikes at his heart!

"Bang!"

Bai Yunfei clutched at his Fire-tipped Spear, using it to strike

against the incoming attack and using that concussive force to send Bai Yunfei away from the enemy.

He flew a good dozen meters back to the ground where he managed to steady himself. He charged towards the beast tamer once again, but was then forced to leap to the left not even a second after.

He turned his head around just in time to see the skinny beast tamer commanding a giant dark eagle. Leaping onto it, he slapped the eagle and immediately took off into the skies with him on the eagle's back!

It was a wind-type mid-stage class six soulbeast. With its wings, the eagle was powerful enough to fly several dozen meters into the sky!

The beast tamer was trying to escape! Even without any of his three soulbeast puppets still there on the ground!

“Be careful, Bai Yunfei!!”

Surprised by what the beast tamer was doing, Bai Yunfei was forced to look away when he received the warning from You Qingfeng not too far away from him. It had only been a moment ago when the wolf had forced him out from the skies, but now the rhino was just a short ten meters away from him!

In that instant, the skinny beast tamer whirled around to look at them, his eyes shining with furious killing intent. He raised both hands to go through a series of hand seals, each seal increasing the chaotic flow of soulforce by a fraction. The pain from his injuries was killing him, but he didn't care. All he could do was glare angrily at Bai Yunfei and cry out:

“Die!! Just explode!!”

Having planned on dodging the rhino before this cry came from the beast tamer, Bai Yunfei's widened in alarm for the very first time since the battle begun as he realized what the beast tamer was

doing!

# Chapter 764: The Big Bang

---

The rhino charged with the speed of a rampaging vehicle towards Bai Yunfei, and by the time it was only just ten meters away, its entire body started to shine bright orange light. Like a miniature sun, the light coming off from the rhino's body was piercingly bright and chaotically hot!!

This was an amount of elemental energy that wouldn't normally be exported for anything. This was....self-explosion!!

The skinny beast tamer was trying to blow up the rhino's soulgem!

“Self-explosion!!”

Cried the bushy-eyed student from right besides You Qingfeng. Both he and You Qingfeng were sporting a pale-white color on their faces from their shock.

Self-explosion. An extreme method that almost assured mutual-destruction of the user and enemy. Very few were willing to use it for obvious reasons, but for beast tamers, they could simply have their soulbeast puppets do it in their place, as was evident in this case! The skinny beast taker had turned the rhino into a bomb to blow up Bai Yunfei!

It was a reckless act. The self-explosion of a late-stage class six soulbeast would be large enough to catch even him within the blast radius! The beast tamer didn't seem to quite care though. When he met Bai Yunfei's chilling stare, it was as if a sword was stabbed into him.

No matter what, he had to stop Bai Yunfei from coming over! With his mind racing furiously to think of a solution, the only one that came to him was this extreme one!

“If I can't bring my soulbeast puppets back, then I'll have it buried with you!!”

“Bang!!”

Bai Yunfei slammed his foot into the ground, ricocheting himself to where You Qingfeng and his friend was in an instant and set up a barrier around the three immediately!

“We need to run, senior You!”

Yelping, the terrified bushy-eyed man pulled at You Qingfeng in an attempt to get them both to run away.

But he was stopped by the hand of another person clamping down onto his shoulder to prevent him from moving!

“Don’t move!” Bai Yunfei barked at the two.

“What are you doi—”

“Boom!!!”

Cutting into his sentence, a world-shaking explosion was set off in the area in front of him. Elemental earth exploded everywhere, engulfing the three males in the shockwave....

A giant mushroom cloud floated overhead, filling the area for kilometers around with dust and stone!

“Whoosh!!”

A hundred meters high in the skies, a single ray of green shot out from the mushroom cloud. It was a black eagle. The skinny beast tamer was on its back.

He was currently laid on top of the eagle’s back, his face devoid of any blood and his chest heaving in and out as he tried to breath. He was very clearly out of energy.

Though he wasn’t close to the epicenter of the explosion, the explosion of a late-stage class six soulbeast was still very formidable. He himself had to use a earth-type shield soul armament in order to ward off most of the damages. But even then, the shield had been blown apart and the beast tamer had to use half his remaining soulforce in order to survive. Combined



with making the rhino self-destruct, he had only a third of his soulforce left.

He looked at the chaotic mess beneath him. His face was fatigued, but his eyes had the unmistakable look of joy at the aftermath. “Hahah....So....so what if you’re strong? I doubt you can last the self-explosion of a late-stage class six soulbeast! Haha....hah....”

Though he wanted to stay behind and see what his destruction had wrought, the explosion of the place would attract more people than not in time. If he didn’t leave now, then he’d certainly be in trouble as even a Late-stage Soul Exalt would be able to beat him with his current weakened state.

Under his control, the eagle took off away into the skies....

The self-explosion of a late-stage class six soulbeast made the area chaotic with soulforce so the skinny soulbeast wouldn’t be able to see what was inside the blast radius. Were Bai Yunfei and the other two people from the Wood School not blown to pieces due to the explosion anyways?

“Whoosh whoosh whoosh....”

Waves of elemental earth flew everywhere, creating ditches and craters all over the earth with varying diameters, but there was a single crater that was four hundred meters wide and a few dozen meters deep!

This was where the late-stage class six soulbeast had self-destructed.

In the middle of this crater was a three meter wide and tall orange barrier that floated right above the ground!

Everything around this spherical barrier was a mess, but this barrier was completely calm. Every so often, a wave of elemental earth would bounce off from the barrier.

Suddenly, the barrier started to tremble. It spun around itself slowly like an actual ball before descending down to the ground.

The elemental energy around it was finally starting to settle to manageable levels by the time the barrier was near the ground. The outer layer shined brightly before it became transparent in color.

There were three people inside!

Already, the barrier was very faint in color to reveal that a single rectangular item was providing the barrier with energy. The portion where this rectangular object was touching was brighter in light than the other areas, and a single person could be seen with both palms pressing against the object as if offering soulforce into it.

“Whew....”

Bai Yunfei sighed in relief when he saw the calming levels of energy outside the barrier. Dropping his hands, he allowed for the Cataclysmic Seal to drop the barrier around them.

He was happy his reaction was as fast as it was, else the self-destruction of the late-stage class six soulbeast would've done far more damage than what it already did.

Bai Yunfei had used the Cataclysmic Seal's barrier right before the rhino self-destructed, protecting the three of them in a powerful barrier of elemental earth.

Anyone that wasn't a Soul King hadn't a chance of survival if they were standing literally right next to the epicenter of a late-stage class six soulbeast's self-destruction. But for Bai Yunfei...this wasn't much of a problem.

The +12 additional effect of the Cataclysmic Seal boasted a very powerful defensive property and could be bolstered even more by Bai Yunfei's strength. The true limits of what the Cataclysmic Seal's barrier wasn't even fully shown today actually. When Bai Yunfei was in proper control and boosted with the second fireseed, he could produce a barrier that even a Soul King wouldn't be able

to penetrate. Compared to them, a late-stage class six soulbeast hadn't anything on it.

Though it wasn't wrong to say Bai Yunfei was unharmed, it was wrong to say he didn't use much soulforce to protect the three of them. The amount of soulforce Bai Yunfei used to reinforce the barrier was enough to make Bai Yunfei feel lightheaded and swoozy on his feet.

“Bai Yunfei! Are you alright?!”

You Qingfeng moved swiftly to hold Bai Yunfei by the shoulder.

His bushy-eyed companion was still standing rock-solid from where Bai Yunfei had held him down. Even now, he was as still as a statue to stare dumbly at Bai Yunfei.

“Just used a lot of soulforce, I'm fine....”

Bai Yunfei nodded his head and steadied himself. Touching at the Violet Soul Ring with his left hand, Bai Yunfei waited for the two thousand points of soulforce flow into his body, smiling in satisfaction when it did.

**+10 Additional Effect: Up to 2000 soulpoints can be stockpiled for later use.**

You Qingfeng breathed a sigh of relief when he saw that Bai Yunfei was unharmed. He was a little skeptical though. He highly doubted that Bai Yunfei could handle the self-destruction of a late-stage class six soulbeast without much trouble.

Bai Yunfei surveyed the area around them, observing the fallout of the explosion first before looking for the other soulbeasts, but there was none to be seen.

Though the other soulbeasts were also late-stage class six, they stood no chance at all against the self-destruction of the rhino and were blown to pieces.

He scanned the area again, this time a little more in-depth. His eyes lit up when he spotted something and waved his left hand.

There was a whooshing sound as a little rainbow hoop flew out from the dirt back towards Bai Yunfei.

It was the Beast Taming Ring.

He heaved a sigh of relief at the intact form of the ring, but his eyes stared at the skies in front of him with a very cold glance.

“Senior You, the soulgems of the soulbeasts should be scattered around. It won’t be too hard to find while I....”

“Eh?” You Qingfeng blinked a few times when he caught onto what Bai Yunfei was implying, “Don’t tell me you’re going to...”

Bai Yunfei nodded. “Since one is dead, we can’t have the other one remain alive, can we?”

# Chapter 765: Chased Down

---

Up in the skies, the skinny beast tamer had already flown a good few kilometers away by now. Though he had survived the battle with his life, the beast tamer felt nothing but humiliation and shame in his heart.

The Extreme King Pills weren't even something he could hope to get now, and all of his strongest soulbeast puppets were dead. To go back to the Beast Taming School and report this to his elders would warrant a mighty punishment and potentially lose his spot as a core student.

He turned his head back at the spot where the rhino had self-destructed, his eyes filled with hatred. "Crafting School....Bai Yunfei! Don't think it's over since you're dead! You better make sure I don't come across another one of you craters, or I'll kill them all!"

No matter how much hatred he had for Bai Yunfei, the beast tamer was still curious about one other matter in regards to him. "I wonder what that strange hoop was....it seemed to be able to control our soulbeast puppets, too bad I can't bring it back to the Beast Taming School...it has to be something the Crafting School created, what if it's not just Bai Yunfei that has it, but several others...."

It was a chilling hypothetical. That ring Bai Yunfei used was without a doubt the bane of the Beast Taming School, and he couldn't help but think just how the Beast Taming School would survive if multiple soul cultivators had soul armaments like that....

"This is important! Even more important than the Extreme King Pills!! I have to report this to the school! If the Crafting School has something like this, then they must be planning something against our school!"

The realization in the beast tamer's eyes overshadowed the initial

fear he thought. The more he thought about it, in fact, the happier he felt. If he could report this issue back to the Beast Taming School, then it remained to be seen if this would make up for his losses. Maybe he'd be given a bonus for the information....

His mind was made up now. Whatever plans he had before of meeting up with Lin Dongxiao and getting the Extreme King Pills together was gone. He had to leave this place at once!

This pocket was extremely dangerous for him right now. The best thing to do was to leave this place and seek protection under his elder.

“Entrance.....the entrance....it's pretty far from where I came in from. Should I find another entrance then? I wonder where there's one...:”

The entrance he was talking about was the place he had entered the pocket from. Those entrances weren't closed off from the other side, meaning people could leave if they wanted. They were simply places of rippling air where if located, people could come in and out from.

“I remember seeing an entrance somewhere before, I think it was...” The skinny beast tamer thought to himself as he looked all around himself. But as he turned his head, his eyes noticed a streak of light coming from behind him. He looked away for a moment and then jerked his head back in abject surprise.

The very next thing he knew, his entire body was starting to shake. His pupils were dilated to the size of pin needles and his face was completely drained of color. The more he looked at the area behind him, the more he looked as if he had just seen a ghost. His lips quivered violently, as if trying to form words and failing to do so.

But in the end, only two words managed to form on his lips.

“No way!!!”

In the airspace behind him from the faraway dust clouds, a single beam of green light was flying towards him. Within this beam of green light, a snowy-white eagle was inside. And on the back of this eagle was a single person. Though the beast tamer was far away, his eyes were still able to see just who this person was.

It was Bai Yunfei!

“He’s alive! How is he not dead?!”

The beast tamer howled in fear. He couldn’t even believe his eyes at what he was seeing. In his mind, Bai Yunfei had been blown to pieces when the rhino self-destructed. So how in the world was Bai Yunfei giving chase after him right now?!

As shocked as he was by this revelation, the beast tamer wasn’t stunned into inaction. Still pale in the face, he fed even more soulforce into the eagle underneath him, commanding it to fly even faster ahead.

Thus began the chase between eagles with the skinny beast tamer maintaining a nervous glance behind. But the terrifying thing was that the eagle chasing him was quickly catching up!

The eagle Bai Yunfei was riding was very clearly a stronger level than the one the beast tamer was. This meant it was a peak late-stage class six soulbeast!

“Impossible! How did he bring out a soulbeast like that out of thin air?!”

He distinctly remembered Bai Yunfei being alone, and there being no soulbeast with him. But then another thought occurred to him.

“No...no way! Is he using one of our soulbeasts?! He had one of our soulbeast puppets with him?!”

The strange method Bai Yunfei had of controlling soulbeast puppets was not forgotten by the beast tamer. The eagle Bai Yunfei was riding was one of the soulbeast puppets from one of his fellow

beast tamer's space ring! In other words, Bai Yunfei was using the soulbeast puppet of the beast tamer he killed in the past!

“Which one of us had a late-stage class six soulbeast? Who did he kill?!” The beast tamer cried out, his eyes trying to figure just which beast tamer had the large snowy-white eagle Bai Yunfei was riding.

“Wait! Isn't...isn't that...

“That's the fourth elder's whitegale eagle!!” The beast tamer shrieked at the top of his lungs. “It is! The fourth elder's whitegale eagle! How did it get into his hands?! Did...did...no—it can't be!!”

The fourth elder of the Beast Taming School was called Huang Lin, the very same beast tamer Bai Yunfei met outside Ventia City in the Northern Ridge Province during his grudge with the house of Xing. He was one of the people Bai Yunfei killed while he was being chased down for the space ring of Xing Qiuhong. Coincidentally, the permafrost mastiff was one of the other soulbeasts Bai Yunfei got from him.

That was when Huang Lin was out on an errand to check up on the ‘rumors’ of a ‘Regalia’. The Beast Taming School hadn't heard any information from him after he left to go see, resulting in the school having to send even more people to look for him. Their search was fruitless though, and their attempts to find Huang Lin had to be abandoned.

The Beast Taming School knew he had been killed though. While they didn't have the ‘life slips’ like the Crafting School did, the Beast Taming School had their own methods of keeping track of their more important members. The more important members of the Beast Taming School generally kept a soulbeast puppet back at the school. It wouldn't be a very important soulbeast puppet, just one that could be found anywhere. Normally, these soulbeast puppets wouldn't be controllable, but if their master died, then the soul imprint on the soulbeast puppet's slave seal would disappear,



rendering them into ‘masterless objects’.

From that, it was easy for the school to determine that a person was dead or not.

Now that he could see one of the fourth elder’s soulbeast puppets, the skinny beast tamer was beginning to connect the dots. The killer of the fourth elder and the person they had been looking for all this time—it was Bai Yunfei from the Crafting School! Even if it wasn’t Bai Yunfei that personally killed the fourth elder, it meant the Crafting School was implicitly involved!

All of the inconceivable developments that were happening one after another was already numbing his mind. The gears in his brain were churning so quickly they were threatening to melt down.

Biting down on his lips, the beast tamer formed two hand seals and pressed his palm onto the eagle’s back. The eagle froze for a second before the aura radiating from it exploded in intensity!

But while it got stronger, the eagle’s aura was also becoming more erratic as its body struggled to process the amount of soulforce running through it. Whatever the beast tamer was doing, it was clearly not good for the eagle’s body despite the speed boost.

From behind, Bai Yunfei narrowed his eyes when he saw the eagle in front of him start to speed up. Feeding some soulforce into the eagle beneath him himself, Bai Yunfei watched as the giant eagle screeched and took off with greater speed to give chase.

When Bai Yunfei saw the beast tamer escape by eagle earlier, he had a sudden revelation. An answer to the problems he had been having in the pocket.

If he couldn’t Skywalk or use his flying sword, then he’d use one of the flying soulbeasts to fly!

The Beast Taming Ring had been kept on the permafrost mastiff the entire time it had been with him, and Bai Yunfei hadn’t the

need for any other of the soulbeast puppets he had. They were after all from the Beast Taming School, and Bai Yunfei had no intention on relying on them like the beast tamers. But using a flying soulbeast wasn't a half-bad idea to chase down someone here.

The peak late-stage class six soulbeast underneath his feet was indeed one of the soulbeast puppets he got from the beast tamer Soul King he killed, and this was the very first time he was 'using' it.

Bai Yunfei was determined. This beast tamer in front of him couldn't leave the pocket alive! He had already killed one of the other core students, to allow this one leave alive would only bring him a great deal of trouble. This one knew about the Beast Taming Ring, and Bai Yunfei knew that it was only a matter of time before it'd get reported to the Beast Taming School. If that were to happen, then he'd become the school's number one target in order to silence him and take hold of the 'threat' he had over them.

And now that he was using the whitegale eagle to chase the beast tamer, Bai Yunfei could definitely see that the beast tamer would recognize who it belonged to. There was no way he could turn back now.

He had to kill this beast tamer, or he'd regret it for life!

Two streaks of light flew through the air as they played a game of cat-and-mouse. Already two kilometers had been traveled since the start of the game, and the distance between them was already shrinking down to just one kilometer!

Though the beast tamer had essentially forced the black eagle underneath his feet to go beyond its limits, his control over it was lacking. But the eagle underneath Bai Yunfei's feet was a peak late-stage class six soulbeast and the instantaneous velocity he was having the eagle travel at was far faster than the one up ahead.

"Where is it where is it where is it!! Damnit, where is that

entrance?!”

The beast tamer was nervous. Sweat was dripping profusely from his forehead and nose as his eyes scanned everywhere for signs of the exit out of this pocket.

“Over there!!”

His eyes brightened up with joy when he saw it. Commanding the eagle to shift towards the left, he flew towards the top of a mountain some ways away.

“Bzzz....”

The joy in his eyes started to revert back to shock when he realized something. There was a burning hot aura coming from behind his head!

He veered off to the side, forcing himself to deviate from his path to the exit and allowing Bai Yunfei—who was already not too far away—to catch up with him!

At the top of the mountain next to a large boulder, the exit awaited.

And right behind him was a large boulder on fire flying towards him!

# Chapter 766: Another

---

As he was fleeing for his life, the beast tamer could feel the burning hot sensation of an object drawing closer and closer behind him.

“Just....just a little bit more!!”

He gritted his teeth in furious anxiety. Leaping down from the eagle, the beast tamer was just in time to see a giant object collide with the eagle in a flash of bright red light!

“Bang!!”

Without him controlling the eagle, it was defenseless as the Cataclysmic Seal slammed into it. Even just twenty meters away, the flames from the collision were enough to burn at his person. Falling to the ground, the beast tamer made a mad dash for the pocket exit.

“It’s close! It’s close!! I just need one final burst!”

Desperate hope was abundant in the beast tamer’s eyes. He was so close to making it out!

But as he neared the exit, he heard a single shout before something akin to a clap of thunder slammed into his head, putting a stop to his forward momentum. His feet stumbled, causing him to trip over them and stumble to the ground!

A pseudo-soul attack!

With how weak he was, the pseudo-soul attack was practically unblockable and extinguished all hope he had in running away into the exit.

Bai Yunfei called back the Cataclysmic Seal and shrunk it back down to its normal size in order to conserve his soulforce. A fireball about two meters in diameter materialized over his hand before he threw it at the beast tamer.

It was with cold sweat that the beast tamer watched as the fireball drew close to him, his eyes reflecting not the light from the fireball, but the dimness of his despair.

“Who dares fight against one of us beast tamers, you tread dangerously!!”

A furious voice called out from far away. There was a whooshing sound as a violet streak of light came flying towards the skinny beast tamer!

“Boom!!”

The fireball came crashing into the ground and created a scorched crater where it landed, but Bai Yunfei had missed his target. Shocked, Bai Yunfei looked to the left where the beast tamer had went.

There was a cat-like creature a little ways away from the crater, and on the back of it was a single young man with a pointy-lip.

It was another beast tamer!

He was located a good thirty meters away from where Bai Yunfei was. Only a small mountain peak divided the two, but neither Bai Yunfei or the beast tamer made an attempt to attack the other. Instead, the beast tamer flew into the air in a streak of violet.

The soulbeast looked very much like a cat, but it had two violet wings on its back and even a long coiled tail that had someone already wrapped up in it—a person who looked like they were on the verge of death!

In the last crucial moments before contact, this lightning-type soulbeast had managed to save the skinny beast tamer!

The said beast tamer looked almost faint at the realization he had managed to survive. Weakly, he remained wrapped up in the tail and looked to the young man who saved him with a quiver on his lips.

“Junior Zhou, what happened?!”

The man with a pointy-lip looked thunderous at the sight in front of him. He was speaking to the other beast tamer, but his eyes were pointed straight onto Bai Yunfei with a murderous intent. His eyes flickered to the white eagle underneath him with a strange glint of suspicion, but he looked away afterwards.

His words had been the words needed to snap the other beast tamer out from his muddled-headedness. “Senior Zhang!” He shrieked and pointed at Bai Yunfei, “That’s Bai Yunfei! From the Crafting School! He killed senior Zhu!! And the fourth elder!!”

“Bai Yunfei from the Crafting School?”

The beast tamer was taken aback at the name, but then the second half of what the other beast tamer said caused him to turn white with shock!

“What did you say?!”

“Junior Zhu is dead?! And the fourth elder too? By this person? Explain!”

The skinny beast tamer’s finger pointed at the white eagle underneath Bai Yunfei next. “That’s the fourth elder’s whitegale eagle!”

The other beast tamer snapped his head back to take a better look. His face grew even whiter in recognition of it, and for once, he was speechless.

“I....what?! He’s....he’s....”

The skinny beast tamer looked back to the exit with a frantic expression, “Senior Zhang, we....we need to run! We need to get out of here!”

“Eh?” A blank expression appeared next on his face, “Run?! Why do that?”

The pointed-lip beast tamer was still staring at Bai Yunfei, his

eyes filled with disbelief at everything he had just heard and seen. Bai Yunfei was only a Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt just like him and had used up more soulforce than he had right now.

He could believe that Bai Yunfei had killed junior Zhu, but to kill the fourth elder? That wasn't well within the realm of possibility. "Run? Junior Zhang, do you think I'm no match for him?"

The skinny beast tamer's face looked conflicted. "No, senior Zhang, it's only that Bai Yunfei has..."

Before he could tell his senior about the extremely crucial piece of information regarding the soulbeast-snatching soul armament Bai Yunfei had, a wave of elemental energy was already surging in the form of a fireball at them!

Bai Yunfei was launching his attack!

He hadn't done a thing at first when the two were talking since he had been surprised with how fast and sudden the second beast tamer had appeared. In that time period of inaction, Bai Yunfei focused on him to see what he could learn about him before attacking.

The two beast tamers conversed with one another for a moment, but Bai Yunfei had gathered enough information. It didn't seem like Lin Dongxiao would be coming.

Now that he had a decent grasp on what to expect from this, Bai Yunfei felt a little more relieved. He was on a warpath right now, no enemy who saw his secrets could live!

Bai Yunfei wasn't so bored as to allow the two people to continue talking though. The sooner he neutralized the threats and left, the better and safer it'd be. To wait was to allow for more people to come, and that'd be unwise, even if they weren't from the Beast Taming School. To kill those people, or not to kill, was a question he didn't want to figure out.

"Hmph!"

Since the pointy-lipped beast tamer had been paying attention to Bai Yunfei the entire time he was speaking to his junior, he had been prepared to fight at any given moment. Swinging his right hand, he materialized a violet disk right in front of him before it expanded in size to two-meters around and flew forward to strike down the fireball.

“Whoosh!!”

The violet disk sliced through the fireball and cut it in two! The two halves of the fireball exploded upon being bisected while the violet disk flew onwards to try and do the same to Bai Yunfei who was standing in the path behind the fireball!

Bai Yunfei’s eyes narrowed slightly at the sight. His Cataclysmic Seal came forward and expanded in size as well to stop the disk from getting too close from him.

Right as the two objects looked like they were going to collide, the violet disk suddenly stopped in motion—though the bright light remained there—and took an abrupt turn up into the skies to avoid the Cataclysmic Seal.

It wasn’t a disk, but a soulbeast! A butterfly-shaped soulbeast with two giant violet but transparent wings!

The wings of the butterfly started to flap as soon as it was over the Cataclysmic Seal, spreading a blanket of fine dust down to cover the area where Bai Yunfei was!

But what Bai Yunfei did next surprised the pointy-lipped beast tamer. Leaving the safety of the eagle’s back, Bai Yunfei leapt off onto the Cataclysmic Seal and then kicked off that in turn to jump for the beast tamer!

“Hmph! An idiot!!”

The beast tamer snorted, mocking Bai Yunfei for his ridiculous action. In an area where Skywalking was impossible, to do what Bai Yunfei was doing was practically an act of suicide.



He waved his right hand, summoning a golden lion by his side. This lion had also a pair of wings on it!

The soulbeast puppets he was taking out were all soulbeasts capable of flight. In other words, he had the advantage here.

The late-stage class six golden lion let loose a mighty roar as soon as it appeared onto the world. A second after, it pounced at Bai Yunfei, its shiny and sharp fangs ready to take apart its prey!

Then came the frightened shriek of someone right into his ears!

“Be careful, senior Zhang!!”

# Chapter 767: Extermination

---

“Be careful, senior Zhang!!”

The panicked shriek coming from his junior was confusing to him, and he couldn't help but look down at him in confusion.

Then he heard the next few words the other beast tamer wanted to say.

“That hoop he has can control soulbeast puppets!”

The pupils of the beast tamer dilated in both fright and shock. That was when he took a good look and saw what Bai Yunfei was doing.

When Bai Yunfei leapt forward off the eagle, there had been a flicker of movement from his hand. The hoop that had been around the eagle's neck came off of it and was back in Bai Yunfei's hand by the time he was on the Cataclysmic Seal. Then when he leapt off, Bai Yunfei threw the item straight towards the beast tamer!

The white eagle had gone stiff the moment the ring detached from it and plummeted straight to the ground as stiff as a statue. On the other hand, the lightning-type butterfly was still spreading its powder around the area, and in hardly any time, the area was like if a thunderstorm was brewing there.

Everything was going as Bai Yunfei expected. The Beast Taming Ring was thrown, and the beast tamer was having one of his soulbeast puppets attack.

Just according to plan.

In the eyes of the beast tamer, Bai Yunfei was completely defenseless in the air, but that wasn't so. Bai Yunfei's aim was to throw the Beast Taming Ring at the incoming golden lion!

The beast tamer had seen Bai Yunfei throw the hoop, but he

disregarded it since there wasn't any type of energy coming from it. True as it was to throw a hoop like that without a purpose, the beast tamer was more worried about Bai Yunfei's onward momentum and so had the lion come forward to stop him.

He was in the middle of having the lion use a wave of elemental metal to attack Bai Yunfei when his junior beast tamer cried out a panicked warning and brought him to the disarray he was in now.

What he heard from his junior was very puzzling to him.

"What do you mean by that?!"

He cried out. His right hand jerked back, calling for the lion to return as a precautionary action against whatever Bai Yunfei was planning.

While he didn't fully believe in what his junior was saying, the beast tamer had still enough suspicion in the ring to do as he was warned. Pointing a finger at the hoop, he had the lion try to dodge it.

But the warning from his junior came far too late!

Bai Yunfei hadn't any intentions to dodge the wave of elemental metal. His eyes were focused entirely on the lion and the ring. With one slight tilt of his fingers, Bai Yunfei had the ring shift to the side and expand large enough to go over the lion's head!

"Boom!!"

There was a muffled explosion as Bai Yunfei came crashing into the attack of the late-stage class six lion. The wave of elemental metal exploded, showering Bai Yunfei with an explosion of bright light!

"Eh?!"

The beast tamer was stunned. Rather than let the attack hit him, the beast tamer thought Bai Yunfei would've dodged it. But it seemed like all his worrying was for naught since Bai Yunfei was

hit! Even if that attack wasn't enough, it was still a good first move to capitalize on!

“Tch!! F\*ck off!!”

He spat. His fingers flexed with soulforce as he had the butterfly soulbeast go over to where Bai Yunfei was again. Its petal-like wings stiffened slightly before the edges grew jagged like a saw blade. The butterfly started to spin around, rotating faster and faster before it took off towards Bai Yunfei!

The beast tamer was in a hurry. Not having all the information on his enemy was a little discomfoting, and the beast tamer wanted to make sure he could kill Bai Yunfei without even the smallest of problems. That was why he launched a powerful attack straight afterwards!

The lightning-type butterfly flew towards Bai Yunfei to attack while the beast tamer had the lion rev up for a second attack!

But....when he tried to send that command for the lion to attack, he realized that the lion wasn't responding to him!

“Senior Zhang, dodge it!!”

Beast tamer Zhou shrieked in morbid despair, but the pointy-lipped beast tamer didn't seem to notice with how his wide-open eyes were glued to the lion in absolute shock!

“Ahh!!”

Then came a stinging pain so sharp he clutched both hands to his head and wailed out loud!

“Roarr!”

While he was screaming, the lion he was trying to control suddenly turned around and....slashed him across the chest with its golden claws!

“Tzzzz....bang!!”

The first to tear was his robes followed by chunks of red. The

claws streaked across his belly and tore away at the soft golden armor he was wearing. Though the claws weren't sharp enough to pierce into his skin, it was still strong enough to send him flying away into the cat-like soulbeast behind him!

It was only just a brief twenty meters of fall distance, but it took only half of that for the beast tamer to remember where he was. Shaking his head, he had the soulbeast under him halt their descent.

“Whoosh!!”

There was a soft ringing sound as the beast tamer came to a stop. Turning his head, he saw a red beam of light come straight for him!

“Ahh!!” A beam of violet light burst forth from him. Since he hadn't any soul armaments that could protect him in time, he had his elemental energy materialize as a shield in front of him instead.

“Pcht!!”

The barrier he erected proved to be useless. The red beam of light tore straight through it without being stopped for even just a second. The only obstruction to be had was when the beam of light struck the beast tamer's armor, but even that was pierced straight through to have the beam exit back out his back!

The beam of light exited from the beast tamer's back and embedded itself into the mountain beneath, shaking slightly when it came to a stop—it was the Fire-tipped Spear!

“Ah!! Senior Zhang!! Ahhh!!!”

Shrieked the skinny beast tamer as he watched his senior fall and smash onto a hard boulder below with enough force that his head was deformed by impact. The death of his senior meant control of the cat-like soulbeast would be lost, and that he'd be unable to disentangle himself from the tail. He shrieked again at the realization and tried his best to escape, but to no avail.

“I don’t want to die! I don’t want to die!! Ahh!!!”

“Bang! Crack....”

One final scream later, the skinny beast tamer slammed into the ground, conveniently where a rather sharp stone was, spearing through the person. With his weakened state, the beast tamer had simply no defenses against the impact and had his entire person be dashed against the unforgiving ground. His bones fractured and his spine cracked, thus ultimately ending his life.

After the lion struck the pointy-lipped beast tamer, it returned towards the area where Bai Yunfei had been hit earlier. The Fire-tipped Spear had came out from this area a while ago before a person dropped down from the skies, and the lion had gotten there fast enough to catch him before he fell too far.

Though targeted by the attacks of both the butterfly and lion, Bai Yunfei didn’t seem too injured. Only his robes were worse for wear. He first decided to weather the lion’s attack after he tossed the hoop but the butterfly’s attack made him decide otherwise. Activating the Cataclysmic Seal’s effect, he had the barrier protect him from the two attacks instead.

Bai Yunfei landed on the lion’s back and had it float slowly down to the mountain peak. Behind him, the butterfly floated slowly to the ground.

The battle between him and the two beast tamers had only taken ten seconds at most before fully resolving!

When it came to the Beast Taming School or the beast tamers, Bai Yunfei was wholly confident in his ability to take care of them.

Four beast tamers had gone in to the pocket, and now, three of them had died within the span of ten minutes of meeting Bai Yunfei....

# Chapter 768: Boltgrass? Or Just a Figment of the Imagination?

---

Bai Yunfei heaved a sigh of relief at the sight of the two dead beast tamers on the ground. Killing the second beast tamer hadn't been a snap of the fingers for Bai Yunfei, he had to give up half his soulforce in order to have a guaranteed kill onto him. Using the +13 additional effect of the Fire-tipped Spear was a bit of an overkill, but it got the job done, and Bai Yunfei had no qualms about it.

The next thing Bai Yunfei did was to reclaim his Fire-tipped Spear and store it back into his space ring. The space rings of the beast tamers, on the other hand, were looted by him shortly afterwards. One fireball later, the two corpses were completely disintegrated and the evidence of their being here wiped from the earth.

Bai Yunfei also helped himself to the soulbeast puppets of the beast tamers. Now that he knew it was possible to fly on soulbeasts, Bai Yunfei wasn't very inclined to use his feet to run. He called out an early-stage class six thundertail bird and used the Beast Taming Ring to fly away from the mountain peak.

He'd have to stay away from the soulbeast puppets of the beast tamers he killed here for the time being. The whitegale eagle for example was far too conspicuous with most of the beast tamers knowing who it belonged to. The early-stage class six thundertail bird he was using was the soulbeast puppet of a beast tamer he killed long ago, and was a fairly common type of soulbeast. No one would take much consideration into a soulbeast like that beyond thinking it was his soulbeast partner.

According to his senses, Bai Yunfei could feel the auras of several people within his range of detection. They were clearly here because they felt the disturbance in the air and came to observe, but only just observe when they saw it was Bai Yunfei that was one

of the fighters. None of them saw who it was he was fighting, and some of them left shortly afterwards to avoid being caught up with any trouble.

“I’ll meet up with senior You first before looking for Yue Feng. I wonder if he managed to save his friend...” Bai Yunfei thought to himself as he flew through the air.

Flying through the air was a great deal better than walking, and Bai Yunfei was able to see far more than he would’ve on the ground. His eyes took in the sights here and there, then something bright caught his eye.

“That mountain over there!!”

The mountain he had been fighting the two beast tamers on was at most a hundred meters tall, a height which was a great deal shorter than the surrounding ones. For that reason, Bai Yunfei wasn’t able to see much when he was fighting, but now that he was up above it, Bai Yunfei could see off in a distance a mountain peak that was shining slightly red in color!

It was still a great ways away from where Bai Yunfei was, but he recognized it! This was the same mountain peak the mirage outside the pocket showed to have the Extreme King Pills!

“I found it! It’s over there!”

Bai Yunfei shouted out in joy to his mind. He wasn’t too blinded by his excitement to rush straight for the Extreme King Pills first, he still had to go the other way and group up with the others. You Qingfeng and his friend were both in a very weak state due to their battle, and Bai Yunfei didn’t want to leave them unprotected.

He also didn’t really know what was going on with Yue Feng, and even though he didn’t know him as much, the man was a student of someone he knew and respected. To journey with him would make their life safer, so it was worth the attempt. Now that he could use a soulbeast to fly, Bai Yunfei wouldn’t need to waste any



time or energy to fly then to where the Extreme King Pills were.

The thundertail bird's flight was considerably fast and took only a few minutes before Bai Yunfei was nearly back to where he had left You Qingfeng and his friend.

“Eh? That's...”

Bai Yunfei was making sure he was traveling in the right direction when something in the corners of his eyes caught his attention. Focusing a little more on this sight, he exhaled slightly from curiosity and had the thundertail bird stop for a second.

Just about two hundred meters to the right was a mountain peak about three hundred meters tall. He leered at the top of the peak for a second, unsure if what he was seeing was real or not.

“That....looks like....” Bai Yunfei muttered to himself. Wracking his brains for what it was exactly, it took him a good few seconds before he had his answer. “Are those boltgrass?! It is! They are!”

Boltgrass is a type of plant that is entirely violet in color and had forked leaves so that it looked like several bolts of lightning were running through them. While rare, the grass themselves aren't worth much in value. Their true worth is in what grew nearby...

A vein of boltstones!!

Compared to thunder ores, boltstones were a rarity a thousand times better than the former! It was practically an essential material for when crafting a heaven-tier soul armament!

Even the Crafting School hadn't any boltstones! It was only because of an ancient record of materials Bai Yunfei once read that he even recognized what they were.

“A vein of boltstones! There's a vein here!”

Bai Yunfei's eyes shined with excitement. For a crafter like him, a rare material that could be used to craft soul armaments was something to salivate over. Directing the bird towards that

direction, Bai Yunfei made a hasty approach to where the boltgrass were growing.

He reached the cliffside in a few seconds, but he was stunned to realize....

“There’s nothing?!”

Not even a single blade of boltgrass was to be seen here. His lips twitched nervously as he scanned the entire area.

“You’re f\*cking kidding me!!”

He ascended to the skies in hopes, scratching his head as he did. His soulsense was working overtime to try and locate even the smallest of hints on where the boltgrass might be. He found nothing in the end.

“Nothing....was I seeing things? But why boltgrass of all things...?”

All happiness practically evaporated from his person, Bai Yunfei was starting to fly away from this place when....

“Boom!!”

An explosion not too far away caught his ears. Bai Yunfei whipped his head into the direction of the source—it was coming from where he left You Qingfeng!

“Crap!!”

Bai Yunfei cursed out loud before making a beeline for the source.

In his hurry to leave the place, Bai Yunfei had failed to notice the slightly transparent ripples in the air here. The airwaves resonated with something else in the area and quickly revealed the rest of the ‘cliffside’ here, revealing all sorts of grass planted on the ground, each of them violet in color and shaped just like miniature lightning bolts....

But the sight was only for a moment before it disappeared....

Behind this mountain was a giant plains just a kilometer away. A crater several hundred meters deep had formed in the plains with three different figures of light shining. Of the three, two figures were cloaked in red and the third was in green. They were fighting.

On the perimeter, there were two other people watching. It was You Qingfeng and his bushy-eyed friend.

When Bai Yunfei saw who was fighting, his eyes widened in surprise, “Them?!”

He ‘knew’ the three. Jing Mingfeng had told him about them before.

The figure in green was You Qingfeng’s companion, one of the strongest students of the Wood School, Lin Zihao! The other two fire-type soul cultivators are the twins from the house of Ji in the Southward River Province, Ji Wushang and Ji Wubing!

The three of them were fighting furiously so that they were visible only because of the three streaks of light that represented them three. No one had a weapon out as they were relying on their arms and feet to fight. Each time they clashed, the area lit up with multicolored sparks and sent dust and stone flying everywhere.

Bai Yunfei was only just five hundred meters away from the still-developing battlefield when You Qingfeng and his bushy-eyed friend realized his coming.

“Bang!”

There was a muffled blow as Lin Zihao clashed with the two enemies again. Borrowing the momentum of the blow, he retreated up to You Qingfeng’s side while the other two retreated as well to widen the distance and look warily at the newcomer Bai Yunfei.

The thundertail bird came to a stop right next to You Qingfeng and the others for Bai Yunfei to leap off of. He first looked around the area at the two Ji brothers, then gave a nod to Lin Zihao, and

then looked to You Qingfeng.

“Senior You, what’s going on here?”

# Chapter 769: The Days Of Before

---

Both Lin Zihao and the two Ji brothers gave Bai Yunfei a strange look as if they weren't sure if they had heard Bai Yunfei correctly.

“Senior You?!”

It was....especially strange to hear such a title given to You Qingfeng. This young man was extremely strong, so how did it make sense for him to be addressing You Qingfeng as if he was from the younger generation?

“Uh....”

You Qingfeng felt the same way. He was slightly embarrassed by such an appellation and was in fact still trying to get over the rather abrupt events while Bai Yunfei was off chasing down the beast tamer.

The ‘Bai Yunfei’ he met before and the ‘Bai Yunfei’ standing in front of him today felt like completely different people. Only when Bai Yunfei came back did he slowly accept that it is what it was.

Here was the facts.

This person, Bai Yunfei, is the very same young man he came to know back in Jadewillow City in the Azure Cloud Province. That young man was fairly new to the world of soul cultivators and was only a Late-stage Soul Warrior at the time. He was also being bullied at the time.

You Qingfeng also remembered Bai Yunfei forcing into the Soul Sprite realm in order to be able to fight an early-stage Soul Sprite. There had been another figure, the ‘Wolf’s Child’, Hong Yin, who had helped Bai Yunfei do so by giving him a fireseed spirit mushroom, but that had nearly ended up in Bai Yunfei’s death.

And yet!

Here was that very same young man now seven years later. A

Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt! And someone who could easily kill two elite beast tamers of the same level of strength as he was!

But even more importantly, he was the same Bai Yunfei of the rumors! The Bai Yunfei from the Crafting School!

With all those thoughts swimming through his head, You Qingfeng nearly felt like he didn't even know this Bai Yunfei.

Those thoughts were made even more complicated when Bai Yunfei suddenly called him 'senior You'. It was very disorientating to be called by such a title as if he was an esteemed elder, and You Qingfeng couldn't help but even more embarrassed by the looks everyone was giving him. "Ah...Bai Yunfei...there's no need to call me senior. It's not very appropriate...."

"Ah?" Bai Yunfei blinked, unsure of what there was to be embarrassed about until a moment later. "Haha, in that case....would big brother You suffice?"

"That would be much better." You Qingfeng sighed.

He pointed to the two people next to him, "Brother Bai, let me introduce you to these two. This is the strongest student of our Wood School, Lin Zihao. And this is my junior, Xu Rui."

He pointed to Bai Yunfei next, "Zihao, this is Bai Yunfei from the Crafting School."

Lin Zihao was the strongest student of his school, but he was younger than You Qingfeng. And since he had entered the school later than You Qingfeng had, You Qingfeng was considered the senior student.

The light in Lin Zihao's eyes flickered a bit when he heard just where Bai Yunfei was from. A surprised look crossed his face before he bowed politely to him. "Ah, brother Bai from the Crafting School, it's an honor meeting you."

"Likewise." Bai Yunfei returned the greeting before he looked off to the two twins. "Big brother You, what happened? Why are we

fighting?”

Before You Qingfeng could answer, the junior named Xu Rui right by his side snorted. “Hmph, it was all calm when you left, brother Bai. We were looking for the soulgems as you said, but then those two appeared and wanted to steal them away from us. It’s a good thing senior Lin got here when he did, otherwise they would’ve took the soulgems with them and left!”

“I see...”

Bai Yunfei nodded in understanding. Stealing away the profit of another person’s hard work was a common thing in this world, especially if it was something as pricey as the soulgem of a late-stage class six soulbeast. It wouldn’t be at all weird for people to try and fight over those soulgems. Neither Lin Zihao or the two twins looked like they were really trying to kill each other, so the battle was somewhat constrained with neither side willing to kill the other for the prize.

You Qingfeng’s introduction was heard by the two brothers. Their reactions was completely identical to one another, so it wasn’t sure which one was the younger brother and which one was the older brother. Looking at one another, they nodded and silently made their retreat.

They were very clearly not willing to fight over the soulgems anymore and was making their leave.

Xu Rui snorted at the sight of them leaving. He was planning to say something but was stopped by You Qingfeng. Bai Yunfei and Lin Zihao both didn’t plan on doing anything but watch the two brothers leave, so You Qingfeng didn’t want Xu Rui to do anything.

“But senior You, they were so arrogant! Shouldn’t we teach them a lesson?” Xu Rui groused in complaint as he watched the two leave.

“We’re not here to fight other people. You and I aren’t in good

condition, do you want to waste Zihao's energy? How are we going to get the Extreme King Pills then?"

Xu Rui said nothing after that.

That left You Qingfeng free to give Bai Yunfei a better look now that the commotion had died down. "Bai Yunfei...I never would've expected that you...you've grown so much. It's really hard to believe..."

The accomplishments of Bai Yunfei was really shocking. He had only been a Soul Sprite seven years ago, and now he was a Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt.

It was hard to even describe what he was feeling. He himself was after all just a Late-stage Soul Ancestor at the time. Him reaching the level he was at was already astonishing, so Bai Yunfei's feat was practically world-defying.

"I never forgot about the justice you helped me with back in Jadewillow City, big brother You. I just never thought that I'd see you here of all places so many years later..."

A nostalgic look flitted across Bai Yunfei's eyes. Those memories of days before had been of when Bai Yunfei was very new to the world of soul cultivators before already having an unforgettable lesson etched into his bones...

"Come to think of it, I came with my master to the Crafting School two years ago. I wanted to see if the Bai Yunfei I heard about in the rumors was you, but you weren't anywhere to be found. Yuhe was with me at the time and was hoping that it'd be you. She was disappointed when you weren't there though. I recall her moping about being forgotten about by her older brother...."

"Ah....two years ago, was it? I was in Soulbeast Forest at the time..." A sweatdrop fell down Bai Yunfei's forehead. Truth be told, he really hadn't thought much about his 'sworn sister' Chu Yuhe in recent memory. To in turn have her think about him made



him feel ashamed to be called her 'sworn brother'. "How has she been lately?"

"She's doing fine," You Qingfeng smiled, "our fourth elder took her in as a student. She's very talented and is growing quickly. She's an early-stage Soul Exalt now."

"That's good....I've some time as of late, so perhaps I'll visit your esteemed school afterwards and see Yuhe."

"We'll welcome you with wide-open arms, of course! In fact, I'll have to return to the school after this matter is done, why not come with us?"

"That...I will have to decline. I've a small matter I've yet to finish."

Their conversation about the past had only lasted for a short moment since Bai Yunfei was worried about Yue Feng and wanted to catch up to him. "Big brother You, the Extreme King Pills are in that direction. Look for the glowing red mountain peaks. It's about twenty-five kilometers maybe. Are you healed enough to go?"

"Over there?!" You Qingfeng's eyes lit up with excitement, "You found it already?"

"Yes, the mountains here are blocking the line of sight, but if you travel down that way, you'll be able to see it. It's rather obvious, so you should be able to find the location quickly."

You Qingfeng gave an excited look to Lin Zihao right next to him. "This should mean we can start heading on over, Zihao. Junior Xu and I can recover our soulforce on the way. We shouldn't have any fights to worry about, so recovery won't be impossible."

"There's no time," Lin Zihao nodded in agreement, "the others will definitely be there soon. If we leave early, we can get there first hopefully."

"Will you not be coming with us, brother Bai?"

Bai Yunfei shook his head. “I have a friend I need to find first, so I’ll be splitting ways here. But I’m sure we’ll meet each other there shortly afterwards.”

Lin Zihao and the other two were a little surprised that Bai Yunfei wasn’t going straight for the Extreme King Pills, though they want to spend what little time they had to dwell on it. Without anything else needing to be said, the three of them first gave the soulgems they found to Bai Yunfei before leaving straight for where Bai Yunfei said had the Extreme King Pills.

Bai Yunfei didn’t spend much time here either. Summoning the thundertail bird to him, he headed off towards the direction Yue Feng traveled to with a great deal of haste.

It was already almost half an hour since Yue Feng left him. The battle would surely not take that long to finish, and Bai Yunfei wasn’t sure if they’d even be in the same place as he was told they’d be. He had to go over and confirm things for himself before he could try and head for the Extreme King Pills.

The area he was going for was the place where Zheng Kai and Li Yuchun were fighting. How was the fight going on between the two of them?

# Chapter 770: The Other Side

---

A good while ago while Bai Yunfei was busy fighting the beast tamers.

Yue Feng's feet were like a streak of violet light as he leapt several dozen meters at a time. Bounding through several trees with swift and dexterous movements, Yue Feng's eyes were looking even more worried by the second. He had already been sprinting for ten full minutes now, but the connection he had with his soulbeast partner was only getting fainter and fainter. This was the sign of his soulbeast partner being injured quite heavily.

Since he hadn't a level of compatibility like Bai Yunfei had with Xiao Qi, he had no way of knowing what exactly was going on. All he knew was that his soulbeast partner was sending distress signals over and over.

"Please be safe, Han Xiong....and please let sister Yuexia be safe too...."

Yue Feng repeated to himself again and again as he flew through the landscape.

"I'm close!!"

As soon as he cleared the forest and made his way onto a mountain slope, Yue Feng was happy to see that he was close to his soulbeast partner. In another burst of soulforce, he took off with renewed speed up the mountain.

Soon, the sight of a person soon made its way into his eyes.

"Yuexia!"

"Brother Yue Feng!!"

A relieved cry called out back to him a short distance away. Just about several hundred meters away, a hurried figure in blue robes came rushing out to meet him.

On the shoulder of this young figure was a white ferret and in her arms was a toy-like brown bear.

This person was Nangong Yuexia.

The two came to a stop in front of each other in one final burst of speed. Noticing the bloody robes of hers, Yue Feng's eyes grew wide. Both of his hands grabbed onto her shoulder, "Yuexia, are you alright?!"

He was already scanning her body with his soulsense. Besides her labored breathing, there didn't seem to be anything else off about her.

He sighed in relief.

But then he saw the scary wound on the brown bear's leg. All color bled away from his face at the sight.

"Han Xiong! How did you get this injured?!"

Murderous intent like none other flooded Yue Feng's eyes, "Who dares?!"

"Xiao Xiong..." Nangong Yuexia started tearfully, "Xiao Xiong was hurt when he protected me. That....that person was too strong....he's a space-type soul cultivator! We couldn't fight him..."

"A space-type soul cultivator?" Yue Feng raised an eyebrow, "What happened? Sister Yuexia, don't lie to me....what happened exactly. Who hurt you?"

Much to her own credit, Nangong Yuexia was a mentally strong girl and was able to calm down enough to tell Yue Feng her story.

"When I...realized that you and my senior weren't here when we entered, I was really worried. It was a good thing Xiao Xiong and you were able to hold contact still. We were following the connection back to you when...."

She talked about Li Yuchun and how he gave chase in trying to

kill her. Then she talked about Zheng Kai and how he stopped Li Yuchun and helped her escape.

Yue Feng's eyes were as red as fire as he listened to Nangong Yuexia's story, but he didn't do anything until she finished. Just slightly, there was also a look of shock and worry.

He looked up at the direction Yuexia came from. "Sister Yuexia, we have to go back to where they're fighting!"

"Brother Yue Feng, are you going to help him?"

"Of course! Someone else risked their life to help you escape, how could we let him fight by himself! If they're not done fighting, then I definitely want to go back and kill that bastard Li Yuchun myself!"

And that was that. Nangong Yuexia took Yue Feng with her down the path they came. When they approached a small mountain, Yue Feng could sense two strong auras currently fighting one another up ahead.

"The battle's not done yet!" Yue Feng's eyes lit up with a light of joy that quickly turned into merciless anger.

"Sister Yuexia, hide here and don't come out. I'm going to help him!"

She nodded. "Be safe, brother Yue Feng."

Suppressing his aura, Yue Feng slowly snuck up to the battlefield and tilted his head over to see what was going on on the other side of the mountain. From there, he could see a large plains, but not much else could be seen. Yue Feng's eyes widened a bit before he threw himself a half-meter over to the right.

"Blip...."

A black ray of light flew past him and landed on a large boulder just a little bit to his left, carving out a hole in it without even a sound.

Yue Feng's eyes were glued tight to the hole in the boulder, the hairs on his arms and legs rising up with cold sweat. He swung his head over to where the two people were fighting.

“Damn! This is what a battle between two space-type soul cultivators is like?!”

The troubled look on his face was kicked up a notch as he sighed to himself.

Several hundred meters ahead, Yue Feng could see two shadows flickering from one spot to another. Black energy was flying everywhere, but strangely without sound. The black energy seemed to crumble and disintegrate whenever it touched one another. Sometimes, it'd fly straight up into the skies or down into the ground. If it flew into the skies, then the black energy would dissipate after some time.

The black energy that had nearly grazed him had only just been a small ball about the size of his thumb.

The battle was already in a very intensive moment, as Li Yuchun suddenly disappeared from the ground to reappear several meters high in the sky. From there, he disappeared again to appear even higher up!

“Bz....”

The jet-black sword in his hand started to hum violently now. Soulforce was pouring out from his body in larger amounts into the sword.

One sword became two, two to four, and then four to eight....

Soon, over a hundred identically-black blades were floating all around him before he sent the command down to rain a volley of black swords onto his enemy!

“Damn! Your final move?! I have one too!!”

Zheng Kai shouted at Li Yuchun at the sight. He tossed the fan in

his hand up into the air and formed five different seals with his hands. Upon the fifth seal, he stooped his waist just slightly and flared his soulforce in preparation to unleash his move.

His right hand flew out to touch upon the face of his fan with his palm. Then, with his right foot as the axis of rotation, he began to spin around!

His rotation was hypnotic almost with his movements being like the steps to a dance. The fan in his palm flitted high and low through the air, seemingly cutting a pitch-black tear in the space behind it as it moved. Instead of flying outwards like before, the black tears only expanded in size as Zheng Kai spun around. From one meter to three, the black energy soon transformed into a 'shield'!

A parabolic parasol made of space that would protect Zheng Kai from anything above his head!

The formation of this shield was not a moon too early as the swords from Li Yuchun began to fall then. One by one, they dropped from the skies like droplets of rain to crash into Zheng Kai's shield!

Instead of both forces disappearing into nothing like before, whenever one of the black swords touched Zheng Kai's shield-like boundary, they melded into it and expanded it!

It almost looked like the falling blades of space were being absorbed into Zheng Kai's shield!

In the snap of a finger, dozens of black swords had already fallen into the shield and disappeared out from sight, proportionally expanding the shield in size!

Originally, Zheng Kai planned on just using teleportation in order to just evade the spatial blades. He couldn't let them touch him, of course, but with so many of them, it was a better idea to simply use this parabolic umbrella of space to just protect him

from the clusters of blades raining down on him!

But that wasn't all this shield was meant to do!

Since Li Yuchun had teleported far up into the skies to attack him, Zheng Kai was using his attacks to expand that shield so that it'd swallow Li Yuchun whole when he came back down!

Skywalking was impossible here, Li Yuchun's usage of teleportation was slightly slower than Zheng Kai's. It'd be all over for him if he fell down!

Li Yuchun was shocked at the sight of Zheng Kai's response. Whenever one of his swords fell into that shield, he could sense the boundless energy in his swords being transferred into the shield rather than being cancelled out!

Those swords that struck the ground rather than Zheng Kai's shield dug out a large scar over the ground in ever eerie shapes.

In the skies, the black shield was only flying higher in the skies, and a lot larger.

From a hundred meters, to two hundred meters, then three hundred meters....

The higher up the shield went, the smaller it looked from the ground below. From where Zheng Kai stood, it looked like a hole had appeared in the sky for a rather demonic sight.



# Chapter 771: Convergence

---

Soon, the black parabolic shield was practically out of sight. Underneath, Zheng Kai was reeling back from how much energy he used. Breathing heavily, he took in two labored breaths and looked up with self-pity.

“Tch, so he managed to dodge it, what a shame...”

Just about a hundred meters in front of him, Li Yuchun was standing there. His eyes were slanted in anger to glare at Zheng Kai.

Suddenly, his eyes flitted elsewhere as if he realized something behind Zheng Kai. The light in his eyes hardened.

A brief two seconds later, Li Yuchun glanced back at Zheng Kai and sneered.

The next thing Zheng Kai saw was his figure disappearing from sight. One second later, he was a good several dozen meters away with his back to Zheng Kai as he started to run.

“Eh? You’re running?!”

Zheng Kai cried out. He turned around to look at where Li Yuchun had been staring at, and then that’s when he realized the reason why.

A figure in violet was coming straight for him!

Just from the speed alone Zheng Kai could figure out this person wasn’t someone to mess with. Though he didn’t know if this person was a friend or foe to Zheng Kai or him, Li Yuchun decided it definitely wasn’t good for him and ran for it. Winning against Zheng Kai wasn’t easy, and to throw in someone strong into the mix was just asking for trouble.

That was why he ran. It was the easiest choice.

Everyone was here for the Extreme King Pills. To fight one

another was a waste of energy. That in itself was a very stupid thing to do, so Li Yuchun hadn't any qualms about turning and leaving.

Zheng Kai hadn't the same luxury. He didn't give chase to Li Yuchun and instead stared warily at the incoming person, hoping that this person wasn't also like Li Yuchun and trying to run away from someone else.

"I am no enemy of yours, my friend!"

The figure within the violet streak of light called out to Zheng Kai, who started a bit at the voice. He didn't teleport away, and neither did he drop his guard. He just stood there, staring at the incoming person.

In order to prove that he wasn't a hostile figure, Yue Feng came to a stop twenty meters away from Zheng Kai to eye at the already almost out of sight Li Yuchun. There was a sliver of hostility when he glared at Li Yuchun as if not willing to give up on the chase. But the enemy was far too fast. It was too late to give chase.

Zheng Kai stared at Yue Feng warily. "Who are you?"

Yue Feng saluted Zheng Kai in greeting, "This one is Yue Feng. You've my thanks for helping my friend, brother."

"Oh?" Zheng Kai raised an eyebrow, "Are you talking about that young miss?"

"That is correct."

Yue Feng nodded. Sending a message to his soulbeast partner through their bond, Yue Feng had the bear tell Yuexia to come running over to them.

It was only when he saw Nangong Yuexia that Zheng Kai believed in what Yue Feng had said. No longer wary of him, he saluted back to him. "You're a loyal one, brother Yue, to have come back to help me. This one is Zheng Kai. Pleased to meet you."

Yue Feng smiled.

“It only makes sense that I do. You were kind enough to help out a stranger when you didn’t need to. That is a very admirable feat.”

Nangong Yuexia had finally made it to where Yue Feng and Zheng Kai were standing then, her ears already picking up on what they were talking about before she arrived. She bowed gratefully to Zheng Kai when she arrived. “Thank you so much for saving me, big brother Zheng.”

Zheng Kai waved his hand, “Haha, don’t mind me. It wasn’t much!”

“Ah....” Yue Feng suddenly thought about something at mention of his name, “Zheng Kai....could you be from the house of Zheng from the Capital, brother Zheng?”

“I am, do you know of me, brother Yue?”

“Ah nothing...I’ve been wanting to meet you for a long time now....” Yue Feng bowed again, this time with a quick glance over to where Nangong Yuexia. He had heard of Zheng Kai’s reputation before. With that said, it didn’t really seem like he was trying to make something out of this trouble to ask for something from Nangong Yuexia.

Those rumors, he decided, were probably biased against Zheng Kai, so Yue Feng decided not to think much about them.

Afterwards, the three decided to take up a temporary shelter behind a mountain to rest. Nangong Yuexia was still focusing on treating the bear’s wounds, and Zheng Kai was sitting on the ground to recover the soulforce he had lost during the battle.

Having already warmed up a bit to Zheng Kai now, Yue Feng asked, “Brother Zheng, do you happen to know the person that ran away just now?”

“I do.”

The cold light of hostility flickered back across Yue Feng's eyes, "Whom might he be?"

"He's the heir apparent to the house of Li from the Westward River Province, Li Yuchun."

"The house of Li?" Yue Feng realized straight away which house that was. "No wonder he was so arrogant! Pah! So what if he's from the Li? He better hope he doesn't meet me again or else he's in for it!"

Zheng Kai looked a little taken aback from what Yue Feng was saying. To not fear one of the Five Families wasn't something that could be easily done. It would appear that this Yue Feng had a high status as well.

Yue Feng committed the name of Li Yuchun to memory first before focusing back on the conversation. "Since you're here, brother Zheng, you must be after the Extreme King Pills as well. With how dangerous it's getting, and if you don't mind, we could travel together. It'll do us both good, what do you say, brother Zheng?"

Yue Feng hadn't any intentions to hog the Extreme King Pills, so to look for a companion to travel with was the wisest decision. It'd help them improve their chances on getting one.

From their conversation before, Zheng Kai was told that people were already starting to kill one another to improve their own chances of getting the Extreme King Pills. Giving the question just a moment to think about, he nodded, "Alright. That works fine with me. I actually had a friend who came here before I did. But this place is as big as you said. But since he's after the Extreme King Pill like everyone else, I'll meet him again there."

"That's good. I actually have a friend waiting somewhere else. We just need to reconvene with him and then we can head towards the Extreme King Pill together."

“There’s also senior Yu Li,” Piped up Nangong Yuexia, “we should find her too.”

Yue Feng smiled to console her, “Yu Li is a very strong person. I’m sure she won’t be in any danger. What brother Zheng said is right. If we head for the Extreme King Pills, we’ll be able to find her there.”

Nangong Yuexia nodded. “Okay then. Let’s go quickly then. A lot of people came in before we did, it might be too late to get the Extreme King Pills if we don’t go now.”

Yue Feng and Zheng Kai looked at one another. They nodded and stood up to head for the direction Yue Feng said his friend was in.

Zheng Kai and Nangong Yuexia were both told by Yue Feng that prior to him arriving here, he and another person had been attacked by a group of enemies. He was able to break away from the group to hurry after Nangong Yuexia, but his friend stayed behind to take care of the others.

When Zheng Kai heard that this friend of his was able of fighting three soul cultivators and two soulbeasts of the same level, he was impressed.

“That friend of yours is a very amazing person, brother Yue. Which school might he be from?”

“Haha, he’s....” Yue Feng was about to answer Zheng Kai’s question when he swung his head over in the direction they were running in, “Hold on, someone’s coming!”

Zheng Kai noticed the presence just a split-second after Yue Feng did and looked up as well.

“Brother Bai!”

“Yunfei!”

The two called out at the same time and then looked at one another in surprise.

“You know him?!”

They cried out in unison.

Up in front, a streak of violet was flying straight for them. Bai Yunfei soon came dropping down from the thundertail bird to land in front of them. When he saw just who was there, he blinked a few times. “Brother Yue, and Ah’Kai?! How are you two with each other?”

## Chapter 772: Even More Chaos

---

One short moment later after everyone told their stories, everyone stood there in surprise at the coincidences.

Yue Feng introduced Bai Yunfei to Nangong Yuexia first, and it was from her that Bai Yunfei realized the two of them had met before back in Ventia City in a restaurant. But since neither had any strong impressions of the other, it took a while for them to realize it.

“Haha! So the friend of brother Yue who was fighting five enemies at once was you!” Zheng Kai roared, slapping Bai Yunfei on the shoulder. “And here I was thinking how stupidly strong that person was. If it’s you, that’s just normal!”

Noticing the calm aura of Bai Yunfei, Yue Feng asked, “Brother Bai, what happened to those people?”

“They won’t be a problem anymore.” Bai Yunfei quipped. “I had a little detour on my way here and had to help an acquaintance from the Wood School. I came rushing over here after that, so that’s why I’m late.”

Yue Feng was surprised by how Bai Yunfei had just said he was ‘late’. From the events he said, rushing on here from that in the time Bai Yunfei had was astonishing. That meant taking care of the five people after Yue Feng left was practically done in no time at all.

“Oh? You met You Qingfeng? Did something happen to him?” Zheng Kai asked.

“Yeah. He was in some trouble when I met him, so I helped him out. I met Lin Zihao after that. He and the other two left for the Extreme King Pills, we could probably catch up if we hurry.”

“What?” Both Zheng Kai and Yue Feng uttered, “You found where the Extreme King Pills are?”

Bai Yunfei nodded. “There’s a mountain with an entire furnace of them. It’s in that direction.”

He pointed in the direction he had just came from.

“Mountain?”

Yue Feng, Zheng Kai, and Nangong Yuexia all had a look of confusion on their faces. They hadn’t been here when the pocket first opened and so they didn’t see the mirage of where the Extreme King Pills were.

They came to understand only after Bai Yunfei told them the story.

“What are we waiting for then?” Zheng Kai announced, “We should hurry up and go! It’s going to be stolen by someone else! You’re so naive, Yunfei! You not only told the Wood School where it was, but you also let them go there first! What are you doing helping the competition!”

“Er?” Bai Yunfei smiled, “What’s wrong about it? They would’ve found out even if I didn’t tell them. It’s a little far away from where they were, but we can still catch up to them if we hurry.”

“There’s no time to lose then, let’s get going!” Yue Feng declared.

The group set out towards the Extreme King Pills after that. Since there was no way the thundertail bird could handle the weight of four people, they had the weakest one there, Nangong Yuexia, sit on it while the three males ran on the ground below. From there, Nangong Yuexia could also look out for the red glowing mountain peak Bai Yunfei had mentioned before and as well make sure the three of them weren’t going in the wrong direction.

Soon enough, Bai Yunfei and the others were near where he parted ways with the three from the Wood School. They crossed over where Bai Yunfei had killed the fat beast tamer and then continued onwards around several mountains. Without needing



much assistance from Nangong Yuexia from up above, the group was soon well on track towards their destination.

It was after they crossed over a small hillside that Yue Feng noticed the messy patch of grass to the left and the body left there.

“That makes the sixth person killed here. And it’s not the same person killing them all. The competition here is tough, it’s only getting even more chaotic the more we get closer.”

They traveled another ten kilometers before they finally came across the scar marks of what had to be a rather intense battle. There were the corpses of six people there, but up ahead was what really caught the group’s attention.

“There’s people fighting!”

Nangong Yuexia called out in surprise. The group all looked up to Nangong Yuexia to see where she was pointing before following her glance over.

Towards their right was a mountain a little too far for their soulsense to reach. As they expected, wisps of elemental energy could be seen.

They drew close enough to the mountain to see three people fighting. Of the three, it was a battle of one against two. There was also a strange sound being played in the mix.

Yue Feng squinted his eyes to look closely at the fight. “The two people there are from the Melodic School from the Fanzang Province.”

“Oh? You know of them?” Zheng Kai asked.

Yue Feng shook his head. “I don’t, but the Melodic School are experts in sound-based soul skills, as you can see.”

Zheng Kai nodded, “Should we go over, Yunfei?”

Bai Yunfei stared for a little bit before he shook his head. “We don’t know them, so we shouldn’t bother.”

The other two males nodded without saying another word. They continued onwards without even a look back. They weren't envoys of justice and didn't have the time or business to poke their nose in every battle they saw.

From far away, where the three people were fighting.

The two people who were wearing green were from the Melodic School. In the hands of one of them was a short rod of a soul armament. There were several holes in this soul armament, and whenever the person waved it, a series of sharp sounds would come out from it. In the hands of the other person was a decently-sized hammer. Rather than use these hammers on the enemy, this person was slamming the hammers together for a vibrational gong that made the skin scrawl at the sound.

The person they were fighting was a young man in all black. This was the disciple of Yun Liantian, the one known as 'Gui Su'!

Sound-based soul skills were a relatively rare type of soul skill since it required special soul armaments in order to be used. By utilizing certain elemental energies and motions, these soul skills were made even special in a series of ways.

They were incorporeal and were hard to block. It affected the ears and could induce dizziness and other side-effects almost instantly in a way similar to a soul attack.

But right now, both students of the Melodic School were alarmed. The enemy they were fighting was extremely fast and hadn't even been affected by any of the soul skills they were using!

"Damn! We messed up!"

The one waving the short rod cried out. With a nod to his companion, the two began to prime up their strongest soul skill.

"Clang."

But at that moment, the sound of metal clanging against metal could be heard as Gui Su's sword expanded in size. The rings

attached through the holes on the face of the blade started to wriggle as if being affected by the wind as soulforce gathered in it. With a swing of his blade, Gui Su sent a blade after blade of elemental wind to strike down both students!

“Woooo....”

From the top of the mountain ahead, there was a very strange sound being carried by the wind!

This type of wind was piercing to the ears and instantaneous in motion. The sound it carried resounded louder and louder with each echo, sounding more and more like the wailing of a ghost!

# Chapter 773: A Strange Man and a Terrifying Needle

---

“A sound-based soul skill!!”

One of the students cried out; the enemy was capable of a sound-based soul skill! And even more terrifying...this incoming energy was even stronger than theirs! That was saying something considering how proficient the two students were in sound-based soul skills.

Already, the screeching of the winds was assaulting their heads with stabbing pains, forcing them to clutch at their ears in pain.

“Swish! Swish! Swish....”

Blade after blade fell down from the skies to assault the two students. Try as hard as they might, the barriers of elemental energy around them was already broken down after repeated blows.

“Swoosh!!”

A sudden noise that was different to the blades of wind attacking them from all sides was heard by one of the students. Eyes widening, the student tried his best to turn and protect himself from the incoming attack, but...

It was too late! A figure in green flickered into sight ten steps behind the student, revealing himself to be Gui Su with a long sword ready to strike.

The student Gui Su appeared behind went rigid. His neck slowly revealing a red line on it, the man then spat out a mouthful of blood!

“Senior Zhao!!”

The other student cried out in horror as he watched his senior fall dead to the ground. A silent scream on his mouth now, the

remaining student turned around to try and run away.

“Meow!!”

Out of nowhere, the meowing of a cat could be heard. The student running away had caught Gui Su’s attention and whipped his head to look at him. A small black shadow could be seen flitting forward, and then the student felt something cold travel across his throat...

“Pcht...” Blood splattered out from the cut in his throat. Like his senior, the student’s eyes bugged out wildly before he too fell to the ground, lifeless.

The howling winds soon came to a stop, ushering the area back into a state of natural silence as Gui Su merely stared at the two corpses in front of him. “They overestimated themselves!” He muttered to himself.

Taking the two space rings from their corpses, Gui Su looked to the area where Bai Yunfei and the others had been. He hummed, thinking about something before leaping up the mountain and then into the nearby forest.

Not long after he disappeared, a ripple of space started to appear in the pocket. A moment after, a figure in black walked out from behind it.

This was clearly a newcomer to the pocket. He wore completely black robes with a hood that covered his face just like how Gui Su had. The first thing he did was look around the place. On the first look through, his eyes fell upon the two corpses not too far away.

He quirked an eyebrow in surprise. Studying their corpses a moment longer, a small grin appeared then on his face. “Haha, so the killings have already started? That’s good...”

As he was talking to himself, something in the corner of his eyes to his right caught his attention.

“Whoosh! Whoosh!”

Two soul cultivators, one female and one male, were coming into view on the mountain peak nearby.

The black-hooded man's eyebrow remained high in the air still at their entrance. The clothes they were wearing matched the clothes of the two corpses down there.

“Junior Zhao! Junior Tai!!”

One of them cried out. The two of them recognized the corpses on the ground, evidently.

The black-hooded man did nothing but stare with a smile as the two soul cultivators ran down to where the corpses were.

“Junior Zhao! Junior Tai!!” The taller one of the two soul cultivators howled. His entire body shook with anger and frustration as he held onto their corpses. Eyes filled with hatred, he swung over to meet the stare of the black-hooded man there. “Was it you?! Did you kill them?!”

Their corpses were still very warm. That meant their deaths hadn't been very long ago.

Much to his credit, the black-hooded man didn't falter on the glare of the other person. He merely smiled and nodded his head to speak.

“It was I.”

—That....that was his answer!

“Then you can die!!”

The tall student howled, not at all caring for the strange person in front of him. The other person had already ‘confessed’, so there was no need to do anything but fight!

Howling, the student flew forward to pounce at him like an infuriated tiger chasing its prey!

His howl even sounded very much like what a tiger would sound like, and the air was visibly shaking with how loud it was. A giant

halberd appeared in his hand when he shook it, and in a flash of gold light, the man swung his weapon down onto the hooded figure!

“Senior Jin!”

His female companion cried out. Not only was her companion rushing recklessly, there was something strange about this hooded figure.

But it was too late for her to call him back. Gritting her teeth, she took out a green longsword and ran forward to provide support.

The hooded-figure didn't look like he had any intentions of evading the man. His feet remained stuck in place, but his right arm shook slightly to take out something.

A black five-inch double-sided 'needle'.

It twirled around his fingers swiftly like a person might twirl a baton for some sort of rhythmic practice. After several rotations, the person sent it flying towards the incoming person with a flick of his wrist.

The needle flew out just as the golden halberd was dropping down on the person!

Rather than evade the halberd, the hooded-figure merely raised his left hand up to stop the blade with the palm of it!

“Crack....”

The ground beneath his feet splintered under the force of the downward swing of the halberd. But the hooded-figure was completely unharmed by it!

The man attacking him was a Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt. That combined with his huge burst in strength would've by all rights sliced straight through the other person's hand!

While that was going on, the seemingly unimportant black needle continued to fly towards the other man's face. Whatever

damages it could do seemed unimportant with how it was aimed at the left side of his abdomen and how his barrier of elemental metal would stop the needle. No matter how much the man looked at it, this black needle wouldn't do a thing to him..

But....the needle slipped through his barrier! It was as if the barrier didn't even exist! From there, it flew into the person's abdomen and straight out from the other side! Not only had the barrier failed to stop the needle, so did the soul armament the man was wearing!

Ordinarily, wounds like this wouldn't be much. The size of the wound was practically negligible as a 'superficial wound', and even commoners would probably think it was a mosquito that had bitten them.

But this needle was very clearly not something that would fit under 'ordinary' situations....

The man's face went rigid the moment the needle entered his body. The soulforce in his body came to a sluggish halt, and from where needle entered, a black wisp of energy started to flow out from it....

"Bang...." The elemental energy of the person exploded out of existence a short second after, and with a plop, the person fell face forward onto the ground!

"Senior Jin!!"

His female companion cried out in fear from behind. She had been trying to attack the hooded-figure from the other side with her sword when her senior was attacked. As she screamed, there was a squelching sound as a black line came out from the man's forehead!

It was a black needle!

Calm-faced, the hooded-figure brought his right hand up to stop the blade of elemental energy the female shot at him. Another



wave of his hand later, the black needle flew forward.

There was a thud as the female followed her senior and succumbed at the hand of the hooded figure...

# Chapter 774: Why's There So Many?

---

It took only a moment for this hooded figure to kill two Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt in the blink of an eye, and he didn't even take a single step from his starting place!

If this was the outside, a feat like this could be rationalized by saying this person was a Soul King. But this was inside the pocket, and no Soul King could be in here without the pocket collapsing. That meant this person was a Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt at strongest!

What a terrifying prospect.

There was something else about how he fought. He had exuded the aura of a Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt when he received the halberd's edge with his palm, but that was about it. The killing of the two others didn't even resonate any bit of soulforce from him. He was like a calm pool of water when the deed was done, completely tranquil and without at all exerting his true strength.

He was a Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt, but how could there be such a drastic difference in power like this between him and the others?

The only reasonable explanation available right now would perhaps be that previously unassuming black needle of his....

Killing two people without at all being stopped by elemental energy or soul armaments. Flying fast and true. And being able to be controlled after being thrown.

The most incredible aspect of the needle was how the first person had died.

Compared to him, his female companion had it lucky. Taking the needle through her forehead was without a doubt a surefire way to kill somebody, but the male had the needle go through his abdomen. No vital organ was in the proximity, and neither were there any special meridians that could be blocked. So how could

the needle have killed him just as quickly as it did with the female?

The black needle flew back to the hooded figure. He twirled the needle around his fingers a few times before finally holding it in place with his forefinger and thumb with a satisfied smile.

It was only when the needle came to a stop that something special could be seen on it. In the moment the hooded figure pinched the needle, two wisps of black smoke rose up from it as if alive. The eyes of the man shined synchronously with his soulforce pulsating, the two black wisps of smoke then transferring from the needle into his body through his palm.

A flicker of emotion traversed across the person's eyes as he 'absorbed' the wisps of smoke.

It looked as if he was...enjoying something?

"Haha, I'm barely able to use you, but the effects are great. I can't wait to completely perfect you, how strong will I become...?"

A pleased whisper escaped from him as he stored away the black needle.

He drew in his soulforce after he was done and focused on listening to his surroundings for any fluctuations in the air. "I know I felt the space tremble a moment ago...so this pocket can really only handle the soulforce of a Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt at most? Then in that case...what happens if someone stronger than that were to enter....?"

His eyes wandered over to the halberd he was holding in his left hand as he soliloquized to himself. Sneering, he tossed it down to the ground as if it were a piece of trash. At the edge of the halberd where his hand had been, several cracks could be seen....

On the inverse, on the left hand of this man was a black glove. Not even a single tear or imperfection could be seen on the palm after it was struck. This meant that the glove was a powerfully defensive soul armament.

Blocking the downward swing of the halberd couldn't be solely placed on the glove though. It still required a tremendous amount of physical strength in order to not be affected by the concussive force, which meant this hooded figure was also terrifyingly strong in the physical sense.

And yet he pulled it off as if it was nothing.

The man looked away from the corpses. Nothing of interest was to be seen there, so he opted to look at the scenery around him instead.

The surveyance of the surrounding scenery showed him something of interest. Of all the mountains in the area, only one of them had a peak glowing red. None of the other mountains or other types of landscape had anything else of extraordinary notice.

His eyes remained on the glowing red peak for a few seconds longer before they shifted slightly to the right. From there, he could see two streaks of light flying across the sky. It was clearly a flying-type soulbeast and a person riding it on top. As he thought, the two figures were flying straight for the strange peak.

“That direction, is it?” The hooded figure looked pensive. “Alright then. That’s the direction to head in, perhaps I’ll be able to find the Extreme King Pills there...”

He sighed after taking another step forward, “Can’t kill the next person I see. I’ll have to question them first...”

Without even looting the space rings or soul armaments of the two people he had just killed, the man left the area soon after.

He had been calm when he talked about the ‘Extreme King Pills’, though his face looked strangely excited when he talked about ‘killing’.

What....was he here for?

.....

On the other side with Bai Yunfei's group.

For once, Bai Yunfei felt like the saying 'running a horse dead to a faraway mountain' finally had some credence to them. He did say before that the mountain peak was roughly 'twenty-five kilometers' ahead, but now he was realizing just how off his estimate was...

About thirty-five kilometers had already been traveled by now, and the mountain peak was still 'off in the distance'....

"Dear heavens, how much longer do we have to run?!"

Zheng Kai cried out at last. "I've never run so much before in my life....f\*ck this place for not letting us use flying soul armaments! Exhausted has never meant so much to me before than now!"

At some point, even Zheng Kai was starting to pick up on the words Bai Yunfei loved to use.

"It looks like it's getting close, maybe another two or three mountains..."

Up above, Nangong Yuexia was still seated upon the thundertail bird. She looked much more relaxed than before, and a lot more healthy. All of the soulforce she had used before was more or less recovered, and she was even able to wash out the blood in her robes with her elemental water.

Zheng Kai rolled his eyes and looked enviously at the thundertail bird up above. Right now, he was thinking that life would be great if he had a flying soulbeast partner.

"I should go to Soulbeast Forest after this. I'll get the Extreme King Pill first, and then find a class seven soulbeast. And if I can't, I'll find a peak late-stage class six soulbeast and help it breakthrough....It'll definitely be a flying-type soulbeast."

Zheng Kai muttered to himself.

"There's more and more people here now..."

Yue Feng relayed to the others with just a little bit of growing concern.

From what Bai Yunfei could see in the surrounding kilometer, there were several others traveling either by themselves or in groups towards the same destination. There was even a streak of light flying through the skies above them.

“Seems like everyone has realized that mountain peak is different than the others. Everyone’s rushing on over here.”

Not only had the group seen their fair share of battle scars and such, they were also seeing plenty of soul cultivators traveling the same direction as they were. They were all maintaining a safe distance from one another so as to avoid any possible chance of conflict for until they reached where the Extreme King Pills were.

There were a few people they met earlier that were clearly up to no good. But those people were few, and even less people were willing to try and stop them in favor of paying close attention to them instead.

In the end, it took another hour before they made it over the mountains and forests to reach a large expanse of plainlands. The single mountain that shined red was now in everyone’s sights.

It was just another thousand or two kilometers more to the foot of it. Zheng Kai looked ahead with a keen eye, his mouth dropping slightly at what he saw.

“Damn, there’s that many people here already?”

# Chapter 775: Gathering

---

Now that they were close to the mountain, the group could finally see just how special it was. Standing tall at three kilometers and one kilometer in width, the peak of the mountain pierced into the clouds so that hardly anything could be seen above it.

But the most peculiar thing about the mountain was that just about five hundred meters above ground level, a faint red mist was lighting up the mountain. It floated around the entirety of the mountain at that height with the mid-section about one and a half kilometers above ground level being the most concentrated. Anything above two kilometers was the peak of the mountain.

The upper half of the mountain was extraordinarily wide, making the mountain look like it was a rather fat hourglass.

But with the red mist and clouds gathering at the top, the mountain looked as if it was a cone of cotton candy.

Bai Yunfei and his group soon made it to the base of the mountain where groups of threes and fives were. Like everyone else, they were all staring up or looking around the mountain.

A quick count gave Bai Yunfei the estimate of there being around fifty people here.

“What’s all this?” Zheng Kai clicked his tongue in surprise, “Why’s everyone down here still. I would’ve gone up the mountain to get the Extreme King Pills, are they trying to be polite and let someone else climb up first?”

As Zheng Kai mentioned, most of the people gathered here was standing at the base of the mountain. There was a few people who were standing up on the trees of the nearby forest, but that was only a slightly taller elevation.

It didn’t seem like anyone had the intention of rushing up the mountain.

“It’s strange.” Yue Feng shook his head. “There’s probably something about this mountain that makes other people unable to climb it. Let’s get over to the base first before we conclude anything else.”

“Agreed.” Bai Yunfei nodded. “ We might be late to the party, but it doesn’t seem like anyone’s gone up the mountain yet. We’ll monitor the situation carefully and see what’s going on so we can maximize our chances.”

Slowing to a stop, Bai Yunfei had the thundertail bird descend down to the ground and let Nangong Yuexia alight. Since storing the bird back into its space ring would alert everyone to that it was a soulbeast puppet, Bai Yunfei had it turn into a small sparrow. Having it hop onto his shoulder, he controlled the sparrow so it’d curl its head inwards as if it was trying to sleep, just like a regular soulbeast would.

Now that they were at the base of the mountain, Bai Yunfei could see everyone else staring at them. The arrival of a group was an annoyance to everyone else, as that meant it was just another challenger.

Sizing up the people there, Bai Yunfei and the others then decided to head for an empty patch of ground to set up base.

“Ol’Bai! Ol’Bai!! Over here!!”

A loud but happy voice called out to Bai Yunfei then. All eyes shifting towards the source, everyone saw a young man in violet jumping up and down on the boulder he was standing on and waving his hand violently.

Surprised to have someone call out to him, Bai Yunfei jerked his head over towards the source. When he saw just who it was, he smiled in excitement, “Mingfeng!”

It was the person he had entered this pocket with in the first place: Jing Mingfeng!



Following his gaze over, the people with Bai Yunfei took a moment to realize what was going on. “You know him?” Zheng Kai asked.

“Ah yeah, I do. Let’s head on over.” Bai Yunfei nodded and strode on over.

It was only when he drew close to Jing Mingfeng that he realized there were several other people standing with him.

“Big brother You? Zhong Liyan?”

The people standing with Jing Mingfeng were from the Five Elements Schools, the Wood, the Fire, and the Metal! Of the group, Bai Yunfei could recognize You Qingfeng and his other two fellow students, and also Zhong Liyan from the Fire School.

Jing Mingfeng waited for Bai Yunfei to actually be within arm’s reach before he chuckled out loud. “You’re a slow one, Ol’Bai. I’ve been waiting for you for a while now.”

“Haha, it was a little chaotic when I came in. How went things on your side?”

“I didn’t know which way to go at first, but I managed to learn about this mountain after a while. Zhong Liyan and I came across each other at first, and then we met several others from the Metal School. By the time we came here, the three from the Wood School arrived as well, so we grouped together.”

Zhong Liyan took this moment to stride forward two steps in greeting. “Long time no see, brother Bai.”

“Brother Zhong, it’s been a long time indeed. “Bai Yunfei greeted back, nodding to You Qingfeng and the others.

Jing Mingfeng gave a brief look at Zheng Kai and the others, “Ol’Bai, these are...?”

“They’re friends of mine. This is Zheng Kai, this is Yue Feng, and this is Nangong Yuexia.”

He waved his hand at Jing Mingfeng, “This is my friend, Jing Mingfeng.”

“Zheng Kai?!” Jing Mingfeng’s eyes flew wide open in recognition, “Are you the Zheng Kai, the ‘Sex Lord’ from the Capital?!”

“Ah....” Zheng Kai grimaced slightly in embarrassment at the nickname, “Haha, that’s me.”

“Haha!! I’ve been wanting to meet you for a long time, a very long time now!” Zheng Kai chortled with laughter as he shook his hand. “I’ve heard legends of master Zheng every now and then, but I never thought that I’d actually meet you myself, what an honor, haha!!”

Though his eye twitched at hearing the implications of what kind of stories Jing Mingfeng meant, Bai Yunfei turned away to introduce Yue Feng to You Qingfeng and the others before he in turn was introduced to the people from the Metal School.

Soon enough, the entire group sat below an extremely tall tree to talk with one another.

“How long have you been waiting here, Mingfeng? Why haven’t you gone up the mountain? Why hasn’t anyone else?”

Bai Yunfei finally asked the most important question.

“Well....” Jing Mingfeng sighed. “It’s not that we don’t want to go up, it’s that....we can’t go up.”

“Can’t go up?” Bai Yunfei stared quizzically, “What do you mean?”

Jing Mingfeng pointed at the red mist hovering halfway up the mountain. “That mist....it’s weird. We can’t go through it.”

“Can’t go through it? Is it dangerous in there?”

“No no, it’s not dangerous,” Jing Mingfeng shook his head, “but that ‘mist’ is disorientating. If anyone goes in, they’ll come back

out sooner or later.”

Bai Yunfei was mystified, “Come back out? Do people get lost in there? Do they not walk in a straight line or something? How do they come back out the same direction?”

“That’s the weird part.” Jing Mingfeng explained, “Visibility is practically nil in there. You can’t see anywhere past ten steps, and soulsense is kaput beyond a hundred meters. Even if they walk straight, they somehow manage to walk back to where they originally started.

“No one’s been able to make it through as far as I know.” Jing Mingfeng pointed at the mist, “Because they’ve all walked back out shortly after they tried.”

Following his finger, Bai Yunfei saw two people come walking back out from the mist. They were familiar to Bai Yunfei, he had seen them just not too long ago at the base of the mountain. At some point while Bai Yunfei was distracted in the conversation, they must’ve tried to enter the mist and were only just walking back out.

The two of them look perplexed. Staring at one another and then the mist, they sighed walked back down the mountain.

With mist that blocked not only eyesight but soulsense, this mountain was definitely an enigmatic one. It was even stranger than Black Cloud Valley and the Underworld School’s strange way of navigating through it.

Speaking of the Underworld School, would they by chance be able to unravel the secret of this mountain?

From what he heard from Zheng Kai, Xu Ran and Han Yue had both entered the pocket as well. He hadn’t seen either of the two since he came in, so either they weren’t here yet, or they were on the other side of the mountain.

It took his group half the day to get here. Now that they were

here though, they weren't able to walk up the mountain and could only wait for further notice. It was a very worrisome situation that made them all feel helpless.

What in the world was going on here? Are the Extreme King Pills really at the peak of this mountain?

# Chapter 776: Spatial Barrier

---

After digesting the information Jing Mingfeng told him, Bai Yunfei had a pensive look on his face. “If the mist is so strange and can’t be walked in, then what about...flying?”

He pointed a finger up, “If we use a soulbeast that can fly to go over the clouds, we should be able to get to the top straight away, right?”

Though he asked the question, Bai Yunfei had more or less the answer to it already. There were plenty of people with flying soulbeasts gathered here, but none of them were seemingly in a rush to go up. That meant there was something else about this place that didn’t make that option possible.

Jing Mingfeng shook his head, of course. “We wouldn’t even be here if the answer was that simple. In the skies above is...”

His finger pointed upwards, “A spatial barrier.”

“Spatial barrier?!” It wasn’t Bai Yunfei that cried out in shock, but Zheng Kai. “A spatial barrier here? What kind is it?”

“What kind?” It was Jing Mingfeng’s turn to look surprised. “Are there different types to spatial barriers, then?”

“Of course.” Nodded Zheng Kai. “The most basic ones aren’t any different than ones made from elemental energy. It’s just like a wall, but one that can be easily broken just like any other. Another type of spatial barrier is one that can transport objects or people just like a door. When you step from one side to the other, you’re sent somewhere else. But it’s not so easy to transport people through these types. These barriers have multiple layers of space folded in on it so that walking in between these spatial barriers is like walking on a line. If you step out of line, you’ll find yourself in multiple folds of space at once, and that basically means you’ll physically be in different places at once. That means an ugly death

beyond everything else...”

The very moment the topic of spatial barriers was brought up, Zheng Kai adopted the persona of a scholarly figure to explain all about it.

“Uh....” Jing Mingfeng was struck speechless by the amount of knowledge being imparted on him. “In that case...this barrier is probably the second one you’re talking about. Whenever someone tries to fly a little within five hundred meters of the mountain, they end up disappearing and reappearing on the other side of the mountain.”

“Really now?” Zheng Kai nodded knowingly, “Must be a spatial fold then. It’s a bit similar to how Soul Kings can teleport. They rip open a tear in space and walk through it to travel a kilometer away to travel through another fold in space. By walking through the two folds, you’re basically ignoring whatever’s in the middle. This side and the other side of the mountain are connected to the same plane of space, but the mountain is detached. To fly into that space barrier will mean being forcibly entered through the fold in space to come out from the other side...now that I think about it, entering the mist and coming back out is the same result of entering a spatial fold.”

He sighed at the end of his explanation. “But....I’ve never heard of a spatial barrier with a fold as large as this. Just how strong does someone have to be make something like this...?”

Bai Yunfei didn’t really understand the explanation a hundred percent, but he gave Zheng Kai a slap on the shoulder, “You’re quite educated on this.”

He sighed as well, however. “But in short, we can’t fly, and we can’t walk into the fog. There has to be some sort of special way to be able to get through that fog. We’ll need extensive research in order to find even a clue...”

Yue Feng nodded, “It makes sense though. If the Extreme King

Pills were hidden in an ordinary place without any protection, I'd have second doubts on its authenticity..."

"No time to waste then. Let's prepare to see what we can find inside the mist." Bai Yunfei suggested after a moment's thought.

He turned his head to look at the other groups around them, "Besides...it seems like everyone else has the same ideas as we do. They're all looking quite impatient..."

Just like he said, several people around him were already starting to head up the mountain in varying places.

Zhong Liyan nodded, "Alright! We won't get the Extreme King Pills by thinking about it here, let's go on into the mist ourselves!"

Lin Zihao looked a little hesitant on his side, however. "But all of us going in at once would be a little conspicuous. It won't do us much good if we go in all at once, why don't we...go in from two different routes?"

Was that not the case? They had about a dozen people in their group, which was to say they had the largest number of people in one place out of everyone here. The gathering of so many people in one group was a huge threat to the others, and many of them were already making another attempt up the mountain because of their fear of this group. To have so many people in one group meant that the chances for everyone else to get the Extreme King Pill would be very low...

Lin Zihao's suggestion had a second reason to it. If by chance they didn't split up and found the Extreme King Pills, there was a possibility there wouldn't be enough pills for them all. An outcome like that would be extremely awkward to have. The Five Elements Schools could at least trust each other to work together for the Extreme King Pills, but Zheng Kai and Jing Mingfeng on the other hand...

It was a lot harder to say in their cases. Complete trust was an

impossibility, and Jing Mingfeng would surely think the same as them.

This second reasoning wasn't something the entire group didn't get. They all nodded, and Bai Yunfei said nothing about it. He nodded at Zheng Kai and Jing Mingfeng, "We'll split the group in two then. After we exit, we'll come back here and share what we learned so we can figure out the secret faster."

Since no one disagreed, they all split up with one group being the three students from the Wood, the two from the Fire, and three from the Metal for a total of eight. There was actually a third from the Fire School, but that person wasn't here. Whether he wasn't here yet or met an untimely demise had yet to be seen...

"Let's go then."

Bai Yunfei nodded to Zheng Kai. He and his group headed for the same direction after bidding good luck to the other group to walk in to the mist.

"Yuexia, don't do anything else but follow us, alright?"

Yue Feng warned Nangong Yuexia the moment they started for the mountain. There was no way Yue Feng would leave her by herself, so the only option left was to bring her with them. Yue Feng would pay attention to her just in case there was a chance of danger. Even if it meant not getting the Extreme King Pills, the safety of Nangong Yuexia was his first priority.

He had something else he was worried about as well actually. This entire time they had been at the base of the mountain, Yue Feng had been looking around for someone, but try as hard as he might, he couldn't find Yu Li anywhere. Whereas he wasn't worried before, Yue Feng was now thinking to himself where she could be or if she was still safe...

"Don't worry, brother Yue Feng, I can protect myself." Nangong Yuexia nodded seriously.



With everything set, the group stepped onto the beaten path up the mountain. Soon, the group disappeared out of sight behind the mist...

# Chapter 777: Within the Fog

---

The ground beneath their feet was stone and dirt, and the surrounding air was a crimson mist for as far as the eyes could see. Left or right, only those three things could be seen.

Already ten minutes had gone by since Bai Yunfei and his group of four entered the mist. Their travel pace was practically a crawl so that they could slowly take in everything they could. But even after walking hundreds of steps it didn't seem like anything had changed. If not for the linear motion they were walking in, the group would've thought they were walking in circles.

What they could sense however, was the auras of the other groups of soul cultivators walking nearby. It was fuzzy with all this mist as interference, and as time went on, those auras drew farther and farther away until they couldn't be felt anymore.

It was as if Bai Yunfei's group was the only one on the mountain.

“Ah’Kai, how’s it looking?”

Having been looking around the place intently, Bai Yunfei decided to ask Zheng Kai for his thoughts.

Bai Yunfei and Zheng Kai were standing at the front of the group with Yue Feng and Nangong Yuexia in the middle and Jing Mingfeng taking on the responsibility of being the vanguard. He was also tasked with the mission of leaving a deep impression of his foot every few steps or so so to mark their way.

Prompted by Bai Yunfei's asking, Zheng Kai shook his head to share his thoughts. “Can't sense anything. I don't even sense any spatial energy.”

“We've already walked for half a kilometer around,” Yue Feng piped up from behind them, “If we convert that to height, we must be about three hundred or four hundred meters above ground level around. Aside from our eyesight and soulsense being hindered, I

can't really sense anything different. Are we just lucky, or is this the right path?"

"The mist is getting thicker and thicker. We're most likely at the midway point as you say. Let's keep going then."

It was going exactly as Jing Mingfeng said it would. Not only could they hardly see ten steps away, they couldn't even use their soulsense to scan past a hundred meters.

This feeling was exactly like what Bai Yunfei felt back in Black Cloud Valley, and that was extremely perplexing to him.

"You know, if not for the fog being white instead of black, I would've thought we were back in Black Cloud Valley..." Zheng Kai muttered to Bai Yunfei.

"Oh? You've been to Black Cloud Valley before, brother Zheng?!" Yue Feng spoke out in surprise.

Zheng Kai nodded. "Yes. We were there befo—wha?! Hold on, stop!"

He came to a screeching halt, startling everyone in the group into listening to what he said.

Heart skipping a beat, Bai Yunfei stared at him, "What is it?"

Zheng Kai looked around himself warily, his face very pale and suspicious, "We just....walked into a spatial barrier...."

"What?!"

Everyone in the group cried out. Jing Mingfeng whirled around at once to confirm it for himself, "It's true! My footprints are gone!"

"But...." Bai Yunfei was thunderstruck. He scanned the area in desperate hope for a clue, "How is this possible? We didn't sense any spatial energy before this!"

"Haha....speak for yourself. I felt a sliver of it the moment we stepped across." Zheng Kai looked even more surprised than Bai

Yunfei, his eyes were glistening with excitement. “This is crazy, an undetectable transportation barrier, who could do such a thing?”

“Then where are we now? Should we try and walk back to where we came in from?” Jing Mingfeng asked, “We could at the very least confirm the distance traveled, can’t we?”

“We’re most likely brought down to a lower level than where we used to be. Have you noticed that the mist around us isn’t as thick anymore?”

He turned his head back to look up, “I think we should keep on going and try a few more times. There’s no danger here so far, so we might as well try a few different roads.”

And so the group decided to walk ahead again. This time, they were far more cautious and careful by stopping every hundred steps to concentrate on sensing for any spatial energy.

It wasn’t until another twenty minutes when Zheng Kai cried out again that everyone stopped. Jing Mingfeng looked behind for his steps as soon as he heard Zheng Kai, “The footprints are still here, we haven’t been transported!”

“Of course. But if we walk just a few steps more it’ll be gone.” Zheng Kai stared grimly at the space ahead. “If I’m right, then right in front of us is a spatial barrier!”

“Really?!” Bai Yunfei quirked an eyebrow, “You can sense it?!”

“I’m not a hundred percent sure....but should we try it out??”

Bai Yunfei and Yue Feng looked at one another for a moment before they nodded.

They were already transported once down the mountain. The peak was out of his grasp for now so it was well worth a shot to try it out.

“Alright, follow closely, everyone!” Zheng Kai nodded to Bai Yunfei and the others before stepping forward.

“Nothing...nothing....nothing...let’s keep going...”

Zheng Kai remarked on the changes he was feeling with each step he take. It wasn’t until the fifth step that his eyes shined with light, “It’s changed!!”

The hearts of everyone skipped a beat. Jing Mingfeng, whose hand had been on Yue Feng’s shoulder the entire time, let out a cry of surprise, “Damn!! The footprints are gone! The ground is different!”

Confused, Bai Yunfei put a finger to his chin to think. Even though he had been focusing so much on trying to sense for any external energies, Bai Yunfei hadn’t been able to sense it. If not for Zheng Kai, Bai Yunfei would’ve even known they walked through a spatial barrier.

It wasn’t just shock that was in Zheng Kai’s eyes. He was also excited for some reason, like a young child staring at a new toy for the first time in his life. “This isn’t a ‘single-layered’ type spatial barrier, it’s a ‘channel’ type barrier....and taking in account for the spacing between us all? It’s not a coincidence....this barrier adapts from case to case?! How in the...?”

“Ah’Kai, what are you talking about? What’s a ‘single-layer’, what’s a ‘channel’? What do you mean adapt?” Bai Yunfei groused, not quite understanding what Zheng Kai was talking about.

“Normal transportation barriers are like doors. In those cases, Yue Feng who was in front of us wouldn’t have been able to see us. But this was different. That’s because this barrier has ‘thickness’ to it. It was only after we walked through the entire depth of the barrier that it transported us to somewhere else.”

“It can get that complicated?”

“Yes. But the most important thing is that this time the thickness of the barrier was as long as our group itself. It’s too unlikely to be a coincidence, that...that means...”

As if he couldn't even find the words to describe this strange phenomena, it took Zheng Kai two seconds to actually say what he wanted to say.

“That means there's someone intentionally controlling the barrier!!”

## Chapter 778: 'Leaving' the Fog?!

---

Thunderstruck, everyone rounded onto Zheng Kai with wide-open eyes, “Someone’s controlling it?! No way!” Bai Yunfei exclaimed.

“I felt the same way.” Zheng Kai replied quizzically. “As I was saying, this pocket was said to be unopened for at least a thousand years or so. What kind of person would be able to live for that long? Furthermore, we never saw even a single soulbeast on our way here, didn’t we? And this pocket’s unsteady nature has already seen to it that only Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt are allowed entry.”

“But that spatial barrier.” Bai Yunfei replied.

“I can only guess that this is some sort of ‘array’ that adapts based on the number of people walking in. I heard long ago that many of the strong were capable of constructing arrays that were ‘intelligent’ in nature. They could do many things depending on many different factors. Those arrays are mostly gone now, but it still remains to be seen if this is one of those types of ancient arrays.”

Arrays. A long-lost relic of the past that was very rare on the continent. The way to ‘create’ these arrays were long lost to the world, and very few arrays were even made, much less survived the passage of time.

It was said that the Five Elements Schools had a set of arrays for their own special elements and were known as the highest quality arrays known to public knowledge. There were also a few major families or schools that had their own arrays, such as the protective array of the Underworld School, which too, was a relic from the ancient past.

Bai Yunfei thought back to the way how the Illusion Stones had been placed in very specific coordinates. It was something similar

to an array, but it wasn't quite there yet.

"If it's something that old, do we even have a chance of unraveling it then?" Bai Yunfei asked.

It'd probably take a Soul King erudite in order to crack the code behind an array this mysterious. But everyone in the pocket was people of the next generation of soul cultivators. As powerful as they were, they hadn't the skill or knowledge to unravel the mysteries of long before.

"Can't say. I think I might have a guess actually."

No one expected Zheng Kai to say that, but it was Jing Mingfeng who voiced the question. "What? You know a way to bypass this array, brother Zheng?!"

"A way to bypass it?" Zheng Kai smiled in self-deprecation. "It's only just a guess. I'd need to try it out a few times before I have anything solid to go on. Shall we test it out then?"

"Alright!!"

Bai Yunfei and the others nodded. All their hopes were on Zheng Kai right now since he was the only person proficient in space. Hopefully, he'd be able to unravel its secrets and find a way to bring them to the top of the mountain.

Time trickled slowly by as the group traveled through the mist once again. Several times had they been transported by the barrier, but with each repetition did Zheng Kai learn more and more about the barrier. There were times where he'd cry out loud at a realization, much to the shock of the others before growing silent again to think. No one dared to interrupt his thinking process either and chose to just follow behind him silently.

After well over an hour of walking in the unchanging scenery, even Bai Yunfei had had enough. If it had been an ordinary mountain, they would've at the top a long time ago. But they were still at the waist of it and were still an unknown measure of time



away from it.

“Stop!”

Zheng Kai cried out. Everyone stopped. Only when Zheng Kai said ‘stop’ did everyone know there was a barrier in front of them.

Zheng Kai looked carefully at the area in front of them, his soulsense scanning the surrounding area for any fluctuation in energy or something. He extended his hand outwards as if groping or pressing against an invisible wall.

It was taking Zheng Kai a little longer to research the barrier this time. After one long minute of silence, he strode rightwards ten steps with a bright eye. He gave a knowing look at Bai Yunfei and the others and then strode forward.

Following right behind him, the group noticed a slight difference this time. Jing Mingfeng noticed it first when he saw his footprints still there even after ten steps into the area where the barrier should’ve been. None of them had been transported anywhere.

Zheng Kai called for them to stop again after ten minutes of walking. His right hand extended outward for that same motion. Then like if turning the handle of something, he motioned for everyone to head a hundred meters to the left and then back onto their original direction.

This stop and go path forward continued for an hour, but no longer were Bai Yunfei and the others feeling tired. They were all looking very excited!

They hadn’t been transported even once since Zheng Kai first started his strange motioning!

“Has Zheng Kai figured out a way to bypass the spatial barrier? Are we really going to be able to head up to the mountain peak?!” Everyone had the same excited thought on their minds.

Aside from Zheng Kai, Bai Yunfei had been the one most ‘thorough’ on his investigation of the mist around them. He was

also the first to realize that the mist was getting thinner and thinner, much to his own relief.

It really did seem like the final portion of the misty mountain was coming to the end. Would they really be coming to the peak of the mountain soon?!

After another twenty minutes of walking, everyone realized then a bright spark of light up ahead!

“Damn! You’re kidding me?! Are we really out of the mist?! Are we at the top?!” Jing Mingfeng was the first to voice his shock.

Yue Feng looked similarly excited. “Could it possibly be?! Let’s keep going!!”

Their footsteps quickened. The white light was getting brighter and brighter, and everyone’s mood getting lighter and lighter. The fog was already very thin and faint, and soon, everyone could see a rough outline of the skies above!

At last, everyone could see clearly what was in front of them and as well as what was around them. There were a few boulders and plant life on the ground, and the sun was shining brightly in the sky above them.

“Haha! We’re really out of there! Are we at the top?!” Jing Mingfeng hooted out loud with joy.

As he took one step forward, Jing Mingfeng had barely any time but to utter a quick squalk of confusion before face-planting into the ground!

Bai Yunfei and the others had all been extremely excited just like Jing Mingfeng when they stepped out from the fog. But when they took that step forward like Jing Mingfeng, they too felt their expressions stiffen on their face.

Feeling as though the sky was spinning and the earth shaking, everyone’s feet buckled and dropped them mercilessly to the ground. Something strange had dropped onto their minds, forcing

them to lose their sense of balance and dropping them to the ground!

Bai Yunfei stumbled forward from his sudden loss of balance, but his reaction was quick and he was able to stagger forwards two steps and reorientate himself.

By the time he was able to do so, he looked back up only to have his eyes open wide at what he saw!

“Damn!! No way?! What in the world is this?!” Zheng Kai cried out in shock at the same time as Bai Yunfei noticed.

## Chapter 779: Leaving Without A Prize

---

The moment Bai Yunfei and the others stepped out from the mist, their feet drew forward in expectancy of climbing up. But instead of that, their feet met with air! Without a foothold, the group fell down to the ground!

In front of them was a large expanse of the flat ground, and behind them, the very same mountain they had been trying to scale....

They weren't at the top of the mountain, they were at the bottom where the entrance to the mist was!

After walking several hours and winding several twists and turns, they were pushed back to their starting point!

“What’s going on....?”

Now that everyone was back on their feet and able to see what was around them, they were in shock at what they were seeing. “We were...walking ‘up’ the mountain the entire time, weren’t we? Why are we....”

When they were in the mist, the group could at the very least confirm that they were traveling up by the incline of the ground beneath them. There is a stark difference in the sensation of walking ‘up’ or ‘down’ a mountain, and everyone could tell that they were walking the former.

It was when they reached the point beyond the fog and near the ‘top’ when everyone was assaulted by the strange bout of dizziness and realized they were at the bottom of the mountain again. And not only that, they had been walking downwards as well...

“Changing the direction of gravity....we’ve been tricked by the array!” Bai Yunfei realized after taking a moment to think about it. “I’ve battled with a soulbeast who could do something similar to this. Not only can that mist hinder visibility and soulsense, but it

can also change how we feel gravity! The array made it so we couldn't tell if we were going up or down the mountain....”

“Seriously?! No way!?” Jing Mingfeng howled in vexation, “Isn't that crazy?! Who'd be able to make it to the top then!?”

“Ugh...doesn't seem like we'll be able to figure out how to get the Extreme King Pills in a short amount of time...” Bai Yunfei sighed. “We all must be tired after walking for so long in the mist? Let's take a break for now and think about what to do next.”

Dismayed, everyone walked away from the entrance to the mist with some giving one last look at it. With a sigh and shake of the head, they turned away.

“Hm? This isn't where we came up the mountain from!” Jing Mingfeng spoke out after several steps, “I remember there being a giant tree nearby, where is it?!”

Bai Yunfei looked around the area. He didn't seem as surprised as Jing Mingfeng. “We're probably on the other side of the mountain. With all that misdirection and transportation going on, we must've walked to the other side of the mountain instead.

“Should we go back to the other side and group up with the other party then?” Yue Feng asked.

“We don't know how they're doing, but it's probably not any different than what we learned. It'd be a little bit pointless to go back....” Bai Yunfei said, “We're here now anyway, they'll probably be transported elsewhere and won't go back to their original point. And with how large this mountain is, it'd be hard to find them...forget it, let's stay here for now.”

By the base of the mountain further down were a few others—roughly twenty or so people with several in groups. Like Bai Yunfei's group, these people had also tried their hand in trying to scale the mountain but were unable to do so.

Nangong Yuexia's eyes lit up when she saw something from the

corners of her eyes. Excitement filled her person before she pointed out at a person standing not too far away, “Senior Yu Li!!”

“What?! Where!?” Yue Feng was the first to respond.

He followed Nangong Yuexia’s pointing to the group in front, “It really is her!”

Surprised, Bai Yunfei and the other two with him looked as well. Just about several hundred meters away from the mountain, a woman in light green robes could be seen. She had long hair that reached to her waist like a miniature waterfall that swayed a bit from left to right whenever she moved. But the truly ‘breathtaking’ sight for the males was her physical stature.

But she wasn’t alone. By her side was four other males who seemed to be talking to her about something. They were also starting to spread out in a way that made it seem like they were trying to prevent her from escaping.

“Is it trouble?” Zheng Kai asked.

Yue Feng’s eyebrows furrowed together. Without even a word, he flew straight towards Yu Li with Nangong Yuexia in close pursuit.

“We should follow them.” Bai Yunfei spoke to Jing Mingfeng and Zheng Kai before the three took off to follow.

Having five people rush towards the same destination was something that caught the eyes of many people there, including the four males trying to surround Yu Li. By the time Yue Feng was down the mountain and just two hundred meters away, the group of four was already heading away from Yu Li, clearly intimidated by the group’s coming.

When she saw both Yue Feng and Nangong Yuexia, Yu Li’s eyes lit up with joy. Since those four males were gone, she could freely walk up to meet the two.

There was a swishing sound as Yue Feng came to a sudden stop in

front of Yu Li, “Yu Li, are you alright?”

“I’m fine.” She smiled.

Yue Feng looked at the four men now several hundred meters away from them. “Who were they? Were they trying to do something to you?” A dangerous glint shined in his eyes.

Yu Li glanced over to the four for a brief moment. “Just a couple of wandering soul cultivators. They saw I was by myself and wanted me to go with them. I refused, but they kept insisting. You were coming over just as I was refusing them....”

“Senior!!”

Nangong Yuexia flew forward then to tackle the woman into her arms, “You’re finally here! We’ve been looking for so long!”

Yu Li let a sigh of relief at the sight of Nangong Yuexia. “I was looking for you too. It makes me glad to see you safe and sound...”

She turned to look at Bai Yunfei and the other two males by Yue Feng’s side, “And these are...?”

“Ah, they’re some friends I met along the way.”

Yue Feng waved at the three, “This is Yu Li, the senior of Yuexia.”

It was only now that they were up close Bai Yunfei was able to see what Yu Li looked like, and he was pleasantly surprised to see her.

She was a beautiful young woman with tender white skin tones. Her entire person, demeanor or physique, was graceful and lithe with the right amount of curves in the right amount of places. There was a small red mole just above her left eyebrow, but that only added to her appeal.

Yu Li looked surprised when Yue Feng mentioned Bai Yunfei’s name, “Bai Yunfei? Might he be the same Bai Yunfei from the Crafting School?”

“The very same.” Yue Feng nodded.

“Hey Ol’ Bai,” Jing Mingfeng nudged him, “You’ve become quite famous. Everyone seems to know you. I’m even more handsome than you but everyone seems to gravitate towards you.”

“My thoughts exactly.” Zheng Kai nodded enviously.

“.....”

“Let’s find a place to sit down and rest, we can talk then.” Yue Feng pointed to a nearby patch of grass with relative distance from the other soul cultivators here.

The group walked on over to the area and were preparing to sit down when Zheng Kai suddenly pulled a decently-sized jade table out from his space ring. Out came enough seats for everyone there before he started to place fruits and other foodstuffs onto the table. “Nearly forgot about this stuff,” he gestured for everyone to sit, “please sit down, we can talk while we eat and drink.”

His thoughtfulness was surprising to see, but everyone had a grateful look in their eyes as they sat down.

Zheng Kai smiled. “Hehe....it’s something I normally use anyhow....Yunfei, start a fire and boil some tea will you...”

“.....”

While Bai Yunfei sought to boil the tea, Yu Li raised her head to look at the mountain. “How long have you been here, Yue Feng? Did you come down from the mountain?”

Yue Feng nodded. “We arrived just half a day ago and decided to go up the mountain.”

“Did you make it to the top? Were the Extreme King Pills there?”

“The Extreme King Pills are probably up there, but no one’s been able to get to the top because...”

He explained the situation about the mist and mountain succinctly to Yu Li.

“We don’t have a clue right now how to get to the top of the



mountain. Maybe if we try a few more times, we'll find something or some way to bypass the array."

"What do you plan to do next time then?"

"We....we're not sure yet." Yue Feng shot a glance to Bai Yunfei at that.

Bai Yunfei, in turn, looked to Zheng Kai, "Ah'Kai, have you any clues about the mist or barrier?"

He was responded with a shake of the head.

"I think I have a rough outline on the details, but it's rough as I said. There's not much information to go on. We'd have to try several more times before I can get a better idea on how the spatial energy is fluctuating before I learn anything new..."

"Well let's take a rest for now then. We can keep investigating later." Bai Yunfei nodded.

The conversation soon veered off into a more general and broad range of topics. Each person talked about what they had come across when they came into the pocket.

And when the mood was finally very comfortable and happy...

"Ah!!"

A scream was coming from the mountain!

# Chapter 780: The Reaper Approaches

---

The abruptness of the scream saw to everyone swinging their heads over at the source at once.

“Roar!!”

A bear’s roar could be heard as well. All everyone saw was a tremendous black bear just at that moment stabbing its claws into a person’s chest and swing him up! Still screaming, the person had barely any time to react before the bear tore the person in two like how one would tear open a bag!

Despite the relative distance between this sight and Bai Yunfei’s group, the sight was unbearably grisly to parts of the group. Nangong Yuexia for example, let out a cry of alarm and shielded her eyes from it.

“Lin Dongxiao! You demented person! We were only ju—urk!!”

A horrified voice boomed out to rebuke another, but he wasn’t even halfway done with his sentence before something golden came crashing into him. A giant tiger had snapped the man up into its mouth and bit down onto his upper half, killing the man instantly!

The mountain grew quiet again now that those two people were dead. Everyone watched as the two soulbeasts disappeared from sight. There was a shrill bird’s cry before a white crane came descending from the skies with a man in purple sitting on it.

.....

“It’s Lin Dongxiao!”

“The junior headmaster of the Beast Taming School, Lin Dongxiao! Didn’t he head up the mountain an hour ago, what’s he doing back down here?”

“What in the world happened? Why’d he go and kill two people

for?”

“I’m pretty sure those two people were from the house of Qi from Expleta City in the Southward River Province, what did they do to Lin Dongxiao to piss him off?!”

“What a brute Lin Dongxiao is! It’s already a gentleman’s agreement to not fight each other here, but there he goes killing two people! Does he think the Beast Taming School is invincible?!”

“They aren’t, but they’re not people we can annoy either. Don’t let him catch what you’re saying, or else you’ll be the next one to die...”

“There used to be four beast tamers here, but Lin Dongxiao is by himself. I heard the other three were already killed by someone. That must be why Lin Dongxiao looks so angry. The next person to piss him off won’t be dying in one piece...”

“What what? Really? The beast tamers were killed?! But how! The strongest ones here are only Late-stage Soul Exalts, we’re at a disadvantage against the Beast Taming School and their ability to use so many soulbeasts at once. How could they be killed? Did an entire group ambush them?”

“Who knows? I’m only repeating what I heard...pah, they’ve been treating the rest of us like scum. I met one of the beast tamers when I got in and had to flee for my life. If they’re really dead then....I’d like to thank whoever did it...”

Lin Dongxiao’s entrance caused no small amount of stir in the community here. People from all over started to talk about what they had witnessed while maintaining a fearful stare at the still-flying Lin Dongxiao. As angry or discontent they were with Lin Dongxiao’s actions, they were still afraid of being caught by him.

.....

“Lin Dongxiao...So he’s here as well. And here I thought he’d be off at the edge of the pocket instead of here.”

Jing Mingfeng tsked. The fact that Lin Dongxiao was sitting on top of his crane and being protected by another two late-stage class six soulbeasts and having that look on his face seemed to annoy Jing Mingfeng.

Bai Yunfei was surprised as well. He remembered seeing Lin Dongxiao running off in the opposite direction of the Extreme King Pills when he first entered. He must've heard from someone else and turned back. Judging from his positioning, Lin Dongxiao must've come out from the mist as well.

“Beast tamers?” Yue Feng had a look of annoyance on his face, “I remember coming across one back in Soulbeast Forest. He was an arrogant annoyance.”

His impression of the Beast Taming School wasn't very high as it would seem.

“Why's it only Lin Dongxiao? I remember he came with three others, didn't he?” Jing Mingfeng asked.

A sadistic gleam entered Jing Mingfeng's eyes, “Did they come across someone even stronger than they were and got themselves killed?”

“.....”

Bai Yunfei sipped his tea without a word.

There was no way he'd talk about him killing the three beast tamers. The only ones who knew of the deed would be the three people from the Wood School (to which they only knew he killed two of them). Since Bai Yunfei killed those two beast tamers for the sake of saving them, there was no way the three would divulge that secret either.

Lin Dongxiao glanced over to Bai Yunfei's group as if sensing their gaze. When he saw Bai Yunfei, there was a flash of light in his eyes, but he ultimately did nothing and averted his gaze.

.....

Dozens of minutes went by as Bai Yunfei and his group sat there and talked to themselves. Over this time period, more and more people had been coming out from the mist, each one looking sad over their fruitless endeavor. Some of them were even looking impatient.

“Here comes another two...” Yue Feng muttered as he watched two figures walk out from the mist, “There’s more and more people here now...”

Bai Yunfei turned his head to look. He stood up after a moment to think to himself, “We should go back up one more time. It doesn’t matter how many people are here if they can’t figure out the secret. It’s a race now, whoever can get up to the mountain will get the Extreme King Pills.”

“Alright, let’s get going then!” Zheng Kai agreed.

After tidying up their things, the group set out back to the mist.

From off in a distance, another person stood up at the same time Bai Yunfei and his group did. It was Lin Dongxiao. Storing away his soulbeast puppet, he strode for the mountain as well...

.....

Simultaneously, at a place roughly five kilometers away from the mountain.

Two streaks of orange light blazed through the forest. It was a male and female pair of Peak Late-stage Soul Exalts. The male was of stocky build and the female of ordinary stature. The two of them were traveling as fast as they could towards the mountain that glowed red with mist.

Suddenly, the male grabbed hold of his companion and stopped the both of them where they stood.

His companion was surprised by his sudden action, but the male wasn’t looking at her. “Who’s there?” He barked, staring at a large tree up ahead, “Come on out!”

Surprised again, the female looked to where he was looking and simultaneously prepared herself for battle.

“Haha...so you were able to sense me? As expected from the elites of the Earth School, you’re both quite strong...”

Faint laughter echoed through the forest before a young figure in black appeared in front of the two students.

“Who are you? Why ha—”

“Senior, watch out!!”

Whilst the male was demanding for an answer from the figure, his companion seemed to have realized something and cried out a warning. Pushing him behind, she slammed her foot into the ground and brought an earthen slab of elemental earth up from the ground to protect the two.

“Pcht!”

The two heard a slight ringing sound the moment after the shield was erected. From the other side of the shield, a tiny black streak of light shot straight through it and through the place where the male once stood! If not for his companion pushing him away, the male would’ve had his heart pierced by this flying object!

“A fast one aren’t you? But...it’s no use...”

The figure remarked, a slight smile on his lips when he watched the two dodge his attack.

There was a flicker of black light as the black streak came to a sudden halt in the air. Turning straight around, it flew at the head of the female!

“Pcht...”

With how close the object was and how unexpected of a direction it traveled, the female was unable to react or dodge. All she could do was watch with wide open eyes as the needle shot straight through her forehead, leaving behind a single hole in it!!

“Junior!!!”

The male roared in disbelief. He kicked off against the ground and made for a mad dash to grab hold of her body before it could hit the ground.

“Whoosh!”

Faster than he could react, the black streak of light came flying back again and flew for his head fast enough to hear a crack in the air!

Having swifter reflexes than his female companion, the male managed to stamp on the ground in the same way the female had done. Instantaneously, a giant orange shield the size of a door came up to protect him.

“Clang...”

There was a metallic clang as whatever it was chasing him slammed into his shield. Instead of stopping, it stabbed straight through the shield and through his low-heaven tier soul armament towards his throat!

“What the!”

The male cried in terror. He threw himself to the side just fast enough for the sharp object to stab through his right shoulder. A normally negligible wound, but only under normal circumstances...

He came to an immediate halt the moment after the object pierced him. For a moment, he did nothing.

Then came the fall. His person collapsed to the ground and all of his elemental earth dissipated from his person.

He was dead!!

The object stabbed only through the man’s right shoulder, but it had claimed his life in an instant!

.....

The figure in black robes slowly walked out from his original place. He looked to the mountain with mist floating around it. “Is that where the Extreme King Pills are? Then, in other words, is everyone gathered there? Haha...very well then, that saves me the trouble of looking for them all...”

He started to walk towards the mountain...

To this moment, not a single person within this pocket knew that this person wasn't here for the Extreme King Pills. This person was like the Reaper, here to reap and harvests the lives of every single person he came across...

And right now, the Reaper was heading for where everyone else was!



# Chapter 781: Surprise Attack

---

“Do you think we’re walking up or down the mountain, brother Yue?”

After walking for a good while through the mist, Jing Mingfeng couldn’t hold in his boredom any longer.

“There’s no point asking me...” Yue Feng shook his head. “We’ve already gone through five spatial barriers, who knows just which direction it’ll send us to next?”

“Ugh, doesn’t that mean we might just get sent back down the mountain the next time?”

“It’s only our second time going up the mountain, don’t be so impatient, brother Jing.” Yue Feng smiled. “We’ve been at it for two hours and came across five barriers. That’s a lot better than before. Brother Zheng is getting more familiar with the spatial barriers. Just wait a little longer and we should be able to bypass the barriers and make it up to the mountain peak without trouble.”

“Ai...I wonder just how much longer it’ll take...”

“Stop!”

Zheng Kai cried out, immediately putting a stop to the idle chatter between Jing Mingfeng and Yue Feng.

Bai Yunfei glanced over to him, “What is it, is there another spatial barrier in front of us?”

Zheng Kai wasn’t staring hard at the space in front of him like usual. Instead, he was listening with his ear, as if trying to listen in on something. “That’s not it,” he shook his head, “there’s...people in front of us.”

“People?!”

The group exclaimed. They hadn’t come across any other person

in all their time spent in the mist so far, though that didn't mean it was impossible. It was just unlikely. So to have someone appear now for the first time was surprising enough to them all.

Due to his proficiency in sensing the peculiar nature of spatial energy, Zheng Kai's perception of the area was stronger than the others with their usage of the soulsense. Having been the first to sense someone within the vicinity, he made sure to warn the others so as to prepare themselves for battle if needed.

And no sooner did his warning fully play off Zheng Kai's lips did Bai Yunfei sense with his own soulsense a group of people up ahead!

Zheng Kai's eyes widened by a fraction a moment afterward, "Careful! They're enemies!!"

He pulled his folding fan out from his space ring and shook it thrice to send three blades of spatial energy forward!

Bai Yunfei watched as the three spatial blades fly through the air. Just a little further ahead, another three identical blades of spatial energy were flying in the inverse direction. The six blades collided into one another and promptly disappeared without a trace!

One of their enemies was also a space-type soul cultivator!

"Oh?"

Someone from up ahead muttered under his breath as soon as he saw the attack get neutralized. Then a moment afterward, nine streaks of different colored energy flew out to surround Bai Yunfei and his group!

They hadn't even seen who the enemy was yet and everyone was attacking all at once!

"Let me!"

Just who were these people? It was an abrupt attack, but the enemies didn't seem all too hesitant on attacking.

Right as the people behind Bai Yunfei were preparing themselves to move out of the way or block the attacks, Bai Yunfei barked out those two words and waved his right hand. The Cataclysmic Seal flew out from his space ring with a buzzing sound and erected an orange barrier over his group.

“Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom...”

There was a string of explosions as four of the streaks of energy slammed into the ground and the rest onto Bai Yunfei’s barrier. Lights of every color splashed around the group to engulf them and scattered the mist within fifty meters of Bai Yunfei’s group.

Standing there forty to fifty meters away from Bai Yunfei’s group was a group of eight soul cultivators. All of them were males, and four of them had soulbeast partners. Right now, they were all staring incredulously at where Bai Yunfei’s group was.

“They didn’t dodge?!”

A young man in fancy yellow clothing was taken aback for a moment before he snorted. “Let’s beat them while they’re down! He who strikes first wins!”

He waved his right hand to retrieve a black short blade from his space ring. Swinging it in front of him, three blades of spatial energy flew out from the blade towards the group—this was the space-type soul cultivator!

The other seven people behind him scattered apart to form a semi-circle. Soul armaments of every shape and size started to appear in their hands before they charged at Bai Yunfei’s group to attack.

“Oh? ‘Beat us while we’re down’? Don’t we have to be ‘down’ before you can ‘beat’ us?”

Zheng Kai’s calm voice called out from within the area that the group had just attacked. There was a heavy gust of wind that blew away any remaining energy before another three blades of spatial

energy flew forward like last time to cancel out the opposing spatial blades!

Then five figures flew out from behind!

Bai Yunfei led the group at the front with his Fire-tipped Spear out in his hand. Already was he swinging it at the two people and soulbeast standing closest to him.

Jing Mingfeng stood at his left. He was the one responsible for the preluding gust of wind that blew away the energy that surrounded them earlier. After that was done, he took it upon himself to attack another two soul cultivators and one soulbeast by himself.

Yue Feng was at the right of Bai Yunfei. Like the previous two, he was fighting two soul cultivators and one soulbeast by himself.

Yu Li wasn't too far behind the first three with a long silver blade in both her hands to deal with a soul cultivator and soulbeast pair.

As for Zheng Kai, his initial bombardment was already gone, so he lashed out to deal with the opposing space-type soul cultivator all by himself.

Since it was a group of people they were fighting, Bai Yunfei and his friends knew that the best way to deal with this would be to divide them up and protect the weakest one of them all—Nangong Yuexia—from fighting. She stood at the very back of the group with Yue Feng's soulbeast partner there to protect her.

The eight enemies they were fighting blanched slightly at the reaction. It was a first for them to see that their welcoming barrage had done absolutely nothing to their foe. It was also a little hard to believe to see what they were doing in response.

They had a group of twelve, and their enemies just barely less than half of that! To forge ahead while being completely outnumbered was the act of a foolish person, so how could they be so calm and fearless?!

In fact, two of the people rushing at them looked...excited even?!

It wouldn't be until the two groups clashed that the ambushers would know just why the group was so calm...

After exchanging several rounds of blows with their enemies, the ambushers realized one thing. Though they were all of the same strength as Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt or so, and had the numbers to back that up, there was still a definitive difference between the two groups.

In terms of fighting strength and soul armaments, this group they were ambushing were far beyond them!

To be called a Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt was just a classification of their level of cultivation. But fighting prowess and control over elemental energy. These two criteria are very important in relation to a person's actual strength. And in these two factors, the ambushers were well below their opponents!!

These people were wandering soul cultivators and weren't the elite members of a school or faction used to fighting with each other. Their specific group was only formed when they reached the mountain and decided to unite the wandering soul cultivators together.

The wandering soul cultivators were people that were more than aware of how brutal the outside world was, and killing another for material possession wasn't something none of them had done before. So the group had all agreed on one thing when they formed the group together.

It didn't matter who got the Extreme King Pills. They'd kill the other soul cultivators and lay claim to their possessions. That in itself would be a worthy prize.

To ambush other people in the pocket outside of the mountain would be a folly on all of their parts. It'd only serve as a way to attract the ire of the others, so the group decided to use the mist of

this mountain as a means to hide. It was a natural cover that allowed them to kill without care, and as long as they didn't let their prey escape, everything would remain a secret...

So it was with malicious intentions that the group entered the mist. With the space-type soul cultivator as their guide, the group sought out to 'hunt' for prey.

Then came prey after a solid two hours of searching.

Unfortunately for them, the prey they had been looking for was Bai Yunfei's group...

# Chapter 782: Battle in the Mist

---

At some part of the mountain, waves of soulforce was crossing over one another along with elemental energy as soul cultivators and soulbeasts fought one another.

Hardly a quarter of an hour had passed since the start, and the group with the advantage was the one with lesser people. The other group didn't even have a chance since the very beginning.

“Ah!!”

The cries of a person could be heard in the middle of the chaos, and just like that, a person had been killed!

“Ah!! Ahh!!”

As if to follow up on that person, another two cries were heard and another two souls were snuffed out.

“Mo—monsters!! They're all monsters! Run away! Run away!!”

At last, one of the fighters couldn't handle it anymore and cried out to scatter.

And so the group began to scatter and run.

“It's too late for that!”

Jing Mingfeng sneered. Eyeing the person fleeing away from him with a baleful glare, he bent down slightly towards the ground. A furious gust of wind kicked up around his person as his soulforce flared up. Then, in the next second later, he was gone!

“You should've been prepared to be killed if you were trying to kill us. My apologies, but I'm not the type of person to let my would-be killer go...”

The fleeing earth-type soul cultivator took a moment to glance behind himself to see if Jing Mingfeng was still there, but Jing Mingfeng was already gone from sight! He blanched at the sight and turned back just in time to hear a rustle of wind and a cold

sensation flit across his neck.

Then after that, he felt nothing...

“Skree!!”

There was a second source of sound as something started to scream. Because of his death, the soul cultivator’s soulbeast partner started to screech aloud before a second gust of wind flitted past it. A gigantic soulbeast had pounced at it and snapped its mighty jaws onto the soulbeast’s head—it was Jing Mingfeng’s soulbeast partner, the wind squaller!

Jing Mingfeng wasn’t the same immature and naive youngster he was when he first met Bai Yunfei many years ago. The many years he spent traveling the world had hardened him. In many ways, Jing Mingfeng was far more aware of what it meant to live in a world where the ‘strong prey on the weak’ than Bai Yunfei. He knew what people were capable of doing when tempted by avarice, and all too many times had he seen the death of another be the result of it.

Jing Mingfeng wasn’t a merciful person. If his enemies were to try to kill him, then he would reciprocate even if they were far beneath his own strength.

Yue Feng had the same idea. The sword in his hand was like a bolt of violet lightning as it moved about. Earlier, his sword had reduced a person to practically charcoal, and now he was on his way to chase down another person and his soulbeast to kill.

Zheng Kai, on the other hand, was still fighting the other space-type soul cultivator. Having ascertained where the other person would teleport to, he beat him to the punch and landed a literal punch onto his nose. Sending the man flying away, he looked back just in time to see Jing Mingfeng and Yue Feng chase after their enemies to kill them.

“Damn!” He gasped, “That ruthless?!”



The other space-type soul cultivator was completely devoid of any color in his face now that he realized most of his companions were either dead or dying. A flicker of shock ran across his face for a second as he decided his options. When Zheng Kai looked away, the man decided then and there what to do.

Not even allowing himself time to reorientate himself on the ground, he teleported away.

“Ah? Trying to run?!”

Zheng Kai narrowed his eyes angrily. With a wave of his hand, he shot a long beam of spatial energy out from his fan.

It didn't seem like there was anyone in the area where Zheng Kai shot the beam of spatial energy towards at first, but then the space-type soul cultivator suddenly materialized in that direction.

The beam of spatial energy was nearly upon the man's back now. But before it could land, the person suddenly disappeared!

“A spatial barrier?!”

Zheng Kai narrowed his eyes. The other person had managed to escape through one of the spatial barriers on the mountain!

.....

The battle in the mist soon came to a closure. It didn't even take ten minutes for Bai Yunfei's group to win, and of the eight people that attacked them, only three of them managed to escape with their life.

Of the people and soulbeasts Jing Mingfeng and Yue Feng fought, not a single one had escaped. Bai Yunfei killed one of the people he was fighting, and the other one only managed to escape by sacrificing his soulbeast partner to run into the mist. Bai Yunfei hesitated to follow him there and decided to give up.

Yu Li had been primarily focused on trying to ensure Nangong Yuexia's safety and didn't manage to fight at her full capacity.

Knowing that she was distracted, her opponent took the chance to flee. He had been the one who cried out to the others to run away. Yu Li hadn't bothered to chase him either.

Watching as Jing Mingfeng and Yue Feng picked up the soul armaments and space rings of the people they had just killed, Zheng Kai gave an exasperated sigh, "Damn! Why does it look like you're a bunch of bandits?"

He might've been a little depressed about having his own enemy managing to escape.

Jing Mingfeng stared calmly at the corpses of the soulbeast he had just killed. "If someone wants to kill me, I'll kill them first." He stated calmly, a finger holding onto one of the space rings he got, "That's the reality of our world, it might be a little hard for you to understand, brother Zheng..."

Still a little displeased, Zheng Kai responded, "Hey, I've gone through my fair share of life-or-death battles too, alright? Why does it sound like you're making me out to be someone who can't kill?"

Bai Yunfei slapped Zheng Kai on the shoulders. "Let's change the topic, alright? Let's get away from this place..."

.....

Another two hours later, a group of people came walking out from the mist to the bottom of the mountain.

"Ugh...we're back here at the foot of the mountain."

Jing Mingfeng groaned the moment he recognized the sight around him.

Even Bai Yunfei had a flash of disappointment flicker across his eyes. "It's to be expected. Let's go down and take a rest."

They weren't back in the original place they left the mountain from. A little farther down from them was a forest of stone

without many people. They must've gone into the mist to go searching again.

The group walked down to the stone forest to set up a place to rest. Placing a stone table down, the group started to eat and drink so they could rest from their previous travels.

At least thirty hours had gone by since Bai Yunfei first stepped foot into this pocket. From start to finish the skies had been as bright as day. The night was probably not something that could be simulated in the pocket then.

While everyone else was resting, Zheng Kai sat by himself with his head bent towards the table. His finger was pressed against it and drew a line from spot to spot. He was clearly drawing out the layout of the spatial barriers, so no one bothered him and sat there to watch him.

“Ol’ Bai, do you see something’s...a little strange?” Jing Mingfeng nudged his shoulder to Bai Yunfei. “It looks like there are less and less people here, doesn’t it? It’s been an hour, but only three groups of people have come out from the mist. That’s not even ten people...”

Bai Yunfei had a grim look on his face. He too had noticed this. When he looked at the three groups that emerged from the mist, he nodded. “Plus...they’re all injured...”

“Did they fight someone inside the mist?” Yue Feng’s eyes narrowed together. “It hasn’t even been a day, has the fighting and killing started already?”

Bai Yunfei sighed, “The area inside the mist is the perfect place to kill people. Don’t you think the people who tried killing us were only one of the many groups that had the same idea? It was already a rough ride on the way here, there definitely won’t be any safety when two groups meet each other in the mist. As long as one group has it for the other, a fight’s inevitable...”

It was only then that Zheng Kai looked up from what he was doing. He stared at the people that had very clearly been a part of a fight recently and snorted. “There’s always going to be people like that, who cares about them! If they want to fight, let them fight, as long as they don’t bother us.”

Bai Yunfei nodded in agreement. “Ah’Kai, did you figure out anything?”

Everyone looked over to him expectantly for a positive response.

Zheng Kai flicked his hair behind his shoulders with a confident smile. “Hehe, actually, I’ve already understood a bit about the secret behind the spatial barrier...”

“Really?!” Bai Yunfei’s eyes lit up with excitement, “Don’t keep us in suspense then. Did you find a way to bypass the mist?”

# Chapter 783: Spatial Maze

---

“I’ve more or less understood how to get past the mist to get to the mountain peak...” Zheng Kai nodded his head. He scratched his nose in embarrassment at the look of joy and excitement everyone was giving him. “But. What I can’t guarantee is finding the ‘path’ out of the mist...”

“Come the f\*ck on! You say you can, and then you can’t? Can you be any more confusing? Say the important parts!” Bai Yunfei complained.

Zheng Kai held his hands out in a defensive shrug, “What I meant is that I know what has to be done in order to get across the mist. But I don’t know if we can do it.”

“Then why don’t you tell us how we’re supposed to get to the top?” Jing Mingfeng asked.

“After our second time, I realized that there are about a hundred and thirty-six spatial barriers in the mountain barrier...”

“That many?!” Yue Feng couldn’t help but exclaim.

“That many.” Zheng Kai nodded. “The number of barriers we ‘went through’ and ‘came across’ totaled to be that many. After going through so many of the barriers, I realized a hint...the spatial barriers are placed in a special way.”

He dipped a finger into his teacup. Slowly, he traced his finger on the surface of the table and began to draw several intersecting lines and such on the table while everyone else looked on in amazement.

Bai Yunfei was the first to realize what it was. “You’re telling me...the layout of the spatial barriers is in the form of a maze?!”

What Zheng Kai drew on the table was a complicated layout of a maze!

“Exactly. It’s a maze.” Zheng Kai nodded. “I found out in our

second time in the maze. We came across about fifty-two spatial barriers in that maze, and since we were basically transported to somewhere we didn't know, I wasn't able to figure out which place was connected where in the maze."

He pointed his finger at a set of roads that were intersected with one another. "We were walking here and then came to the middle of here. There's also this place and this place...both roads had spatial barriers every direction but backward, so it was a dead end. This other road was the longest path that went straight, but because I wasn't able to sense the barrier there, we were transported away. Instead of going straight, we should've made a left, too bad we can't confirm that now..."

His talking points swapped from one to another with a quickness that lost several people, Jing Mingfeng included. "Damn, it's that complicated? So what you're saying is that in order to make it across, we can't touch any spatial barriers and find the longest continuous path through the maze until the end to reach the top?"

Zheng Kai nodded. "That's basically it. The layout of the spatial barriers makes this place a definite maze. So finding the path out should be the only logical conclusion, isn't it?"

"I..." Yu Li spoke up, a little perplexed by Zheng Kai's explanation, "If what lord Zheng says is true, then we have only explored a small portion of the maze. The mist covers a very large expanse of the mountain, so there should be a countless amount of barriers blocking this way and that. I'm afraid that..."

Though her words trailed off, Yue Feng spoke up to supplement her, "You're afraid that it'll take us a very long time to succeed? Would we have to stay in this area for a long time then?"

"That's just one way of doing things," Zheng Kai shrugged, "but now that I've adapted to this maze situation, we can try a few more times and I'm sure we'll get the hang of things. We just have to avoid any spatial barriers we come across until the very end, and if

we can get to the right path, we'll be out of the mist in no time."

Feeling as though his words were a bit too optimistic, he added on, "Though honestly, this maze is very complex with all the spatial barriers. Each one has a different frequency, and my soulsense isn't that strong that I'm able to sense them straight away. There'll be times I miss one because of that. If I concentrate as much as I can, I think I should be able to sense them all though..."

It was with a downcast expression that everyone looked at each other. The method being offered to them by Zheng Kai wasn't a very reliable one, but it seemed like that was their only option. Would they really have to stay here for that long of a time and go through the maze again and again?

An extended period of wait time wasn't all too bad if it was for the Extreme King Pills. But with other people here, it was a risk. Just how long would it take before something terrible would happen?

Bai Yunfei's eyes shined powerfully, the gears in his mind were shifting quickly as a plan formulated inside of it. "Ah'Kai, you're saying if your soulsense was strong enough, you'd be able to sense all of the spatial barriers, correct? If your strong enough to not even miss a single one, and with a bit of luck, we should be able to find our way out of the maze?"

Zheng Kai nodded. "Yes. As long as I don't miss a single barrier, I'm confident we'll have success in no time at all."

"Then...let's try one more time!" Bai Yunfei stood up to address the group, "We've been relying on Ah'Kai to lead the group all this time while the rest of us followed him. This time, let's all lend him our aid!"

Jing Mingfeng looked startled. "Ol'Bai, what are you saying? We're not space-type soul cultivators. Even if we try, it won't do anything!"

Bai Yunfei smiled. “Come with me and you’ll find out.”

It was with confusion that the group followed Bai Yunfei up into the mountain. As soon as they entered the mist, Bai Yunfei activated the Charm Bracelet on his arm with a moment’s thought.

“Alright, let’s combine our soulsense together and help Ah’Kai sense the surrounding spatial barriers.”

The moment Bai Yunfei’s voice was heard in their minds, Jing Mingfeng and the others started and whipped their heads towards Bai Yunfei.

“Are you talking to us, Ol’Bai?!” Jing Mingfeng gaped at the motionless Bai Yunfei in surprise.

“I am. But I’m speaking directly to you all through a mental connection.”

Bai Yunfei’s voice spoke out once again through everyone’s mind. His explanation shocked everyone into momentary silence.

“This...this is Soul Communication!!” Yue Feng gaped in awe. “Brother Bai, you can do that?! You can’t possibly be a Soul King, can you?!”

“Haha,” Bai Yunfei chuckled, “how could I be if this pocket doesn’t allow for Soul Kings to enter?”

That only made Yue Feng even more confused. “Then how are you...”

Bai Yunfei shook his left hand, “Have you forgotten who I am? I’ve all sorts of special soul armaments on me. This one in particular allows me to connect to the minds of others and speak to them through thoughts. Aside from that, everyone can also layer their soulsenses on top of one another for a boost. With this, we should be able to help Ah’Kai search the surrounding area. If the six of us work together, I’m sure we’d be able to gain the perception of an Early-stage Soul King or so. That should be enough to find all the barriers.”



“A soul armament like that exists?!”

Everyone was shocked, and Zheng Kai was all the more surprised about it. Surprised, but happy. “If it’s the soulsensing capabilities of an Early-stage Soul King, then that should be more than enough to find each spatial barrier!” He exclaimed with shining eyes.

It took a moment for everyone to recompose themselves. The fact that they could talk to one another with their minds was a fresh and new concept to them, so they needed a bit of time to get used to it.

After a while of practicing, the group decided they were good and headed into the mist again.

Through their powers combined, Zheng Kai’s perception was far stronger than before. Not only could he sense things within a three hundred meter radius, but he could also sense them all in perfect clarity! He was able to sense even the faintest of spatial barriers without an issue, and the group was able to as well! Through this ‘collaborative effort’, the group was able to see the ‘walls’ that they weren’t able to see before. Now that they could see it, the group was able to discuss to one another about what they were seeing, and that opened up new avenues of discussion. Furthermore, since they could see what the barriers, they could go through the maze even faster and without worry of a misstep.

Just like that, the group continued onwards without confusion or skepticism. The mist was getting thicker and thicker around them, meaning that they were getting closer and closer to the top...

Would they be able to make their way out from the maze without an issue this time?

# Chapter 784: The Killing Shadow

---

“How far up do you think we are, brother Yue?” Jing Mingfeng asked Yue Feng as they walked.

“We’ve walked a fair way horizontally and had a few repeated walks, so it’s a bit hard to estimate, but I’d wager we’re a bit over half a kilometer up the mountain, what says you?”

Jing Mingfeng nodded. “My guess is about six hundred meters, there’s not much of a difference between our guesses. Hehe, it’s only been an hour but we’ve made it up this far, what good luck!”

“Yes. We’ve already reached the farthest area we go to our last two times.” Yue Feng smiled. “If we keep going forward, we should be able to get to the top eventually. This method is very effective, I’m feeling very confident now.”

“Careful now, there’s a barrier up ahead!”

Zheng Kai called out in warning, prompting everyone to focus up ahead and connect their soulsense with Zheng Kai. Through their connection, they were able to see a transparent ‘barrier’ that stood a hundred steps away.

They walked up to it only to see that the path diverged into two opposing directions. “Another fork, should we go left or right, Ol’ Bai?”

Every single time the group met a fork in the road, it was decided by Bai Yunfei that he choose what paths to take. The reason, he said, was because that he had very good ‘luck’.

As speechless as the group was about it, Bai Yunfei’s choices were surprisingly leading them onto paths without dead ends. It was about every three or four out of ten choices that they’d bump into a dead end.

Bai Yunfei looked at the two paths and immediately spoke whatever direction popped up in his mind first. “Left.”

The group didn't argue. They turned onto the path left and headed down that direction. Now that Zheng Kai's soulsense could reach three hundred meters away, he was able to get a far better read on the area around him with better details. Before, he was only able to sense a single barrier within a hundred meters, but now that his range had effectively tripled, he was able to sense at least two barriers at any given time. He also knew to turn left or right whenever a barrier would appear right in front of him. That meant Zheng Kai could sense three or even four spatial barriers whenever they needed to turn. Path by path, the group was systematically going through the channels of the maze and eliminating the dead ends to get onto the right path.

After walking for half an hour without going through even a single barrier or being teleported away to an unknown part of the maze, the group was finally starting to feel the proper sensation of walking 'up' the mountain. In other words, they were on the right path, and the group couldn't feel any happier about it.

"Eh? Be careful everyone, there's someone up ahead!"

Zheng Kai warned in a hushed tone, though everyone else was already sensing the multiple sources of soulforce.

"Eh? It's gone?" Quicker than it appeared, the soulforce disappeared from their senses, much to the shock of the entire group.

One of the auras they felt had simply just vanished without a trace.

"Were they transported away?" Jing Mingfeng guessed. Only one aura had disappeared through. There was still another three auras there. If the first aura really did walk into a spatial barrier, the other three should've vanished with them.

Since this was the only path forward, the group couldn't exactly shy away from it. They continued onwards, but it wasn't even another fifty steps when another aura vanished out of thin air!

“Who are you people, come on out!!”

A terrified scream echoed through the air. Though just a bit over two hundred meters away, the absolute terror and dread were very palpable to hear.

Everyone stiffened in alarm at the voice. Spurring their soulforce, the entire group started to rush forward.

“Watch out!”

“Ahh!!”

Another warning and another scream. Yet again, another soulforce disappeared without a trace!

By now, Bai Yunfei’s entire group was completely alarmed with what was going on. They advanced another fifty meters to reach the spot where they heard the voices and looked left to right to see for themselves what was going on.

The very first thing to register in the eyes of the group was the terrified speaker who cried out earlier. It was a man in golden robes and shining with an equally golden light. Floating in the air in front of him was a golden shield to protect him from anything in front while he himself retreated backward.

As the group was trying to figure out what exactly it was that was scaring this person, they all suddenly noticed a small black light flit across their eyes!

The black object wasn’t very large—the size of a pinky finger in thickness at most—but there was a faint sinister feel to it as it whistled through the air with seemingly little energy.

But the metal-type soul cultivator looked terrified. His face drained of blood as he screamed. The golden shield in front of him swelled in size as it tried to protect its master as he fled to the side.

As if it had a will of its own, the black beam of light turned direction along with the metal-type soul cultivator. It swiveled

around the shield with unexpected swiftness and flexibility to chase after the soul cultivator, but it was stopped by the golden shield!

“Clang!!”

There was a faint metallic echo before the black beam of light shot through the shield as if it was a rotten piece of wood. Piercing straight through the golden shield, it shot straight through the right side of the man’s chest!

“Pcht....”

The black beam of light exited out from the other side of the man’s body with a black trail of light behind it as it turned around and flew back the direction it came from...

From start to finish, Bai Yunfei’s group was completely bewildered by what they saw. Eyes wide open, their soulsense followed the black beam of light as it flew away from them.

In practically two moments, the small beam of light was already three hundred meters away from where it used to be. Then standing right there was a black shadow that no one in the group had even noticed beforehand!

The shadow grabbed hold of the black beam of light with one hand and walked forward. He took only a few steps before he noticed several presences behind him and turned around!

“Oh??”

A surprised murmur arose from his lips before his figure disappeared from sight. The place where he stood had been coincidentally a spatial barrier, meaning he had been transported away from the area before he could properly face the group...

The group stared at the spot where the figure had disappeared from, their eyes still wide open from their shock.

For a good while, no one said a thing on what they had just

witnessed.

“What...what was that?” Jing Mingfeng muttered after a very long period of silence.

“Let’s go see!”

Bai Yunfei ran off towards where the man had fallen up ahead.

# Chapter 785: Widespread Panic

---

Four corpses adorned the path ahead of Bai Yunfei's group as they walked forward to inspect them.

The look of tensions didn't fade away from Bai Yunfei's face even after a cursory examination of the corpses. If anything, he looked even more pensive by the results.

"There wasn't even any resistance...Four Late-stage Soul Exalts were killed without even being able to protect themselves besides the last one..."

Jing Mingfeng muttered in confusion and shock.

Yue Feng looked skeptical as well, "But the more important thing is how they died. I can't even make any sense of it..."

The only strange thing about these corpses was the tiny hole that was somewhere on their bodies. Of the four corpses, one of them had a hole through their forehead, and another had it through their throats. Their death was at the very least not very hard to imagine, but the other two had only one hole going through their left shoulder and right part of the chest!

Not even commoners would die from a wound like that. It wasn't even a fatal blow. But somehow, two soul cultivators had seemingly died without even being able to do a thing. Bai Yunfei and the others would've thought otherwise if not for the fact that they witnessed the last person being killed by that black beam of light through his chest. There hadn't been any other wounds besides that.

Zheng Kai crouched down next to the dead metal-type soul cultivator and touched at the metal shield. He stared briefly at the item before inspecting the chest area of the soul cultivator. "Not only did that black beam of light pierce his mid-earth tier shield, but it also went through his high-earth tier armor as well. Not

even his elemental energy was able to stop the thing. Weird...what is that thing? How can it be so strong?"

He sent an inquisitive glance over to Bai Yunfei.

Bai Yunfei shrugged. "No point asking me. I might be a crafter, but I'm not able to see everything about a soul armament at a single glance. With that said though, the soul armament in that black beam of light is most likely a high-heaven tier with a special ability in it."

"High-heaven tier!!"

Everyone gasped. "For the love of everything, Ol'Bai, can you not just say things like that as if you're talking about the weather? High-heaven tier?! The soul armaments that even the strongest disciples and scions of the Ten Great Schools and Five Families can hardly use? The treasured heirlooms any whos-who?" Jing Mingfeng asked.

"Haha, it's just a guess, it might possibly be a mid-heaven tier."

"No matter what grade it is, there's one thing for certain... Someone out here in the mist is easily capable of killing Late-stage Soul Exalts with a power none of us understands. He's killed these people and didn't even bothered to take their things, but why? Did he hate these people? It doesn't seem like it..." Yue Feng conjectured.

"Furthermore, didn't it seem like he realized we were right before he was transported away? I've been thinking about it this entire time..." Yu Li brought up.

"Exactly!!" Exclaimed Yue Feng, "We were at the very edge of his range right before he disappeared. Think about it, we were barely able to sense him at first, and yet he was able to sense us?! Doesn't that mean...his soulsense is as strong as the six of us combined?!"

"Dear heavens, stop it with the scare tactics. The strongest people here are Peak Late-stage Soul Exalts and nothing else," Jing



Mingfeng spoke in exasperation, “even if someone were to have obscenely powerful soulsense because of their training, it being that strong is a little too much, isn’t it?”

“Then why do you think he turned around and looked like he was saying something before he was transported away?”

“I...” Jing Mingfeng scratched his head as he tried to think of an answer, “Alright, fine. Maybe it’s true what you’re saying, but... doesn’t it seem intimidating? That there’s someone like that in here with us in this mist? Who is he? Why is he killing these people? If it’s for the Extreme King Pills, aren’t we also considered prey for him? What if he attacks us? Would we even be able to defend ourselves from that black light?”

A chilling air descended upon the hearts of the group as everyone thought back to how the black beam of light tore straight through the metal-type soul cultivator. If they were ambushed, would their defenses hold?

No one had a confident look as they debated the answer.

“We don’t know if we’ll ever meet this person again, let’s try not to scare ourselves.” Bai Yunfei spoke to change the topic. “He’s already been transported away, who knows where he is? We just need to keep going forward.”

“Yunfei’s right!” Zheng Kai nodded his head, “If we just keep going forward, we’ll make it to the top of the mountain. If we can get the Extreme King Pills and leave, it doesn’t matter to us who is killing who.”

And so the group was decided. They took the space rings of the four corpses before Bai Yunfei burnt them into ashes. Now that their mental tribulation was over, they continued onwards.

What they saw must’ve weighed heavily on their minds, however. An hour after the group left the sight, they reached one of the more dense parts of the mist and accidentally crossed over

into a very faint spatial barrier. By the time Zheng Kai realized their error, it was too late.

The group was transported away to another place, and the collective mood of the group was at a low. They didn't even know where they were, and if they were heading up the mountain or down anymore. Without any clues to tell where they were, the group conferred with each other for a bit before deciding to try and head down the mountain to rest.

Still, this mountain wasn't built so that they could leave the mountain if they wanted. Unlike the last two times, the group was unable to be transported to the bottom of the mountain even after just wandering around the place. As such, they were forced to wander the mountain for even longer.

It wasn't until another hour that the group was finally transported to the base of the mountain and made their way out from the mist.

Though they made their way out from the mist, the looks on everyone's faces looked quite unhappy for some reason.

At some point in their 'meandering' around the mountain an hour prior, the group came across two things, in particular, that was especially worrisome.

First off was the fact that they had come across three other groups of soul cultivators who fought them. A battle was to be expected with how restless people were getting in the mist, but the chaotic flux of soulforce and elemental energy from these battles were somehow affecting the maze itself. Bai Yunfei and the others weren't very sure if it'd change the layout of the maze by changing locations of the barriers or anything, but it was still a very worrisome thing they didn't want to have happened.

The other thing was that the group would come across several 'special' corpses every so often. As different as the corpses were, their deaths were always the same in one way...they had holes in

them inflicted to them by that mysterious black beam of light and shadowy figure! With so many deaths in the mist, Bai Yunfei's group grew all the more confident that this shadowy figure was here in the mist to try and kill everyone it came across!

It was with luck that the group was able to make it back to the stone forest of last time. Back in their last resting spot, the group sat down and began to recollect their soulforce. They weren't even in the mood to drink any tea or eat any snacks, they were all too busy recuperating.

“There's even fewer people now...”

It was Yu Li who spoke up first to break the silence.

There weren't even thirty people left here at the base of the mountain. Though people were still going up and down the mountain, the area looked especially sparse with the people coming down from the mist looking haggard and heavily injured.

There were plenty of people standing away from the base of the mountain trying to rest. At a glance, all of these people looked especially grim. And from the eyes of the others, some of these soul cultivators looked deeply terrified about something...

It was as if something called 'horror' was slowly being spread about the area...

# Chapter 786: Change in the Pocket, Time to Go

---

While everyone else was resting, Jing Mingfeng took it upon himself to go around the area and chat with the other soul cultivators. He was extraordinarily friendly for some reason, and soon, he was managing a conversation with each person he came across. After making a complete circle, he came back over to where Bai Yunfei was.

“How about it, what did you find out?”

Bai Yunfei asked in concern when he saw the wrinkled eyebrows of Jing Mingfeng.

“More than half the people here are talking about the same problem.”

“Oh? What kind of problem?” Yue Feng asked in curiosity.

“A black shadow and a black light!” Came the hushed response.

Everyone narrowed their eyes. “What did they say?” Bai Yunfei asked, “Does anyone know who that black shadow is?”

“All they know is that he’s a young man in black robes.” Jing Mingfeng shook his head, “No one’s been able to see what he looks like, and no one knows which faction he belongs to...”

He pointed to a person standing relatively far away from them, “He’s from the Strange Ground School in the Southward River Province. They used to be a group of four, but two hours ago when they went scouting, three of his members were speared through by a black beam of light and were killed. The beam of light went for him next, but he managed to retreat into a spatial barrier and fled. He said that before he left, he saw that the black beam of light came from a black shadow.”

He pointed to another group, this time it was a group of three.

“The wandering soul cultivators over there went up an hour ago. They saw three corpses there, one of those corpses extremely fresh even. Like the first guy, he saw a black beam of light follow a black shadow before he disappeared...those guys don’t even know about the spatial barriers, so they don’t know that the black shadow stepped into a spatial barrier and was transported away.”

One by one, Jing Mingfeng talked about what he heard. Most of the stories were of the black shadow indiscriminately killing anyone he saw. It was only because of luck that most were even able to evade the black shadow and be transported out, but the corpses of all those people inside the mist were starting to catch attention now. Everyone knew now that a black shadow was killing Late-stage Soul Exalts as easily as a hot knife through butter in the mist.

Everyone remained quiet as they digested the information they heard from Jing Mingfeng. No one could even believe their ears in what they had just heard.

“Just how scary is this black shadow?! Are we sure he isn’t a Soul King?!” Zheng Kai cried in disbelief. “This goes beyond what a Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt should even be capable of! And not to mention that his soulsense is on the level of a Soul King already! I’m having a hard time believing that Soul Exalt could have capabilities like that.”

“Only way to find out is by meeting him...” Yue Feng laughed morbidly, “But I’d much rather that we don’t come across that reaper while we’re in here...”

Knowing that the group was disheartened or feeling off now because of this worrisome black shadow, Bai Yunfei decided to change the topic.

“Alright let’s talk about something else, like the maze. If I’m not wrong, we should be more than halfway through the maze. If we keep on going, we should be able to make it to the top on our next

run.”

“Yunfei’s right!” Zheng Kai nodded his head fiercely in agreement. “We were too careless last time and made a mistake. It seems that our perception of the spatial barrier is directly proportional to the amount of mist there. In other words, it gets harder to sense things if we’re in a very foggy part of the maze. But if we make it through, the maze should get a lot simpler. Our chances of making it through are pretty big, I feel!”

Everyone started to think happier thoughts now at that. “And if we can get even higher up, then those people who don’t even know about the spatial barriers or how to navigate through the place will be left behind. Our chances of coming across the black shadow will be even lower if he’s going after the others!”

“We somehow managed to return to the place we came in from before, but if we were to go into the spatial barrier we left from, would we...be able to get back on the same path as before?”

“We could!” Zheng Kai exclaimed in happiness. “If the spatial barriers are fixed, then if we can just find that one spatial barrier we exited from before, we don’t need to look any harder. We can just go back to where we messed up! We can simply just start our path from where we messed up last time!”

Even Bai Yunfei looked excited at the prospect, “There we have it then! We’ll rest for a bit and then go back up the mountain!”

Everyone nodded their heads and descended back into silence once again as they started to rest.

But moments later, a series of explosions from far away startled them awake...

“Boom!! Boom! Boom!!”

The explosions were popping off one after another. Snapping open his eyes, Jing Mingfeng looked around the place, “What’s going on, is someone still fighting out here?”

“No!! It’s not from the foot of the mountain!!” Zheng Kai exclaimed, “It’s coming from the mountain itself!”

Confused, everyone looked up to stare at the mountain. As Zheng Kai said, there were several explosions coming from the mountain! Several bursts of elemental energy could even be seen from behind the mist!

But this was strange. If people were fighting in the mist, the disturbances shouldn’t be strong enough to be seen or heard outside the mountain! With all the spatial barriers, people could travel without even hearing people fighting a few hundred meters away!

Something had changed! But what exactly prompted that change, and why?

Zheng Kai peered into the mist in confusion. “Things aren’t looking very good, the mist is starting to change for some rea—”

His words dried up in his throat as something out of the corner caught his eye.

“Ah’Kai, what’s wrong?” Noticing the strangeness in Zheng Kai’s actions, Bai Yunfei looked over to where Zheng Kai was looking at. He couldn’t see anything out of the ordinary.

“Things really are getting bad!! The space in here is....it’s destabilizing!”

“Destabilizing? What’s that mean?” Jing Mingfeng curiously asked, mostly distracted by the explosions he was hearing.

“The pocket we’re in hasn’t been very ‘stable’ to begin with, that’s why Soul Kings can’t enter. But...I can sense the spatial energy in this pocket starting to grow weaker and weaker. It wasn’t like this before, this means...something is changing the pocket for the worse...

“If I had to guess, then those battles in the mist were probably too much for the pocket to withstand. The outflux of elemental

energy was too much for the mist to contain, and so the pocket is destabilizing. If this keeps going on, it won't even need a Soul King to risk complete destabilization, this entire pocket will collapse by itself!"

"What?!"

Everyone gasped. "The pocket will collapse?! You're kidding me!" Jing Mingfeng exclaimed, "What will happen to us then?"

"It'll probably be like what happens when a space ring is destroyed. The fabric of space in this pocket will meld with the outside, and we'll be tossed out. But there's also the possibility that if the pocket collapses, we'll be devoured by a crack in space..."

The latter possibility put a grim look on everyone's faces. "Don't be too afraid, that's just the worse case scenario," Zheng Kai reassured everyone, "the pocket won't destabilize that fast. We probably still have a few days before that happens..."

"Boom!!"

Another explosion rang through the air, this time, the earth trembled softly beneath their feet. Zheng Kai's eyes flew back up to the mountain. "But with that said, if the soul cultivators here keep on fighting, that destabilization process will only get faster and faster..."

"Then there's no time to waste!" Bai Yunfei flew to his feet, "We have to go! We need to make it through the mist and to the top!"



# Chapter 787: The Loss of Control and Destabilization of the Pocket!

---

The group charged into the mist without sparing even a moment to look behind. Once they were in, they were all relieved to see that the layout of the maze remained untouched.

They didn't need to waste much time looking for the way back since they left markers every so often. By following those, the group was able to hurry along. Their progress was further hastened since they could ignore the dead ends. It took the group an hour before they reached the same place as before where the fog was at its thickest. Only the surrounding five meters could be seen, and fifty meters if one were to use soulsense. Even with the combined powers of the six, it still took Bai Yunfei and the others a great deal of effort in order to scan the surrounding hundred meters.

The explosions that had been so prevalent in the area before Bai Yunfei and his group entered the mountain was still going strong as people all over the area fought one another.

Bai Yunfei's group came across a large battle in fact on their way through the maze. With how wide the passageways were in the maze, Bai Yunfei's group was able to go on by without any issues. That didn't stop the people fighting from freezing up when the large party drew close. They all sighed when it looked like Bai Yunfei's group meant no trouble, and instead of fighting after the group left, the two parties took the opportunity to retreat.

The other people along the way wisely gave Bai Yunfei's group a wide berth whenever their presence was felt. Even those who had other intentions thought otherwise when they realized how large Bai Yunfei's group was.

Despite being back on track towards the finish line, Bai Yunfei's group didn't look all too happy as they sped along. In fact, they

looked worried.

The mist around them was distinctly different than before. It was no longer calm and still like the water in a tranquil lake. The mist now was like a banner flapping in the wind with how the mist swirled in on itself in irregular patterns. It wasn't a prelude of something drastically gone out of trouble, but it still gave off an unwelcoming feeling.

That wasn't the only change either. The spatial barriers here were also feeling the brunt of the coming changes. Bai Yunfei's group had been traveling a little farther ahead when one of the weaker spatial barriers to their side practically disintegrated, revealing what used to be a dead end and two Late-stage Soul Exalts fighting one another. The bursts of elemental energy from these two Late-stage Soul Exalts had been strong enough to shatter the spatial barrier when the two collided!

The sight of the spatial barriers shattering apart gave Bai Yunfei's group a fright, but Jing Mingfeng had a sudden delusion upon seeing that.

If the spatial barriers could be broken, could they not simply break apart all the spatial barriers in front of them in order to reach the top?

His hypothesis warranted testing, and the group was more than willing to give it a try. Putting it to the test, the group were soon disheartened to see their attempts fail.

Perhaps there was a special method in shattering the spatial barriers, or perhaps the two fighting Late-stage Soul Exalts had managed to strike the spatial barrier at just the right spot. Whatever the case, the group hadn't the slightest of clues on how to replicate it.

"Focus on the connection everyone. The paths are getting even more narrow and complicated from here on out. The fluctuations being given off from the barriers are weaker as well, we can't

afford to lose concentration here!”

Scribbling another marker to denote a dead end, Zheng Kai gave a warning to the group to focus. From here on out, they at the farthest they had ever been, and the layout of the maze were now more difficult to deal with than before.

“Boom!!”

Another ten minutes and two hundred cautious meters later, the group was rewarded with the sounds of explosions rocking against the mountain. Bursts of elemental energy exploded into the world simultaneously, alerting Bai Yunfei’s group that someone was here.

“There’s people even here?!” Jing Mingfeng whispered angrily, “How amazing are these people to make it here before us?!”

“Ahh!!”

There was a scream just a moment after Jing Mingfeng’s angered whispering. Like a dying ember flickering out from a candle, the soulforce of the person who screamed was extinguished.

By the time Bai Yunfei’s group made it to the fighting grounds, the area was in tatters and the corpses not even in one piece. A little far away, a person could be seen fleeing towards the right and was soon transported away thanks to the barriers.

“They probably weren’t following us. I’d bet one of the spatial barriers coincidentally brought them here.” Bai Yunfei guessed.

“Even here can be reached via barriers?” Yue Feng narrowed his eyes, “I would’ve guessed that the barriers would’ve transported people to the halfway point at the very farthest. If barriers could send people anywhere in the maze, wouldn’t one be able to reach the top of the peak if they had good enough luck? Even someone who didn’t know about the maze would be able to reach the top if they just keep walking, couldn’t they?”

“It’s theoretically possible.” Zheng Kai nodded, “But the chances

are slim and probably not even worth talking about.”

“Likely so.” Yue Feng agreed, “Let’s keep on going then. The sooner we make it out, the better. It feels terrible here, like something’s trying to suffocate me.”

“You feel that too?!” Jing Mingfeng announced, “And here I thought I was the only one thinking that!”

The two looked at one another for a brief second before simultaneously looking to Zheng Kai for an explanation.

“You can feel that too?” Zheng Kai gave a grim smile, “It’s not just your imagination. This sensation is the feeling of being ‘rejected’ from this space.

‘Rejected?!’ Jing Mingfeng cried out, “You’re telling us that...”

“Things are getting worse than I initially thought,” Zheng Kai nodded, “The space around this mountain is starting to destabilize even more now. I can’t even say how long it’ll last. Maybe in less than a day, the space of this pocket will start to collapse starting from this mountain first. If the pocket is agitated even more, then what will happen is poss—”

“Boom!!”

As if emphasizing the worst-case scenario Zheng Kai was about to delve into, an ear-splitting detonation went off somewhere relatively nearby!

A violent gust of wind blew through the air, displacing the mist and sending it flying everywhere while also a wave of elemental energy blustered through the spatial barriers!

Everyone froze at the sudden detonation. Zheng Kai’s eyes were wide open when he realized what it was, “Damn!! Someone self-destructed?!”

The outflux of elemental energy just now wasn’t something that’d normally result from an attack. Something of that major of

a scale was the result of someone destroying their origin essence!

“Boom!!!”

The shock of the first explosion hadn't even worn off when yet another explosion of equal proportions went off!

Zheng Kai's eyes widened even larger at the sudden sound. “F\*ck! What's wrong with these people! A second one?! What's the point of that?!”

Somewhere on the mountain, two people had opted to self-destruct! The waves of elemental energy from the explosion ripped through the mountain and shook the earth as it passed along. Even the mist floating in the air was heavily displaced like a whirlpool in its wake.

But the people down at the base of the mountain were treated to an even worse of a sight.

At the middle of the mountain, where the explosions had gone off, a gigantic whirlpool of mist was starting to form. Several hundred meters in diameter, this whirlpool was moving in a way that even the bottom of the mountain was starting to have mist gather.

Streaks of red and violet light were shooting out from the center of the whirlpool, twisting, crashing, and absorbing one another in an attempt for supremacy over the other force of elemental energy and shocking everyone who saw it...

As the bolts of lightning and whips of fire struggled against one another, some parts of the two elements split away from the main groups and seemingly drilled into the air and left behind black holes from where they disappeared. With each strand of elemental energy that followed suit, the black holes seemingly expanded in size as if the pocket was being split open!

Though these holes were frozen in the air, even more elemental energy was being absorbed into these holes at an accelerated rate

and directly expanding them!

# Chapter 788: Two Portals

---

Though plenty of soul cultivators were at the foot of the mountain, none were able to solve the mystery behind the fog. Instead, they focused on reaching the top and claiming the Extreme King Pills for themselves, even if that meant ignoring the competition.

Because of that, a temporary truce had been established amongst the participants. It wasn't likely that they would meet each other in the mist anyway, so this type of cooperation worked best for everyone.

However, the allure of the Extreme King Pill led more and more people to the mountain, despite the numerous failures that only served to increase the anxiousness of every participant. Their moods soured as it became ever more likely to meet each other within the mist. With each successive failure, the participants grew ever more restless.

The fights started for different reasons. Some saw it as an opportunity, whereas others saw it as a means to get rid of the competition. Others simply wanted to steal whatever they could get their hands on.

It was then that a person, much akin to a reaper, had made a name for themselves amongst the other soul cultivators in the mist. Rumors of the reaper quickly spread like wildfire throughout the rest of the cultivators, and soon the mountain was covered not only with a blanket of mist, but also one of paranoia and fear.

No longer was it safe to traverse the mist, as those who traversed the mountain were as likely to be scared as a bird was to the twang sound of a bow being released. If someone were to meet another in the mist, they would attack first out of self-preservation, even if the other side meant no harm. To strike first was to be safe, and since there were already people 'preying' on others, the entire

mountain soon descended into madness.

The soul cultivators who sought to ascend the mountain were very similar in strength, thus the battles between them were especially intense. Even just two Soul Exalts fighting could result in a large amount of elemental energy being released, which would result in the destabilization of this dimension. As of right now, one or two occurrences wouldn't be much, but currently, dozens of fights were breaking out all over the mountain.

And then, to make matters even worse, two soul cultivators decided to take their enemies down with them by self-destructing!!

The self-destruction of two Late-stage Soul Exalt was a force to be reckoned with. The resulting discharge of energy was much too large for the dimension to bear, causing its destabilization to accelerate!

Bai Yunfei's group was shocked by the fact that two soul cultivators had decided to self-destruct. Zheng Kai's eyes were honed in on the black spots appearing throughout the pocket around them, "Watch out!!" He shouted in warning, "Those are spatial fractures!!"

A hundred meters away from the group, several jagged black lines were appearing in the air. The cracks made their way towards Bai Yunfei's group, sucking in the fog around them!

Zheng Kai's warning was the signal everyone needed to snap out from their stupor and move backwards.

The fractures of space quickly traveled down to the ground, devouring the earth so as to leave naught but a bottomless crater in its wake....

"Another one! Look out from behind and to our right!"

Before the group could even relax, Zheng Kai had called out another two warnings!

"Ah!! Ahh!! Ah..."



As the group frantically tried their best to evade the incoming fractures, they could hear several screams echoing from the other parts of the mountain!

“Damn! Here comes another...and another! Be careful!!” Jing Mingfeng shrieked as he dodged a tendril from the distortions. “Hey now, brother Zheng,” Jing Mingfeng looked disgruntled, “didn’t you say we had plenty of time still? So why does it look like the pocket’s about to collapse any second now?!”

“Do you think I’m from the Fate School?” Zheng Kai fired back, “I’m not some oracle who can divine the future. How should I know people would decide to self-destruct in here?!”

“It might seem bad, but it’s just the area destabilizing around us. The pocket should stabilize itself in time, which means the spatial fractures should disappear and return back to normal. The entire pocket won’t collapse that ea—”

“Bzz...”

A strange sound began to buzz while Zheng Kai was reassuring the group. It was coming from the very space itself! Before they had assumed that the mist was swirling around itself, however, that was not the case. In fact, it was the space itself that was swirling!

Flustered, Bai Yunfei looked to Zheng Kai, “Now what’s going on?”

Zheng Kai looked a little speechless at the sight in front of them as he replied. “Bro... don’t make me out to be a know-it-all, even I don’t know everything...”

He looked like he was scowling in exasperation.

“If the spatial energy in the pocket is starting to flow strangely, then that means...”

“Then that means...?”

Bai Yunfei had been looking at warping singularity before them for an answer. When no answer came, Bai Yunfei glanced back to Zheng Kai.

His eyes widened.

The Cataclysmic Seal was brought into this world, and formed a barrier around him. As he gripped onto the newly-materialized Fire-tipped Spear, Bai Yunfei looked around himself with a wary eye.

Why had he reacted so strongly?

It was because Zheng Kai was gone!

Not only was Zheng Kai gone, but the rest of his group was as well! They had disappeared into thin air!

Not a single person was left but him! He was the only person here!

“Damn! What’s going on here!?” Bai Yunfei’s used his soulsense to scan the area wildly for some sort of clue. He couldn’t even connect to them through a mental link. Something was clearly off.

“Bzz...”

The world around him was already changing while Bai Yunfei tried his best to understand the situation. Meanwhile, just five meters away, two whirlpools spanning two meters wide and two meters tall had formed out of nowhere!

“What’s this?” Thought Bai Yunfei.

The two whirlpools that had formed on his left and right side weren’t nearly as chaotic as other examples of the pocket destabilizing that he’d seen. They were calm in their flow. In fact, both whirlpools had very very distinct images imposed upon them!

On the left, the whirlpool seemed to be the peak of a stony mountain.

Whereas, on the right, the whirlpool seemed to be a small plain littered with tiny stones.

Bai Yunfei stared at the two images suspiciously. His eyes flickered back to the image on the left as he realized something.

“Is this... the mountain peak?!”

Bai Yunfei was at a loss for words at the realization—the whirlpool on the left was showing him the peak of a mountain!

That was right!

It was showing the peak of the very mountain he was standing on!

An apprehensive look appeared on Bai Yunfei’s face, “Could this be... a spatial tunnel?!”

Was this tunnel showing him the way to the mountain peak? Did this mean... he’d be able to teleport straight to the top if he walked through it?!

His group had spent practically an entire day trying to traverse the spatial maze. Sweat and tears had been shed for their group to learn the secrets behind the mist. And now, a gate to the top of the mountain had suddenly appeared right in front of him?

## Chapter 789: A Decision

---

Now that a door straight to the top of the mountain point was right in front of him, Bai Yunfei felt mystified.

What was going on?

What was the point of all that hard work if this shortcut was given?

Bai Yunfei surveyed the door with the image of the mountaintop with pursed lips. He had sent his soulsense into the door a moment ago, and to his surprise, it had gone through!

That meant this door really was leading him to the top of the mountain!

“The Soul Sentinel Scarf and Charm Bracelet aren’t reacting, that means...this isn’t a trick?”

At last, Bai Yunfei came to a conclusion. This portal was the real thing, and it was allowing him direct passage to the actual mountaintop...

His lips couldn’t help but throb a few times with glee, though Bai Yunfei quashed the sensation down a moment after. “Doesn’t matter why it appeared for now. But in any case, since a channel is there for me to take...should I go for it?”

His eyes flickered to the portal on the right. “Where does...this portal take me to then?”

Studying the image on the portal, Bai Yunfei couldn’t really see anything special about it. The ground was filled with crushed stones and pebbles of all sizes, and it looked very much like the stream of stones outside the pocket.

“A river of rocks?” He raised an eyebrow, “Is this Crushed Stone River?! Can I exit from here?”

“But if this portal really does take me to outside to Crushed Stone

River, then...what's the point of it?"

Confused by the two portals presented to him, Bai Yunfei stared at the two for a while to think.

"Is it giving me two choices??" He realized, "The option to take the Extreme King Pills I've fought hard for, or the option to have an immediate and safe passage out from this place?!"

His guess felt a little outlandish at the thought. How could such a 'humanistic' option be presented to him in such a case?

"But...I'm clearly stuck here in this one part of the pocket. Does this mean I need to make a decision if I want to leave this place? Are the others in a similar situation then? Is this some sort of special reaction the array has in cases like this?"

"If that's the case..." He muttered and swept his eyes to the portal on the left. "I don't need to think about which portal to take..."

He was decided, but even before he made a motion to step towards the portal to the mountaintop, Bai Yunfei's eyes flew wide open and he froze where he stood!

He swung his head over to the portal on the right, "This feeling is..."

—————

On the other side in the mist, several others were being presented with the same set of choices as Bai Yunfei.

Zheng Kai stared at the two portals with shining bright eyes. As he was thinking about his situation, something registered in the corners of his eyes.

"Someone made their choice already?!"

In the image on the portal to the left, a figure could be seen darting to the top of the mountain!

Clearly, there was someone that had already decided to go left

straight to the top!

The actions of the first person were like the starting signal for everyone else to go. In practically seconds, a second figure followed suit, but this person appeared a hundred meters closer to the top of the mountain than the first one for some strange reason. Surprised for a brief second, the person took it in stride and ran for the top of the mountain.

Like a chain reaction, people started to run through the portal one after another. Alarmed, Zheng Kai dove straight through to the portal on the left!

---

“Damn that Lin Dongxiao! I’ll never forgive him!!”

There was another person who was currently being presented with these two options. A young man wearing white was seated on the ground as he groused and complained while healing from his wounds.

This person was one of the people Jing Mingfeng introduced Bai Yunfei to prior to entering the pocket. He was the strongest student of the strongest school in the Southward River Province, ‘Bai Han’ of the Flying Snow School.

As mighty as he sounded, the person looked nowhere as impressive right now. His clothes were in tatters and his hair a mess. His breathing was labored and his face twisted in pain and anger. What used to be a powerful and elegant man was now withered away into someone completely different. His waist had three deep marks that cut deep practically into his bones. Clearly, some sort of giant beast with sharp claws had done this, and parts of his ribs had been broken.

From what he was grouching about, the person he was angry with was most definitely Lin Dongxiao from the Beast Taming School.

“Damn...even if I were to try and grab the Extreme King Pills, I’m

only going to fail in this state...”

Sighing in defeat, Bai Han stared at the portal to the right with just a small amount of hesitation.

“Eh?!” Something caught his attention. He turned his head, “Who’s there!?”

As injured as he was, Bai Han managed to slam the ground and leap to his feet to stare at the right. A white scaled soul armament appeared in front of him protectively and a layer of ice formed around his person.

“Clang...”

No sooner did his double-layered defense appear in front of him did Bai Han hear something striking against his white soul armament. Then a black streak of light broke through and stabbed straight in between his eyebrows!

“Pcht...”

The black streak of light exited through the back of his head with a black-colored gas at its tail. Turning around, it flew the other direction back to where a figure in black stood.

“Thud.”

Bai Han’s body collapsed to the ground, his eyes vacant and unmoving. The man was already dead.

The young figure in black recollected the black needle without even a glance at the corpse. Curiously, he glanced over to the portals in front.

“So even something like this can appear? Is this the work of an ancient array? If it is, then why has it decided to ‘reject’ only me?” The figure muttered to himself, “If it’s ‘intentional’, then could... could it be ‘that’?”

As if thinking about something utterly inconceivable, the normally calm expression on the young man’s face looked

stupefied. Smiling, he muttered, “If that’s the case, then today’s harvest will be a splendid one...”

He was already moving towards the two portals as he spoke to himself...



# Chapter 790: A Chaotic Battle

---

“Get the f\*ck off the road or risk the consequences!”

“Who gives a crap about you, don’t block my path! The Extreme King Pills aren’t for you!”

“The Extreme King Pills are just at the top! Senior, we have to hurry!”

“Haha, I’m at the very front, the Extreme King Pills are mine!”

“Qian Chou! I see you hiding over there! My junior’s life will be avenged!”

“Don’t fight each other, everyone! The Extreme King Pills aren’t at the top, this is a trick!”

“Trick my ass! What are you doing running up there then?! Stay down then!”

“I’m hurt, I can’t go after the Extreme King Pills, don’t kill me!”

“Who gives a sh\*t? You should’ve chosen the other portal then! Taking this one means that you agree to kill or be killed like the others, go die!!”

“What are you doing?! I—ah!!”

“Boom!!”

“Boom boom!!”

The mountain was a complete mess. Though barely even half a kilometer in diameter, the mountain peak had nearly a hundred people fighting one another for dominance!

Their onslaught was murderous, and their expression bloodthirsty as they fought and wrestled their way up.

The strange thing about the sight was that some people were situated in places either farther ahead than the others, or farther behind. There were a few people who were at the edge of the peak

where the mist were—roughly seven to eight hundred meters away —, and there were a few that were basically two to three hundred meters ahead of the rest of the group.

Those who were behind the rest of the group saw it necessary to attack and stall those in the front with all the might they could muster. Those in the front were in a rush to get to the top, but there were a few who had no other choice but to stop every so often to dodge an attack from behind. Others in the front would even stop for a moment to lash out at those in the nearby area without mercy if to either stop the others from going forward or for monopolizing the path ahead.

Then there were the people who had already suffered a loss or defeat at some point in the mist. Their aim wasn't the Extreme King Pills, but whoever attacked them in the mist.

A select few pretended to be injured and unable to continue forward, but that was only a guise for them to wait for the most opportune time to attack whoever was gullible enough to take them as an easy target...

Bursts of elemental energy and screams and curses rang through the air non-stop. All sorts of light flashed through the skies with so much intensity and variety that the mountain peak was like a multi-colored beacon.

“Look!! What’s going on on that mountain?!”

At the bottom of the mountain, those few people who chose to flee the mountain after the two self-destructs could see the light coming from the top of the mountain and were stunned by the sight.

“That’s the mountain peak! They’ve reached the top! But how?!”

A soul cultivator who was at the very edge of the mist’s entrance cried out in disbelief. There was no doubt to what he was seeing, as all sorts of elemental energy and soulforce was emanating from the

area, and that was more than enough proof for people to understand that a huge war was breaking out.

“Look!! The mist is dissipating!”

Another person cried out. The mist on the mountain, which had been churning and swirling in on itself the entire time, looked as if it was no longer bound to the mountain. No longer swirling around the mountain, the mist started to move away from it to reveal all that was happening on the mountain.

“Quick! Quick! We have to get up there or else the Extreme King Pills will be gone!”

No one knew who exactly said that, but it was the wake-up call for everyone there. All at once, the soul cultivators who hadn't been transported to the top of the mountain made an immediate dash for the top!

“Damn! There's so many people here!”

Zheng Kai exclaimed as he stepped out from the portal to the top of the mountain. He of all people was no stranger to portals and transportation and the such, so he realized what was going on at once.

He had been placed just about four hundred meters away from the peak of the mountain. Which placed him essentially at the front of the group almost. Only four or five people were ahead of him, and even the first few people who arrived here weren't that close to his back.

It wasn't even a second or two later when a few more people appeared out of thin air behind him, revealing the four figures of Jing Mingfeng, Yue Feng, Yu Li, and Nangong Yuexia.

The four of them took a moment to recompose and take a look around the area before they did anything else. Jing Mingfeng looked off to the mountain's peak with a grand smile, “Haha!! I don't know how we did it, but we're at the top! The Extreme King

Pills are just right there, let's get going!"

Even Yue Feng and Yu Li had excited looks on their faces. "Yuexia, stick with me." Yu Li whispered to Nangong Yuexia.

"Wait?! Where's Yunfei?!" Zheng Kai had been preparing to rush forward when he realized there was a person amiss in their group.

The others looked around in confusion, only then realizing that Bai Yunfei wasn't there with them.

"No way? Did Ol'Bai not choose? What's he playing at?" Jing Mingfeng muttered to himself.

"Stop blocking the road! Move it or lose it!!"

The murderous roar of a person behind prompted the group to take a second to glance behind. Three rather funnily-dressed people were rushing towards them; a middle-aged man with a large scar on his forehead was charging straight for Jing Mingfeng. It had been him who cried out just then, and already he was sending three different-sized fireballs to force the group apart.

"Scram!!"

Jing Mingfeng's eyes grew frosty. Raising his hands, he formed three seals with them and then waved his right hand through the air. A gust of wind blew at the three fireballs and sent them flying back towards the caster.

"We've no time to waste waiting for Ol'Bai, let's get going first!!"

There wasn't any hesitation in Jing Mingfeng's voice. The Extreme King Pills were right there for the taking, and he was loathed to lose out on this opportunity.

The others didn't hesitate either. They all nodded and ran straight up the mountain.

"Ah! Senior! It's that person!!"

At some point as the group ran up the mountain, Nangong Yuexia let loose a loud scream and pointed at a person to their right.

Turning their heads to follow her direction, everyone saw a young man dressed in rich-purple robes leaping from boulder to boulder. Every so often, he'd disappear from sight to reappear on another boulder thirty meters away.

“It’s him! Li Yuchun!” Zheng Kai muttered in surprise.

Li Yuchun had arrived on the mountaintop at roughly the same time they did. And his positioning was even closer to the peak than they were!

“Li Yuchun?!”

Yue Feng and Yu Li’s eyes honed in on the person at once. A purple sword appeared in Yue Feng’s hand, and without any hesitation, he thrust it towards Li Yuchun!

“Crack!!”

A bolt of violet lightning shot forth from the tip of the sword up into the air. As thick as Yue Feng’s arm, the bolt of lightning then came crashing down onto Li Yuchun’s head!

Having been fully focused on running forwards, Li Yuchun barely had any time to throw himself to the side before the bolt of lightning crashed into the ground where he had been. A smoking crater was left in his place, and Li Yuchun shot a withering glare at Yue Feng. In retaliation, he waved his hand and sent three blades of spatial energy back at him!

The three blades of spatial energy were stopped by three equally sized blades of spatial energy. Hitting one another, they froze in the air for a second before disappearing from sight!

# Chapter 791: Battles Everywhere

---

“Roar!!”

An ear-splitting roar could be heard next, contributing even more to the noise of the battlefield.

“Agh!!”

After that, there was a pained howl.

“Move out of the way! Get in my way and die!”

In the next second, there was an intimidating shout encompassed by the roar of another soulbeast.

“It’s Lin Dongxiao!”

“Get out of the way! That Lin Dongxiao doesn’t listen to reason, he’ll kill you for no reason at all!”

“We came up the mountain from his side, don’t get in his way!”

There was a loud ruckus when Lin Dongxiao made his arrival. Dozens of soul cultivators immediately moved out of the way for him, allowing him a relatively empty passage forward.

“Hmph!” Lin Dongxiao had a pleased sneer on his face as everyone moved away from him. Judging from his position, Lin Dongxiao was about five hundred meters from the top. This put him at the middle of the group with plenty of people both in front and behind him. Sneering again, he rushed forward, no longer caring for those people behind him.

There were roughly twenty to thirty people in front of him still. His soulsense wasn’t able to sense the people on the other side of the mountain peak, but he didn’t care much. With a wave of his hand, a white crane appeared in front of him to sit on.

He stored away the golden tiger that had been protecting him previously and leapt onto the back of the crane. Slapping it on the back, he ordered the crane to take off towards the peak of the

mountain.

Him sitting on the crane allowed Lin Dongxiao a greater speed than running on foot like the others. In practically seconds, he was far beyond anyone else of the same position he had been.

He wasn't the only one with a flying soulbeast, however. In the air with him were another seven or eight people with the same idea he had.

But that didn't mean they were given freedom and safety up in the air. One of the people flying above was immediately shot down by a burst of fire from down below. Flying on soulbeasts was an act that earned the hostility of everyone down below and so they were one of the first to be struck down. Not a single person was willing to let them fly into the skies if they had anything to say about it.

So very few of the people there were able to fly into the skies. Those who tried were either forced to come back down or spent too much time evading and dodging the attacks to make any progress towards the top.

That left about four people up in the air, Lin Dongxiao included. The three others were all riding on top of a late-stage class six double-headed eagle, and each of them wore robes identical to one another. It was evident that they were all from the same faction.

“Get in my way and die, scram!!”

Again, Lin Dongxiao demanded the people in front of him to move. The crane underneath him flapped its wings in an attempt to fly even faster. In the blink of an eye, Lin Dongxiao was practically trailing behind the three eagles. He waved his right hand like if he was wielding a giant golden claw on it to strike at the back of one of the people there.

“Pah! Lin Dongxiao! You're an arrogant one!!”

Unlike the first time, these people weren't giving way to him. They looked prepared to take on Lin Dongxiao, and the soldierly-

looking person in the middle waved his right hand in response. A brown turtle shell appeared over his arm and stopped the golden claws from striking him down.

Outrage flickered across Lin Dongxiao's eyes as he drew his weapon back. "Die then!" He spat with thunderous rage.

The ring on the forefinger of his left hand gleamed with light before a dragonfly the size of a tuna appeared in front of him. It buzzed threateningly once it came out before flying straight towards the man in the middle like a cannonball!

To follow up on that, Lin Dongxiao activated the ring on his right hand. It flashed once with white light before a crystal-like pigeon appeared in front of him. Though small in size, the pigeon was a late-stage class six soulbeast! It appeared into the world with a faint burst of wind, and then it took off with a secondary burst of wind to fly like an arrow towards the man on the right.

Then he swung his golden claws out again to strike at the short male on the left!

"Watch out!!"

The soldierly-looking man in the middle barked out. White light flowed out from his body as his hands went through several hand seals. The soulforce in his body started to spike drastically before spiraling around his right forefinger. Jabbing it behind him, the man had his soulforce freeze the air around him. In seconds, hundreds of icicles formed out of thin air like a barrage of spikes to pelt down Lin Dongxiao!

There was a flash of green and cyan light as his two companions started their own preparations. It took them a second more before they could send a burst of their elemental energy towards Lin Dongxiao.

"Boom! Boom! Boom!"

A series of explosions rocked the airspace above the mountain as



the attacks crashed against Lin Dongxiao. Waves of elemental energy surged out everywhere, including the bottom where most of the people had to move out of the way from.

While Lin Dongxiao was fighting the three other equally-strong enemies of his, another fight was breaking out on the other side with Zheng Kai's group and another.

That other person was Li Yuchun.

Nangong Yuexia had nearly met her end at the hands of Li Yuchun when she was separated from Yu Li and Yue Feng. It was only because of Zheng Kai's timely intervention that she was able to escape. For that, Yue Feng held a grudge over Li Yuchun. Now that the two were face to face, Yue Feng would bother to demand justification, he'd skip over that and head straight for execution.

Li Yuchun had two slight advantages over Zheng Kai's group. He was a few dozen meters ahead of them and was also capable of teleporting away. But even if they didn't have a grudge against him, they'd still fight him in order to stall and prevent him from advancing.

Yue Feng wasn't the only group Li Yuchun was fighting either. Several others had the same idea as Yue Feng and attacked Li Yuchun in order to stop him!

Yu Li hadn't bothered to attack him since she was more focused on protecting Nangong Yuexia. Blow after blow, Yue Feng moved to attack Li Yuchun with all he had. He had a dual affinity for both elemental ice and lightning, but he preferred to use elemental lightning to attack. Rays of lightning arced out from his body one after another like tiny tendrils to seemingly create a territory of his own. Not only did it protect him from attacks, but it was also charging up his own attacks on Li Yuchun every other second.

The rigorous storm of lightning bolts made it difficult for Li Yuchun to teleport away. It was annoying that he had to weave left and right to dodge them all. A blade of spatial energy would be sent

every so often at Yue Feng, but Zheng Kai would stop it with a blade of his own.

Despite this intense battle, both groups were advancing up the mountain at the same time they fought, albeit a slightly slower rate than if they were to focus on running.

After several moments went by, the group behind them were already caught up.

And when they caught up and saw the two groups 'blocking' the way, the newcomers had no hesitation in joining in on the fight to clear them out.

The other side of the mountain was enjoying a battle that was equally fierce. The most noticeable group was the one comprised of the students from the Five Elements Schools. You Qingfeng and Zhong Liyan, for example, were cutting through every other group like hot knives through butter to clear the path up. If nothing was to be done about them, then they'd be the most likely ones to reach the peak of the mountain first.

Despite the amazing strength of their vanguard, the group looked less numerous than before...

There were other people here that Jing Mingfeng once introduced Bai Yunfei to before, such as Wang Kunpeng from the house of Wang, Liu Zhe from the Returning Sword School, and the Ji twins.

Right now, there were approximately a hundred people left standing still on the war-embroiled mountain. Every single person had either one of two thoughts:

Run up the mountain, or stop the person in front of them from running up the mountain.

Roughly ten minutes had passed since the portals transported everyone to the mountain. Not even a single person had made it to the topmost part yet, though the closest ones were within a

hundred meters now. The closer one got to the top of the mountain, the more intense the battles were. If there was anyone that was substantially stronger than the others, then the surrounding people would turn on him first. In the merciless battlefield of this mountain, the flow of the battle was only getting more and more chaotic towards the top...

As the mountain was reaching a peak level of intensity, a loud explosion suddenly rocked the entire mountain, freezing everyone in place!

“Boom!!!”

The explosion was so loud that every single person had to stop what they were doing to look at the source of the explosion. Not only had it been loud, but the entire mountain they had been standing on wobbled fiercely from it!

It....it wasn't only just the earth that shook. The entire pocket had shaken even!

Much to the shock of everyone, the 'skies' above them started to fracture like a piece of porcelain being hit with a hard enough pebble!

# Chapter 792: Bai Yunfei's Choice

---

The chaos that had been so prominent all over the mountain was now completely gone now as everyone's eyes were transfixed to the sight in the sky with a look of horror on their faces.

“No!! That's the sign of the pocket about to collapse!”

Possibly hundreds of soul cultivators had entered the pocket for a chance to get the Extreme King Pills. Of those people, only the extraordinary had managed to survive every single obstacle so far to get the mountain. And yet, of all these extraordinary soul cultivators here, every single one of them could only stop and stare for a while at the fracture over their head.

“What?! The pocket's going to collapse!? But how! Weren't we safe as long as a Soul King doesn't come in here? Can't the pocket handle anything but that?!”

Someone else cried out in disbelief. It was hard to believe what he was hearing, but it was true.

And just at that moment...

“Bzz...”

The surrounding air had a stinging feel to it that numbed the skin at the touch. The air was crackling with energy as the fracture spread farther and farther away from its epicenter in the sky!

Everyone felt the crackling energy bearing down on them. It prickled not only their physical skin but also their souls and made control of their soulforce harder than normal even.

“This is...this is...”

“This is the aura of a Soul King!! Damn! What's going on?! Is a Soul King really coming into this place!?”

A moment later, someone cried out in realization of what was going on!

The blanket of raw power descending down on them was indicative of the presence of a Soul King!

“A Soul King came in here! The pocket’s going to collapse! We’re all going to die in here!!”

In practically milliseconds, widespread horror began to spread to everyone on the mountain!

.....

The developments that were taking place on the top of the mountain had been going on for a decently large amount of time, but throughout that entire period, Bai Yunfei was nowhere to be seen. So where was he?

A little while ago before the chaotic battle had yet to even begin...

“Eh?”

Just as Bai Yunfei was about to cross over into the portal to the left, his eyes flickered back to the portal on the right in surprise. “This is...”

Several emotions flickered across Bai Yunfei’s eyes as he thought to himself. Something from the right portal had pinged his interest. Something familiar. He raised his right hand up to touch at his own forehead.

To touch the Soul Sentinel Scarf.

The Extreme King Pills were essentially right in front of him. No matter what other thing caught his eye, it was almost a given that Bai Yunfei would’ve chosen to go into the left portal. But for some reason, whatever he senses from the other portal gave him a familiar sensation to the Soul Sentinel Scarf. And it was that sensation that made him stop and think for a brief moment.

Now that he was fully stationary, Bai Yunfei really could feel a strange rise of activity from his Soul Sentinel Scarf. It was as if something within the Soul Sentinel Scarf was stirring, something

like an emotional response.

Bai Yunfei knew that the Soul Sentinel Scarf held a spirit inside of it.

The ‘spirit’ of the armament wasn’t something he really thought about, but it at the very least was a confirmed existence for him. At certain times, such as when one of the effects of the scarf activated, Bai Yunfei could feel the spirit inside the scarf trying to ‘control’ it.

Normally though, the Soul Sentinel Scarf would usually remain still and silent. Bai Yunfei wasn’t even normally able to feel its existence if he meditated.

Something was different this time. Bai Yunfei could sense that the spirit within the Soul Sentinel Scarf was ‘excited’! As if experiencing a thrill of some kind, it was releasing a very special type of energy!

To put it simply, this was an example of...resonance!!

Bai Yunfei felt this feeling before! It was back in the Royal Palace in the Palace! The Soul Sentinel Scarf had the exact same reaction while he was speaking with the dynast of the Tianhun Continent, Wu Hong!

Back then, Bai Yunfei as more than confident that another Regalia was resonating with the Soul Sentinel Scarf.

Was that not the same case here if the Soul Sentinel Scarf was resonating again?

“Th-thump.”

Bai Yunfei could hear his heart pounding in his chest as the implications of the situation started to set on him. He couldn’t confirm his guess, but neither could he deny the possibility.

Was there not another Regalia here?!”

This specific frequency of resonance wasn’t the first of its type. It was the second time actually!!

The first time had been back in Black Cloud Valley when Bai Yunfei had just killed the black-scaled serpent. That was how he came to notice that hole to begin with and was transported to that mysterious place. It was in there that he felt this sensation, but his reaction to pull out the permafrost mastiff saw to him being transported from Black Cloud Valley to Crushed Stone River.

Only this time, the ‘resonance’ felt a lot weaker than before. Bai Yunfei had hardly felt the resonance. Had it been any weaker, Bai Yunfei would’ve mistaken it for something else.

But right now, the response from the Soul Sentinel Scarf was inversely stronger than before! Though the resonance was weaker from the other side, Bai Yunfei could feel it through the Soul Sentinel Scarf. Now that he was fully aware of it, Bai Yunfei found himself more and more confident in that he was close to a Regalia!

“Can it really be? This ‘resonation’ is coming from another Regalia?” Bai Yunfei muttered to himself as he touched at the Soul Sentinel Scarf.

“The spirit of the armament...and this pocket...are they connected to a Regalia somehow?!” Bai Yunfei’s eyes flew wide open as his mind made a second guess. “If that’s the case, then is it the spirit’s doing?! Is it giving me this second choice because it wants me to...find it?!”

This idea felt a lot more outlandish than the first, but Bai Yunfei still felt excited nonetheless.

“Eh?”

Bai Yunfei looked back over to the portal on the left. He could very clearly see many people had already chosen that portal and were currently starting to fight each other for the Extreme King Pills.

The portals flickered for a second as if urging him to make a decision quickly.

“The Extreme King Pills...” Bai Yunfei muttered in hesitation. It was very much possible that choosing the left portal would take him to where the Extreme King Pills were, and if he were to get that, he could very easily become a Soul King as he dreamed of.

“A Regalia...” His eyes flicked back to the portal on the right. It was an uncertainty if a Regalia would even appear if he went to the portal on the right. If he was by chance mistaken in his senses, then not only would he lose out on the Regalia, but also the Extreme King Pills.

The decision should’ve been an easy one to make considering the probabilities of success for both outcomes. Becoming a Soul King was something Bai Yunfei had only dreamed about, and the possibility of becoming one was practically killing him.

But Bai Yunfei just couldn’t avert his gaze away from the portal on the right.

No one could understand soul armaments, or even ‘equipment’, the way Bai Yunfei did. They held a special allure over him, and even more so if it was a Regalia! Bai Yunfei was far more than aware just how valuable a Regalia was...

“Tch!! I’ll become a Soul King by my own strength sooner or later, forget the Extreme King Pills!”

Bai Yunfei made his choice. He would give up on the Extreme King Pills! Taking a step forward, he stepped across the portal on the right!



## Chapter 793: The Other Space

---

Everything was a blur as the surrounding scenery started to change when Bai Yunfei stepped through the portal.

He hadn't even fully adjusted himself to the change when Bai Yunfei took out the Fire-tipped Spear and pointed it to his right.

“Ah! Hold on, stop! I don't mean any harm!!”

A terrified voice called out to him.

Bai Yunfei's Fire-tipped Spear was just less than an inch away from the person's throat.

Bai Yunfei glanced at him. The man was practically as pale as a ghost, either from blood loss due to all his wounds or from being frightened by the Fire-tipped Spear. Either way, the man was in bad shape. His aura was severely weakened and his already sparse soulforce was far too busy trying to heal his wounds.

“Who are you?”

Bai Yunfei asked, his hand and spear never wavering from its spot.

“Zhao Xijun! Head of the house of Zhao from the Capital! I came to this pocket to look for the Extreme King Pills like you, sire. I decided to take the other portal to safety because of my wounds, I thought this was the way out...I just wanted to leave this place, please spare me, sire...”

Bai Yunfei could see Zhao Xijun was beside himself with terror. The man really did want to leave this place and never expected to come across another person here. There was also a hint of dissatisfaction at the fact that Bai Yunfei was here—if Bai Yunfei was completely unharmed, what was he doing here instead of up on that mountain? This was supposed to be the way out!

Bai Yunfei stared at the man for a few seconds longer before he

withdrew the Fire-tipped Spear. “Stay a hundred meters away from me.”

“Ye-yes...”

Sweat dripped from Zhao Xijun’s nose as he furiously nodded his head as if he had been pardoned and flew not one hundred meters backward, but three hundred.

The house of Zhao was nothing more but a second-rate family in the capital since he was the strongest person they had. The Extreme King Pills were meant to be his family’s saving grace and way to fortune, but that didn’t happen, unfortunately. The talented and younger generation had seen to him being unable to complete his task and having to bow out after being injured in the mist.

When the two portals were presented to him, Zhao Xijun decided that his life was far more important and chose to leave. Unfortunately, Bai Yunfei showed up in this place as well and nearly killed him.

It was suspicious though. Why was Bai Yunfei here? Someone as young and strong as him should’ve been heading up the mountain for the Extreme King Pills with the others!

That wasn’t very important though. Zhao Xijun first fled to safety a few hundred meters away before anything else. He heaved a sigh of relief when he was certain that Bai Yunfei didn’t mean to kill him.

But when he looked around himself, tragedy struck him again!

The place they were in was not the outside world, but a hill out of a sea of hills! What he thought was Crushed Stone River was actually somewhere else in the pocket!!

It looked a little similar to Crushed Stone River, but everything beyond a kilometer of where they were was just...a blob of chaotic nothingness!

In other words, they were somewhere else in the pocket!

While Zhao Xijun was panicking by himself over this realization, Bai Yunfei was coming to the same conclusion, albeit with a calmer reaction. Where he was wasn't his primary concern though. He was only focused on narrowing the direction of where his Soul Sentinel Scarf was reacting strongest to.

He touched at his scarf again with glee as he felt the resonance grow stronger. Scanning the area, Bai Yunfei sent his soulsense around to see what was there.

"I can only sense up to a little over a hundred meters around me just like before. Is this place like before? It looks the same, is this a separate part of the pocket then?"

Bai Yunfei took a second look around.

"I can feel it though. Something's 'calling' me...or calling the Soul Sentinel Scarf actually. It's here. I just can't see what's doing the calling, what does this mean? Is this intentional? Do I really have to go find it?"

He looked around at the seven hills in the vicinity. A first, second, third, and even fourth glance would just tell him the same thing. The place was just filled with stones and nothing else...

There was no vegetation, no animals, and not even dirt. It was just stones and pebbles all the way through.

The hills he and Zhao Xijun were standing on was composed entirely out of pebbles and stones!

"It's only stones...what does this mean...?"

He couldn't understand it. There was nothing here that stood out amongst the rocks, there wasn't anything but the rocks. If not for the resonance he was feeling from the Soul Sentinel Scarf, Bai Yunfei would've regretted his decision not to go to the mountaintop for the Extreme King Pills.

One step at a time, Bai Yunfei walked around the place to look area by area in hopes of finding something that would prompt a change in the Soul Sentinel Scarf's response. But that 'signal' was still the same as always.

He came to the top of the hill he had been standing on and peered over the pile.

Right over there was another figure.

The person was a few hundred meters away, meaning they were beyond his soulsense but not out of eye range. Like Zhao Xijun, this person was quite heavily injured as well. When he saw Bai Yunfei appear over the hill and stare at him, the figure turned white in the face and immediately made for the other hill away from Bai Yunfei and out of sight.

"Seems like plenty of people thought this was the way out..."

Bai Yunfei muttered to himself. He, of course, hadn't any idea of 'killing' those who were injured as long as they didn't try to cause trouble with him. He walked back down the hill to look around the place again.

"Whew..."

On the hill to the right, the person Bai Yunfei saw heaved a sigh of relief when he realized he wasn't being chased. He glanced around the eggshell-like place he was in and cursed to himself. "Damn! This isn't Crushed Stone River, where in the blazes is this!"

"Excuse me..."

A voice from the side called out to him, scaring the man something fierce. He whirled around with a golden shield appearing in front of him to use what little soulforce he had left to protect himself from whoever was in front.

"Don't be so hasty, friend, I mean no harm! I'm injured like you and just want to leave this place." The same voice spoke, this time

with a little more urgency. A middle-aged man in yellow appeared into view. It was Zhao Xijun and two middle-aged men in their thirties came up into view.

The young man sighed again in relief when he saw these three men meant no harm. Still not putting away his soul armament though, he glanced at them warily, “What do you want?”

Zhao Xijun managed a smile. “Friend, can you not see that we are like you? Unable to fight anymore? We only wish to invite you to our group for a better chance at survival...”

He paused briefly. “We are all heavily injured and no longer need to fight for the Extreme King Pills. It’d be in everyone’s best interest to work together and find the way out...”

# Chapter 794: A Crushed Stone

---

Bai Yunfei stared at the curtain of chaotic energy in front of him with a contemplative look.

It hadn't even been a minute since he came here, and yet Bai Yunfei felt like he had investigated a decent portion of the area. Broken stone and rubble were all that his eye could see besides from the soul cultivators, but he didn't even pay attention to them.

He was standing at the edge of the area now so he could take a closer, yet perplexed look at it.

This place was reminiscent to the area Bai Yunfei had been transported to from Black Cloud Valley. There was a small circle of land and a curtain of chaotic space all around it. And then there was the ground in which broken stone and rubble were covered all over by...

"If this place is anything like that place, or if it's the same place even, then...my guess really might be true!!"

His eyes gleamed at the thought. Turning around, Bai Yunfei walked to one of the many piles of stones to think.

"Aside from the stones and whatnot, this place seems pretty magical. Maybe...it's underneath all the stones?"

Bai Yunfei came to a stop in front of a pile of stones. Reaching his right hand out, he faced his palm towards it.

There was a flash of soulforce as his Ardent Sun Glove started to light up with color. A swirl of red light started to form around the center of the glove. Slowly expanding in size, the swirl of red light soon turned into a small fireball about two meters in diameter.

"Wizzz....boom!!"

The ground beneath Bai Yunfei trembled as the fireball impacted against the hill. Every single stone that hadn't been blown away

had been vaporized when the fireball landed, leaving behind only a crater and a few flaming bits of stone.

After that pile was blasted apart, Bai Yunfei sent his soul sense around himself to scan around the blast radius.

It was with disappointment that Bai Yunfei turned away from the sight. His scan had turned up with nothing. This pile of stone had only been just that, a pile of stones.

“Tch! Like finding a needle in a haystack...” Bai Yunfei cursed to himself, feeling a little helpless at the task at hand.

.....

“What was that? What was that?! Is someone fighting here?!”

Just as Bai Yunfei blew up one of the stone hills, a voice was crying out in terror. There was someone hiding behind one of the hills nearby next to the barrier curtains.

One of the people initially afraid and shocked was Zhao Xijun. He looked over to the source of the explosion for a brief moment before turning back to his blue-robed companion. “It’s not a battle, brother Xue. It’s that person I told you about before. He’s blasting apart that hill...I don’t know why, but he doesn’t mean any harm I’m sure. Brother Li, sister Qin, and even brother Qi said it before didn’t they? That they came across him and his group, but they never did them any harm.”

Everyone else on the hill let out a sigh of relief after they heard that. In their weakened state, everyone was afraid of practically even their own shadows. If by chance someone of malicious intent were to come after them while they were weakened, it’d be all over for them.

Though plenty of people had chosen to go up the mountain to fight for the Extreme King Pills, there was still a decent portion of people who decided to give up and chose the ‘escape route’. While Bai Yunfei was looking around the area, Zhao Xijun was doing the

same, but for entirely different reasons. He was looking for fellow ‘victims’ to gather them together in one group—the group in which they could all band together for survival.

Right now, he had eight people in his one group, with him being the ninth. They were at the tallest hill now, so they had the vantage point and could look down at the rest of the area and wait for other injured people to come up to them.

“Just who is that person? He’s not hurt at all, what’s he doing here?” A young man asked, confused by what Bai Yunfei was doing.

“Looks like he’s looking for something...” Zhao Xijun shook his head, “Doesn’t matter. As long as he doesn’t come after us. We shouldn’t annoy him either. The most important thing is finding out how we can get out from here.”

“Eh?! Someone’s coming over from that direction!”

Just then, a young man in gray robes noticed someone coming over from the left.

“There’s someone we missed?” Zhao Xijun blinked. “Continue healing up everyone, I’ll go invite them over...”

Their group was filled with people who were dependent on each other for their mutual survival. Not a single one of them had any intentions of doing anything to another. They just wanted to leave this place in one piece. So if they could find even more like-minded people, they would feel even more calm about the situation.

.....

“Where is it, and what in the world is it...?” On the other side, Bai Yunfei was muttering to himself in dejection. He stared around at all the rocks in the area, unsure of what he should do.

“There’s only rocks here...am I supposed to be looking for a rock then?!” He scratched at his head in vexation.



“The Soul Sentinel Scarf isn’t reacting much. I’m basically relying on my eyesight and soulsense here. Am I really going to have to rely on those two to find it?”

He stooped down to the ground and picked up an egg-sized stone.

**Equipment Grade: High Earth**  
**Elemental Affinity: Earth**  
**Attack: 4**  
**Upgrade Requirement: 1 Soulpoint**

The attributes of the stone flashed across Bai Yunfei’s mind for a second. He dropped the stone, his face twisting together in frustration.

“Don’t tell me I’m going to have to look at each and every stone here?!”

“Eh?!”

Just as that outlandish thought crossed his mind, his attention was diverted back to the Soul Sentinel Scarf on his forehead. Something from the Soul Sentinel Scarf had caused his eyes to widen.

The ‘resonance’ from the Soul Sentinel Scarf had suddenly disappeared!

“Ah!!!”

While Bai Yunfei was trying to figure out what was going on, a scream echoed through the air!

He whirled around towards the source. In one quick moment, he was charging up the closest hill to take a better look.

“Ahh!!”

There was another scream the moment when Bai Yunfei took one single step onto the top of the hill!

“Boom!! Boom!!”

Now that he was at the highest point of the hill, Bai Yunfei could see about a good few hundred meters away, there was a flurry of different colored elemental light being tossed about everywhere along with a few frantic and pained screams.

“Are...are those people fighting?!”

He was shocked. Bai Yunfei could distinctly remember Zhao Xijun ‘uniting’ with several others, but their strengths were most likely weak enough to fall to even an early-stage Soul Exalt right now. He didn’t really pay much attention to their group since he was the only ‘uninjured’ one.

But why was the group fighting then?

## Chapter 795: An Encounter

---

His soulsense wasn't working well enough in this place to be able to tell what was going on, so Bai Yunfei had to rely on his eyesight alone. All he could see were a few bright bursts of elemental energy along with the hazy outlines of several people. He hesitated for a few seconds, but in the end, Bai Yunfei took off towards the area.

Originally, Bai Yunfei hadn't been planning on doing anything about this. But then he realized that with the outburst of elemental energy and their general proximity to the curtains of the barrier, Bai Yunfei didn't want to risk the pocket here collapsing. If that were to happen, it'd spell trouble for them all.

“Ah! Ah! Ah...”

The screams were a constant in Bai Yunfei's sprint towards the source. It would take Bai Yunfei another ten seconds before he'd even reach the place where the fighting was happening. But before he was even within two hundred steps of the place, Bai Yunfei soon came to the realization that...the screams had stopped!

It wasn't just the screams. Even the elemental energy was finally starting to die back down to normal levels!

“It's over?!”

Confused and shocked, Bai Yunfei sprinted the last hundred meters before he was able to use his soulsense. Reaching out with it, Bai Yunfei quickly came to a startling realization why the screams had stopped!

He couldn't sense a single living being with his soulsense! The elemental energy that had been caused by the fight was starting to die and come back to a lull. It wasn't as though the people had escaped from this place, it was that they had all...died here! They were all corpses here on the hills!

Bai Yunfei leaped down from the boulder he was standing on to

the half-ruined slope of the hill. Peering over the edge, he could see many craters and fissures left down on the ground below. In one crater was eight corpses strewn about the area.

Of these eight, Bai Yunfei recognized some of them. Searching a little longer, Bai Yunfei saw another corpse just twenty meters away. This one belonged to the man Bai Yunfei first came across, Zhao Xijun.

“They’re all dead?!” Bai Yunfei wondered to himself. He quickly scanned the area around him as if realizing something.

As heavily injured as the nine were, they were still in the end, nine people. It didn’t even take Bai Yunfei a minute to get here, and yet they were all dead still!

But most importantly...Bai Yunfei didn’t even sense any fluctuations in the air here!

In other words, the killer of these nine had left the place before Bai Yunfei could get here!

Or if not left, they were definitely two hundred meters away from Bai Yunfei’s soulsense range!

“Bz...”

The Cataclysmic Seal materialized into the air and surrounded Bai Yunfei with a barrier of elemental earth. Bai Yunfei found nothing even after scanning the area twice over. Looking back, Bai Yunfei stared at the corpses down beneath him.

This time, Bai Yunfei was more thorough in his observation. Studying each corpse carefully, Bai Yunfei tried his best to look for a clue of some kind.

“It’s him!!” He gasped as soon as he took notice of the new wounds on their bodies.

“Whoosh!!”

A slight whistling sound alerted Bai Yunfei to a rapidly incoming

presence coming from right behind him. Even when he was in his heightened state of observation, something was flying at extremely fast speeds towards him from behind!

His reaction was half a step faster than average, whirling around, Bai Yunfei reinforced the barrier around him to the most of its abilities.

And right as he turned around, he saw it—a black streak of light!

But that wasn't the only thing! His soulsense had also picked up on something else! There was something he managed to detect when he turned around!

“Blip!”

There was a faint blip as the object struck against the barrier. But then rather than the object being deflected by the Cataclysmic Seal—which could stop the attack of even a low-heaven tier soul armament from passing through—the object started to shine brighter with black light before slipping through the barrier! Leaving behind only a small hole, the object needled through it to continue forward!

Bai Yunfei's eyes flew wide open at the sight. He leaned his head backward and brought his right hand forward to protect his forehead!

“Clang!!”

There was a distinct clanging sound as the black object was stopped by a burst of red light before being deflected away!

At what was possibly the very last opportunity to protect himself, Bai Yunfei had managed to procure the Cataclysmic Seal and put it in front of his head to protect himself!

Now that the black streak of light was flying away from him, Bai Yunfei was able to see what exactly had tried to hit him.

It was a black needle not even as thick or barely as long as a

finger!

“Clack clack clack...” Bai Yunfei’s feet stepped non-stop across the pebbled ground beneath him to gain at least a hundred meters of distance away from where he used to be. Looking down at the Cataclysmic Seal, a cold shiver traveled down Bai Yunfei’s spine...

Right in the middle of the brick was a small dent!

Not willing to even think about the dent for now, Bai Yunfei looked up at the top of another hill. Standing there was a young man in black robes. At some point, this person had appeared there for the black needle to fly back towards.

“It’s him! What’s he doing here?!”

Bai Yunfei was unnaturally serious now. The Cataclysmic Seal was back in its place floating next to Bai Yunfei’s side so he could use the Fire-tipped Spear. Shifting it slightly, he pointed the spear at the enemy to prepare himself to fight.

This person, needless to say, was the one responsible for the deaths of the other nine people and as well as the countless people beforehand. The ‘reaper’ of the rumors from everyone else in the pocket, and the young man who could kill even Late-stage Soul Exalt with just a flick of the wrist and that black needle!

At that current moment, the black-robed young man was in an equally shocked state as Bai Yunfei. While he had managed to take hold of the black needle, the young man was currently not doing anything else.

“He blocked it?!” Was all he said. He stared down at the black needle in his hand, and then to the Cataclysmic Seal floating next to Bai Yunfei. “A high-heaven tier soul armament?!”

The shock lasted for only a moment before glee started to take over his face. Smiling to himself, he spoke, “How interesting...no wonder you’re the strongest student of the Crafting School. It’s been a while since we last met, you’ve grown a lot since then...”

“If you’re here, you must’ve felt ‘it’ as well, then? That wasn’t within my expectations...” The young man continued to speak. His words hadn’t been loud enough for Bai Yunfei to hear, but his eyes were cold enough to convey his hostility towards Bai Yunfei.

“You came knocking at the gates of hell because of fate. Allow me to personally send you through those gates then!”

# Chapter 796: Waging Battle

---

From his first glance to now, Bai Yunfei remained alert in his vigilance against the black-robed person in front of him, just in case he attacked.

In all honesty, Bai Yunfei was slightly afraid of this person, and for two good reasons.

The first was the black needle, which Bai Yunfei was almost sure was a high-heaven tier soul armament. It was a terrifyingly powerful weapon that would've killed the ordinary Late-stage Soul Exalt without a problem.

The second was because of this person's Soul King like soulsense. He had noticed Bai Yunfei before Bai Yunfei noticed him and hid accordingly.

Had it been an ordinary Late-stage Soul Exalt, the black needle would've pierced them through before they'd even be able to notice its presence!

Bai Yunfei couldn't even figure out just when this person had appeared, let alone how he managed to do it. But there wasn't time to think about that. He had to fully concentrate on his defenses against this person.

The man didn't move though. For ten full seconds, Bai Yunfei and the man stared at one another as if sizing each other up. The other person had a calculative glance that Bai Yunfei didn't feel comfortable under at all.

It wasn't for another few seconds while Bai Yunfei was debating his options when the black-robed man took action. Smiling as if taking part in some kind of 'entertainment', the man flicked the black needle in his hand to send it flying at Bai Yunfei!

There had been no physical strength put into the flick and yet the black needle was already flying at breakneck speeds. That meant



the velocity of the needle wasn't dependent on physical strength, but soulforce and will! In other words, this was a soul armament that was near the same level as Bai Yunfei's Fire-tipped Spear and Cataclysmic Seal...

They were soulbound armaments! And the soul compatibility of the black needle and man was very high!

"It's coming!!"

Eyes staring down the needle, Bai Yunfei stepped not backward, but towards the needle!

"Bzzzz..."

The Cataclysmic Seal unleashed a wave of orange light as a barrier formed again. Protected now, the Cataclysmic Seal flew forward ahead of Bai Yunfei!

"Blip..."

Again, the black needle made contact with the barrier before piercing through a second later!

But it was that one second Bai Yunfei was looking for! As the black needle came to a stop for just a second, Bai Yunfei's right arm was already swinging the Fire-tipped Spear against the needle!

"Clang!!"

The spear slammed into the side of the needle, causing it to deviate from its direct path towards Bai Yunfei to a meter to his right instead!

But even though the needle had missed, the black-robed figure didn't look sad. Instead, he had a mocking expression on his face!

The needle, having not yet flown past Bai Yunfei's face, froze in mid air before turning direction and pelting towards Bai Yunfei's temple from the side! It had managed to change trajectory mid-flight!

"Clang!!"

This time, the expression on the black-robed person froze on his face. His black needle had been blocked again by a red light!

When it came to controllable soul armaments, who else but Bai Yunfei could be said to be an expert on them? He had long since been prepared for the enemy to do something like that and wasn't surprised to see the needle actually change directions. Without skipping a beat, he had the barrier-protected Cataclysmic Seal slam itself into the black needle this time to stop it!

Because of the loss of kinetic force due to its forced redirection, the black needle wasn't as strong as before. This by extension meant the Cataclysmic Seal could slam into it without being dented like before and force the black needle away again!

The second redirection of the black needle was the impetus for Bai Yunfei to suddenly take action. Disappearing into a crimson blur, he rushed for the black-robed figure at once!

As astonished as the man was to see Bai Yunfei stop his black needle twice, he wasn't all too surprised to see Bai Yunfei rush at him. With a wave of his hand, he summoned a golden hexagonal shield in front of him to protect himself.

And just as the shield dropped down, Bai Yunfei's Fire-tipped Spear came thrusting forward!

Though a soul armament had appeared in front of his weapon, Bai Yunfei didn't change his attack pattern. Instead, he put even more strength behind his spear to strike at the heart of the shield!

“Clanggg!!!”

A metallic gong resonated through the air as the spear clashed against the shield. As the sounds echoed in the pocket, sparks of gold and red light flashed in the air!

At Bai Yunfei's current strength, he was capable of not only the Eighty-one Fold Fist Force, but the Eighty-one Fold Stab, if not with a bit of difficulty.

This one spear thrust was only the Ninefold Stab, since Bai Yunfei was only looking to activate the Fire-tipped Spear's +10 additional effect:

Explosion!

“Boom!!”

The area between the shield and spear exploded violently amidst a flurry of sparks and fire to engulf both the shield and the person behind it!

The black-robed man immediately realized something was wrong the moment when the Fire-tipped Spear struck his shield. Even as the explosion was taking place, the man was already trying to retreat as far as he could.

Retreating several dozen meters back, the man stared down at his shield, a low-heaven tier metal-type soul armament. In the center was a ragged hole with cracks running towards the edge of the shield from it!

“A mid-heaven tier soul armament!” The man's eyes grew wide as he looked back to the Fire-tipped Spear in Bai Yunfei's hand.

There was another flicker of light as Bai Yunfei used the Flash Step to chase after his opponent. His arm was slightly numb due to the attack just now, but he couldn't afford to give his enemy any time to rest. Clenching his left hand to activate the Critical Glove, Bai Yunfei slammed his fist down onto the man's shield again!

“Boom! Crack...”

The Eighty-one Fold Fist Force combined with the +12 additional effect ‘4x critical strike’, and the +10 additional effect ‘3x critical strike’!!

The three of those combined to make for a very powerful strike that not only broke the shield but had enough power to go after the man's chest!

Shocked, the man made a second retreat backward while also crossing his arms in front of his chest for a last-ditch defense.

“Bang!!”

There was a muffled thud as Bai Yunfei’s fist slammed against the person’s arm. There was a flash of gold light from the man’s arm—he clearly had a defensive-type soul armament on his arm like a bracer—but it wasn’t strong enough to prevent the man from being blown away.

Like a bullet, the man flew dozens of meters away before slamming into another hill behind him. He sunk deep into the hill, causing stones and dust to fly everywhere...

# Chapter 797: Equally Matched?!

---

“Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom...”

One after another, explosions rocked the pocket Bai Yunfei was in with enough intensity to make even the ground quake. The Fire-tipped Spear was in Bai Yunfei's left hand now as he used his right hand to fire fireball after fireball from his Ardent Sun Glove. With each fireball that flew towards his enemy, another crater and explosion were made when they missed.

This 'relentless' barrage of attacks wasn't meant to kill the opponent, but to tire them out.

It wasn't for another dozen seconds and another hill to be obliterated before Bai Yunfei retreated a few meters to stop.

To keep going on would be to use up more soulforce than necessary. He didn't want to be too excessive with his soulforce usage, so Bai Yunfei decided to stop for the meanwhile and think of a second plan. Since visibility was at a low due to all the dust, Bai Yunfei was using his soulsense to scan for anything out of the ordinary.

“Whoosh!!”

A squall of wind blew towards Bai Yunfei the moment he stopped his attacks. The dust in the air was blown violently out of the way as the squall progressed forward, leaving behind a trail of misplaced stone on the ground.

At the front of the squall was the black-robed man, calm and collected as ever!

The wind around the young man disappeared when he waved his left hand. He looked up at Bai Yunfei, revealing that he was completely unharmed!!

“The glove on his left hand, is it a heaven-tier soul armament? Maybe a mid-heaven tier soul armament...” The young man

muttered to himself. “And that glove on his right hand is also heaven-tier...he has plenty of precious items on him...”

Though he was up against a person who seemed to be decked out in heaven-tier soul armaments, the black-robed man didn't seem intimidated at all. A crimson-red sword materialized out from thin air for him to grab onto with his right hand.

On the other side, Bai Yunfei was very much surprised by the relative intactness of his opponent. None of his attacks had left even a scratch onto him! It didn't even seem like the man was at all afflicted by the destruction of his low-heaven tier shield earlier.

“A wind-type soul cultivator? With fire-type soul armaments?”

The man had clearly used elemental wind a while ago, meaning he should be a wind-type soul cultivator. But the sword he was using was a fire-type, which was a strange thing to use considering his affinity.

“Eh?!” As Bai Yunfei was thinking about the difference in elements, something from the corner of his eye caught his attention and had him leaping towards the left!

“Whoosh!!”

Practically a second after he leaped towards the side, a black streak of light flew through where his head used to be!

Bai Yunfei tumbled into a roll and waved his right hand. The Cataclysmic Seal flew back to Bai Yunfei and then slammed into the black needle when it flew around to attack again.

Like last time, the needle was slammed away by the Cataclysmic Seal, allowing Bai Yunfei to sigh in relief. But then before he could get too comfortable, he was forced to raise his right hand up and wave it in front of himself!

“Clank!!”

There was a clanging sound as the tip of a crimson-red sword

suddenly appeared not even three inches away from his throat!

“When did he ev—”

Bai Yunfei was shocked. The black-robed man had been more than a hundred meters away from him before, so how did he suddenly turn up right in front of him?!

On the other side, Bai Yunfei’s opponent was equally surprised. He hadn’t expected to see Bai Yunfei grab hold of his sword barehandedly. But still, he yanked at the sword with his right hand and lashed out with a left straight towards Bai Yunfei’s chest!

Feeling the force of the sword being yanked, Bai Yunfei heard the sound of metal scraping against metal as the sword tried to pull itself out. Already, two scratch marks were forming from where the gloves were grabbing hold onto the sword!

Were it an earth-type soul armament, the blade would’ve been most likely broken or the tip destroyed when Bai Yunfei grabbed hold of the blade with his glove. But somehow, this crimson-red blade was still completely intact and powerful enough to leave marks on his Ardent Sun Glove.

That meant this was a heaven-tier soul armament as well!

Already, the left fist of the other person was nearly at his chest. Making use of his right arm being pulled away from him, Bai Yunfei angled himself so that the dark-light glowing fist would hit the bracer on his right arm!

The fist made contact with his arm, eliciting a loud clang and an electrifying jolt up his arm, but he was still unharmed. The force of the blow had caused him to be thrust backward to fly into a pile of rock a good dozen meters away!

Cratered into the pile of rock, Bai Yunfei’s entire body shook slightly before he leaped back up to his feet to re-engage the enemy!

“Clang! Clang! Clang...”

“Bang! Bang...”

One after another, fist met fist and leg met leg as the two fought. Their blurry figures traveled non-stop from place to place, leaving behind only just a crater whenever the two clashed with one another before disappearing again.

What Bai Yunfei planned on doing was to engage in a series of close-combat exchanges with his enemy and eventually drive him into a corner. But the more Bai Yunfei fought, the more Bai Yunfei came to the realization that he wasn't gaining the advantage at all!!

Even with all his equipment aiding his speed and physical strength, the enemy he was fighting wasn't any weaker than him!

Actually...it seemed like the enemy was even stronger than he was!

“Clang...” Once again, Bai Yunfei's Fire-tipped Spear met with the enemy's longsword for a metallic clang. The two exchanged blows with their left fists again. Bai Yunfei was using the Eighty-one Fold Fist Force to beat the opponent back, but without the additional effect of the Critical Glove, the punches were only causing his opponent to have a slight stagger to his step while he himself was forced to retreat several steps!

To make matters even worse, there was a stabbing pain in his left shoulder like if it was dislocated! And his opponent was unharmed still!

“How is he so strong? This shouldn't be what a Late-stage Soul Exalt should even be capable of! I might not be able to win as I am right now...”

Bai Yunfei stared down his opponent with a grim expression. Raising his left hand, he swiped at the Cataclysmic Seal and grabbed at the fire within it to put into his body.

Dual Flame Artes: ‘Coil’ Form!

“Oh? A powerboosting soul skill?”



Realizing that Bai Yunfei was powering himself up to the limits of what a Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt could achieve, the black-robed man raised an eyebrow. He smirked however and raised his left hand to swipe a finger across his forehead...

A series of runic scripts started to appear in between his eyebrows. Flashing with light, the runes pulsed for a brief moment before they disappeared back underneath his skin.

But after that, his soulforce started to spike drastically in strength!

In a short few seconds, the black-robed man was doing the exact same thing as Bai Yunfei. They were both powering themselves up!

He had a mocking grin on his face when he saw the look of shock on Bai Yunfei's face. His foot stepped forward, scattering the stones beneath his feet as he dashed towards Bai Yunfei to strike first!

“Bang bang bang...”

Every so often, two shadows would come to a stop just slow enough to see a flicker whenever they clashed.

Even in his ‘coil’ form, Bai Yunfei came to the realization that he was still fighting on equal grounds with the enemy!

“Just...just how strong is this guy?!”

Bai Yunfei couldn't even hide his shock from his eyes. Using the Flash Step, he swung his spear in the direction of his enemy, deflecting his sword away from him. Before he could lash out with an attack, a beam of black light shot at him again!

The black needle had been shot out from his enemy's hand to strike at Bai Yunfei again!

There was no way Bai Yunfei wanted to be hit by the black needle, but there was hardly any distance between him and the black needle. To do anything with haste now would be to leave

himself wide open. Concentrating as hard as he could, Bai Yunfei gripped the Fire-tipped Spear tightly and immediately split into three people!

The +12 additional effect of the Fire-tipped Spear: Doppelganger!

He'd normally use this effect to land a surprise attack onto his opponent, but now, he was using it to dodge the black needle.

“Pcht...”

The sound of metal penetrating flesh could be heard as the black needle went through the forehead of one of the Bai Yunfeis!

# Chapter 798: The Appearance of Someone Who Shouldn't

---

“Eh?!”

It was with surprise that the black-robed person watched as his black needle pierce through one of the Bai Yunfeis. But instead of Bai Yunfei dying, the one struck by the needle faded away into nothingness while the other two Bai Yunfeis stabbed at him with their flaming spears!

He wasn't at a complete loss for words. Reacting swiftly to the two Bai Yunfeis coming at him, the young man brandished his longsword and blocked the spear coming at him from his right. There was a clang as his sword stopped the spear before he twisted his sword and lunged for Bai Yunfei's throat!

A slit opened up on Bai Yunfei's throat as the sword connected, but this time, the man watched in shock as the Bai Yunfei disappeared into smoke rather than spit out blood from his wound!

Bewildered by the strange cloning technique he was facing, the man had barely any time left to react before he had to deal with the last Bai Yunfei on the left.

“Ha!!”

The black-robed man came to an immediate halt the moment when Bai Yunfei grunted. His body locked up on him, and his eyes started to glaze over!

By using the pseudo-soul attack, Bai Yunfei was able to catch the man off guard for just long enough to stab at his chest!

The spear was only centimeters away from his chest when the man...sneered! The glazed look in his eyes disappeared in an instant as he started to smile!

“Hmph!!”

It was hardly a very loud sneer, but it thundered in Bai Yunfei's mind like the ringing of a large bell and forced his body to lock up immediately!

The Soul Sentinel Scarf flooded his body with a warm glow a second later, ridding his body of the foreign energy. But when he blinked and saw what his opponent was doing, his eyes widened in horror!

His opponent was already a few meters away from him and his spear, but the black needle was merely inches away!

"Bang!!" Bai Yunfei slammed his foot against the ground to aid him in his escape. Leaning towards the left, Bai Yunfei was able to evade the black needle just enough before he steadied himself.

While the black needle hadn't scraped his cheek when it passed, the black energy from it touched at it, bringing a chilling cold to Bai Yunfei's body!

Bai Yunfei slammed his Fire-tipped Spear into the ground to brace himself up. Safe from danger for the time being, Bai Yunfei brandished his left hand forward!

In response to his actions, the Cataclysmic Seal expanded to the size of a door to stop the black needle. The two objects made contact with one another, and again, the Cataclysmic Seal proved successful in stopping the black needle!

Bai Yunfei took this opportunity to Flash Step ten meters to the right, his boots aiding his forward momentum by a substantial margin.

Still surprised by what he experienced at the hand of his opponent, he stared at him for a moment before saying two words, "Soul attack!"

Back then when Bai Yunfei used his pseudo-soul attack to catch his opponent off guard, the young man had in turn met him dead on with a soul attack of his own!

And to make matters even worse, the man hadn't even been affected by Bai Yunfei's attack! He faked it! Bai Yunfei's pseudo-soul attack had done essentially nothing to him!

A chill traveled up Bai Yunfei's spine. "A soul attack...is a very special type of attack, this can only mean..."

"He dodged it?! Impossible!!"

On the other side, the black-robed man was currently in an equally shocked state as Bai Yunfei. He had been so sure that Bai Yunfei wouldn't have been able to dodge that attack of his.

"He can use a soul attack and can...snap himself out from my own soul attack. Can he be..." Likewise, the young man was currently thinking along the same lines of Bai Yunfei, though he quickly dismissed that thought right afterward. "No way! It has to be some sort of special soul armament of his!"

"Pah, it doesn't matter how many heaven-tier soul armaments you have, you're dying here!" He sneered at Bai Yunfei. Killing intent rose in even larger amounts from his body as his soulforce started to spike. Green, orange, red, and violet light started to rise from his person; and very faintly, a slight sliver of black smoke was rising from his person...!

At the same time, Bai Yunfei was undergoing something very similar!

Cold determination was all that was left in Bai Yunfei's eyes as he steadied his Fire-tipped Spear. He stepped backward, but his left hand was pointing at the black-robed man to have the Cataclysmic Seal go flying towards him!

"Bzz..."

The Cataclysmic Seal was only ten meters into its path when it exploded into a burst of fire before expanding in size!

Under the wide-open eyes of the black-robed man, the Cataclysmic Seal expanded to the size of a small mountain large

enough to cover a fourth of the entire pocket!

In an instant, a large area of the pocket was completely overshadowed by the mountainous object above it. The black-robed man could only stand there and gap at the brick for a moment before he realized the situation he was in and start to back away rapidly!

That was because Bai Yunfei was already standing outside the landing perimeter of the brick and commanding it to smash down!

And when Bai Yunfei pointed his hand down, the Cataclysmic Seal was sent crashing towards the ground with devastating force!

“Boom!!!”

The entire pocket trembled violently when the Cataclysmic Seal slammed into the ground. For meters all around, the earth was heavily impacted from where it landed, leaving a very shocked black-robed man barely outside its perimeter.

“What kind of soul armament is that?!”

Was all he could think about. He looked up at the gigantically red mountain in front of him, looking on in shock as elemental fire exuded from it!

The Cataclysmic Seal slowly shrunk in size, leaving behind only the crater as proof of its existence. When the crater could be fully seen from both sides, the only thing that was left was a brilliant bonfire. They flickered for a moment before turning into two flaming twisters!

“Roar!!”

From the flame twisters, two giant dragons materialized from them to twist around each other. There was a spark of violet light in between the two as they coiled together. In a spiralling motion, the two dragons released a mighty roar and flew towards the black-robed man!

This was Bai Yunfei's strongest attack, the Dual Dragon Burst!!

If the eyes of the black-robed man weren't wide open before, they were now. Cursing to himself, he kicked off against the ground to fly back as fast as possible!

Bai Yunfei watched as his opponent tried to escape from his attack. In response to his retreat, Bai Yunfei flashed through three hand seals and pushed his palms outwards!

In response to his action, the two dragons immediately made a swift turn to follow after the black-hooded man!

“Boom!!!”

The entire pocket revertebrated heavily with each time the dragons roared with a force equivalent to that of the Cataclysmic Seal. An ocean of fire swept across the area to engulf half the pocket in the flames of the dragon.

“Huff...huff...”

Doubled up at the waist, Bai Yunfei was trying hard to gasp for breath as he watched the ocean of fire in front of him.

“That should do the trick...”

As he was thinking to himself, the unexpected sighting of something from the corners of his eyes caused him to blink and widen his eyes in horror!

“Boom!!”

A transparent bubble of energy burst out from amidst the sea of flames. Like a hurricane, it blew apart the flames with devastating power to subdue everything within its area!

The very same moment the energy appeared, the pocket started to tremble violently. As if being jolted by a charged bolt of electricity, the pocket started to tremble and fall apart!

“What the...no way!!”

Feeling the air vibrate with energy and the pocket start to fall apart, Bai Yunfei could hardly breathe out the two words that would've described the situation in front of him.

“S—Soul King!!”



# Chapter 799: Soul King

---

In all honesty, Bai Yunfei had the same suspicion Jing Mingfeng had about the supposed black-robed ‘reaper’. This person was not only able to easily kill Late-stage Soul Exalts, his soulsense was even stronger than what a Soul Exalt should even be capable of. This person had to be a...a Soul King!

The only thing that made Bai Yunfei doubt this hypothesis was the pocket they were in and the restriction behind it.

But right now, Bai Yunfei had his answer. What was happening in front of him was more than enough as proof.

This black-robed man was an actual Soul King!!

From it being ‘impossible’ to it being ‘as expected’, everything made sense now. Why this person had such powerful soulsense and how this person was so devastatingly strong. It was also no wonder why Bai Yunfei wasn’t able to take the upper hand despite being of the same level of strength as him.

That was because Bai Yunfei was actually the same level of strength as him, the man was a Soul King!

He didn’t know what sort of method this guy had used to suppress his soulforce to the levels of a Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt, but the man’s soulsense was definitely still at the level of a Soul King. That particular aspect of him couldn’t be reduced to the level of a Soul Exalt.

And while his soulforce was suppressed, that was only on the external level. The number of soulpoints was still on the level of a Soul King, and that was why it looked like the man was filled with a seemingly infinite amount of power as he fought Bai Yunfei. Even with Bai Yunfei expending so much soulforce to fight him, a Soul King had a far greater amount of soulforce and faster recovery rate, so it was no wonder...

It was only because of the many powerful equipments Bai Yunfei had on that he was able to fight for as long as he did without dying. If it had been any other Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt, they would've died a long time ago without fail.

“A Soul King! He really is a Soul King! What's he doing here for?!”

There was still another question Bai Yunfei had about the situation. But that question could wait. Bai Yunfei had a far more pressing issue to worry about besides the Soul King. Looking around himself, the look on his face grew even more troubled!

That was because...

“No!! The pocket's going to collapse!”

The curtains to the barrier around the pocket started to show several fractures here and there. So frightened by the situation, Bai Yunfei couldn't help but cry out his thoughts.

Everyone knew when they came into the pocket that there was no way the pocket could sustain the entry of a Soul King! With how fragile the pocket was, the powerful soulforce of the Soul King would've destabilized the pocket and lead to the ruin of it! For that reason, every single Soul King that came to the place could only watch from the outside as the younger generation fought each other for the Extreme King Pills...

But right now, Bai Yunfei was up against a Soul King!

On the topic of suppressing one's aura.

If a Soul King were to do such a thing, they could probably fool everyone else weaker than them that they were a Soul Exalt. Most Soul Kings were capable of doing such a thing given time and experience. If they used a special method of some sort, they could probably fool even those of the same level of strength as them.

Suppressing their auras was only superficial though. It was a tactic meant to fool one's soulsense, and that was it. Their actual

strength would still be that of a Soul King.

Only a few rare secret techniques would be able to truly ‘suppress’ their strength. In a way, this second type was more along the lines of ‘sealing’ their strength. Their true strength would be revealed when they unsealed it, but until then, their strength would be lowered on a deeper level.

A technique like that was not very useful though. There wasn’t a need to seal their strength, why would they want to become weaker? If they were to die to any random dangers, then wouldn’t they become a laughingstock?

A Soul King was so willing to get the Extreme King Pills that he forcibly sealed his strength to enter the pocket!

And for the sake of stopping Bai Yunfei’s Dual Dragon Burst, the man undid the seal on him to fully reveal himself as an Early-stage Soul King to defend!

The instant he undid the seal and revealed himself as an Early-stage Soul King, the pocket around the two of them started to tremble violently. Like a balloon with too much energy, it looked like it was on the verge of collapsing in on itself!

Bai Yunfei was terrified, but not due to the fact he was fighting against a Soul King. With the barriers showing fractures along its surface and the pocket distorting in on itself, Bai Yunfei knew that the worse to come wouldn’t be from the Soul King, but the pocket.

If the pocket collapsed, how would he escape?!

.....

“Damn damn damn!!”

In the sea of flames in front of him, Bai Yunfei watched as a figure slowly came into view from within the hurricane of energy. Kneeling on the ground at the center, the man was in a frazzled mess. His robes were half burnt off and his hair was a complete mess. His eyes were a frightful calm, burning silently with the

flames of shock, anger, and venomous resentment.

A series of demonic markings was inked in over the man's forehead. They floated eerily over his head until his strength was fully unsealed and disappeared like the flickering of a candle light.

Three silver jadeite disks circled protectively around the person, projecting a layer of transparent light that protected the man inside. Clearly, these three objects were used to protect him from the Dual Dragon Burst just now.

“To force me this far...Bai Yunfei...you won't leave this place alive!!”

The young man barked with resentment. Looking up at the fractures up in the 'sky', the man looked a little pensive at how the pocket was reacting to his presence. He wasn't nearly as panicked as Bai Yunfei was, and it looked almost as if he wasn't concerned with what damages the collapse of the pocket might incur onto him.

“It can at least be confirmed now that this pocket was created by 'it'. Knowing that, the collapse of the pocket won't be as destructive as the collapse of an ordinary pocket. If I'm not wrong, then...it'll most likely kick everyone out back into the real world. The fractures in the pocket won't harm us either...”

He looked a little knowledgeable of the situation around himself. “Furthermore, 'it's' nearby somewhere in this place....if I leave this place, I should be able to find it still. No one else seems to know about it...I'll definitely be the one to find it!”

Unrestrained glee crossed over onto his face at the thought.

“What?!”

Not even a second after that happy thought, the man realized Bai Yunfei was again doing something shocking!

He could sense Bai Yunfei's soulforce increasing yet again!

Tossing out everything irrelevant to Bai Yunfei, the man stood up. Now fully concentrated on killing Bai Yunfei, he bent forward slightly and then disappeared into thin air to charge at Bai Yunfei!!

“Bang!!”

There was an ear-splitting crack when he disappeared. When he reappeared again, the man was two hundred meters away from his original position! Then he did it again, he disappeared into thin air and out of sight!

A spatial distortion was left behind from where he disappeared into thin air. In that distortion, spatial energy could be seen further distorting the surrounding area!

“Whoosh!”

The next thing Bai Yunfei felt was a gust of wind before a crimson-red blade came slashing forward to slit his throat!

# Chapter 800: A Powerful Enemy!

---

Bai Yunfei lifted his head to evade the sword stroke. Eyes flashing red with determination, he drew the Fire-tipped Spear out from his space ring and blocked the sword!

“Clang!!”

Spear met blade as the two fighters fought for supremacy. Though the sword was powerful in its horizontal stroke, the spear was strong in its own might. Bai Yunfei advanced a step once with his left foot and then lashed out with a right fist!

“Bang!!”

The black-robed man met Bai Yunfei’s punch with a punch from his left hand. His left hand was slightly black in color, and the following collision saw to red and black light mixing with one another as they blasted away from the epicenter. The two men were stuck together for one silent moment before they were forced apart due to the blast!

“Bang! Bang! Bang...”

The black-robed man left footprints behind on the ground with each step he took. Any stone beneath his foot was reduced to powder with how much force he was putting in each step. Ten powerful steps were taken by him before he finally came to a rest, sufficiently surprised by how much power Bai Yunfei had met him with.

“A Soul King?! Impossible! How does he have the strength of an Early-stage Soul King?!”

The man couldn’t believe his eyes. He had put all his might in that attack, but Bai Yunfei had somehow met his attack with an equally powerful strike!!

A Soul Exalt shouldn’t be capable of reacting fast enough to stop his sword stroke or even punching him with enough force to push

him back. Even the most powerful of Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt shouldn't be capable of such a feat.

It went beyond what a Peak Late-stage Soul Exalt should be capable of. Even his aura was showing him to be on the level of an Early-stage Soul King!

“Is he a Soul King just like me?! Impossible! I refuse to believe it!!”

The man was finding it hard to believe Bai Yunfei was possibly the same level of strength as he was. He focused on Bai Yunfei for a moment, searching desperately for something.

And that was when he noticed it. The look of pain on Bai Yunfei's face.

He understood then.

“I knew it! It has to be that power boosting soul skill of his! What a powerful soul skill, it's strong enough to temporarily bridge the gap between the levels, it can have a Late-stage Soul Exalt have the power of a Soul King for a brief moment!!”

The man was all the more surprised by that tidbit. He felt a little better now in fact. The cold sneer was back on his face. “Even if you use a double-edged method like that, will you even be a match for me? How naive...no matter how much you struggle, you'll still die in the end!”

Filled with a renewed vigor to kill Bai Yunfei, the man took off towards him to try and kill him.

“He's a dark-type soul cultivator!!”

Bai Yunfei realized. The explosive start of this person along with the other times they fought had revealed to Bai Yunfei that the person was a user of elemental darkness!

“Boom! Boom! Boom!!”

With all the explosions setting off one after another in the

pocket, the battle before seemed nothing more but a battle between ants. The giants were now duking it out against one another for supremacy. Between the spatial distortions and fractures, the shadows of the two fighters couldn't even be seen besides from the hint of red and black light that'd collide with one another. The space would ripple like a stone across a body of water every once in a while, distorting the pocket even more and more while the stone on the floor were all reduced to powdered dust. This pocket was quickly being reduced to nothing more but powder...

At least a hundred blows had been exchanged by the two in the last ten seconds. Even up against a Soul King, Bai Yunfei was surprisingly managing to hold his own while in his Berserk Mode!

When it came to fighting Soul Kings, Bai Yunfei had already his fair share of experience. He had Xiao Qi and Long Lan helping him those times normally, so this was the only time where Bai Yunfei was truly fighting a Soul King by himself.

So this was the true testament to Bai Yunfei's strength. He could fight a Soul King to a stand still!

Though he wasn't at the disadvantage, that didn't mean to say Bai Yunfei could afford to loosen up. Compared to the Soul King, Bai Yunfei looked far grimmer, and even a tad bit frantic.

He wasn't like the Soul King who had a decent grasp on the situation around him. He knew the pocket was quickly folding on itself with parts of it already less than ideal to be around. With each passing moment Bai Yunfei was in the pocket, Bai Yunfei grew more and more frantic.

He didn't know just how much longer the pocket would be able to hold out, and he didn't even know how he'd be able to deal with that. He wasn't capable of teleporting, and he didn't know how to manipulate spatial energy. How to escape the spatial fissures was beyond him. If the pocket were to collapse, how would he get



away?

The only ‘comforting’ piece of information was the expression on the man he was fighting. Bai Yunfei had no doubts that this person knew of the impending collapse of the pocket. If he was fighting Bai Yunfei wholeheartedly, then that meant the person wasn’t afraid of the pocket’s collapse. And in that case, Bai Yunfei was somewhat assured that the situation wasn’t as bad as he thought it’d be...

There was no way Bai Yunfei would be able to ask for an armistice to find a way out of here, and neither was he willing to ask for such a thing to begin with. The only thing left to do was to thoroughly beat down his opponent, but he wasn’t confident in that aspect. If he wasn’t careful, then that black needle of his opponent would surely kill him...

By now, Bai Yunfei was more than aware that the soul armaments of this person weren’t any weaker than the ones he wore and used!!

The crimson longsword the man was using was without a doubt beyond a low-heaven tier. It was a mid-heaven tier soul armament for sure. There was also the three jadeite pieces of orbiting soul armaments the man had. They were most likely low-heaven tier with a defensive strength no weaker than the Cataclysmic Seal. The black glove on his left hand was also a heaven-tier. There was also the armor he was wearing, that was a heaven-tier as well. And then the space rings and bracelet the man was wearing, Bai Yunfei was sure those two weren’t weak in grade either.

This was the very first time Bai Yunfei had met someone else with so many strong soul armaments. Even all the previous Soul Kings he killed before had only two or three heaven-tier soul armaments. If not for the circumstances, Bai Yunfei would’ve thought he was fighting against someone else from the Crafting School.

The soul armament Byf was most afraid of was without a doubt the black needle. Not once had Bai Yunfei touched the black needle yet, and neither was he willing to test his armor against it, nor his Ardent Sun Glove, Critical Glove, or the Flameblade Bracer. They were all low-heaven tier in strength, but Bai Yunfei wasn't willing to use them at all.

In Bai Yunfei's current Berserk Mode, he was comparable to an Early-stage Soul King. The barrier of the Cataclysmic Seal was strong enough to deal with the black needle on a level far superior than before, but still, the black needle was still able to break through the barrier given time. That only went to show just how terrifying the black needle was.

It wasn't the piercing strength of the needle Bai Yunfei was worried about. He still remembered what happened to the last people to be struck through by the black needle. It was a fatal wound if it got to you, and Bai Yunfei was convinced there was a special effect to the needle he didn't want to find out about. He had no way of laying his hand onto the black needle without putting his life in danger, so Bai Yunfei was powerless to find out what effect the needle had.

So the Cataclysmic Seal was the only thing Bai Yunfei could use to protect himself. The Cataclysmic Seal never left Bai Yunfei's side whenever the black needle came into play. Due to his fear of the needle, Bai Yunfei was rarely able to find an appropriate time to strike back at his opponent. Since his opponent knew that Bai Yunfei had something that could nullify soul attacks, his opponent didn't bother to pursue that avenue of attack. This rendered the Soul Sentinel Scarf's ability to deflect soul attacks onto the caster useless if Bai Yunfei wasn't able to use it in the most crucial moments.

Bai Yunfei was proud of his equipment and his versatile ways to deal with any of his opponents. So now that he was up against an opponent he couldn't use any of his equipment effects on, Bai

Yunfei felt powerless despite not exactly being on the losing end.

“What?! What’s going on?!”

As he defended himself against another onslaught of attacks, Bai Yunfei suddenly realized the strength of his enemy had drastically weakened for some reason.

And at the same time, something within the pocket was changing rapidly!

# Table of Contents

[Upgrade Specialist in Another World](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Book 6 - Pill Royale](#)

[Chapter 701: Underground Chase](#)

[Chapter 702: Trapped](#)

[Chapter 703: The Lair](#)

[Chapter 704: A Pool of Blood!](#)

[Chapter 705: The First Battle Underwater](#)

[Chapter 706: Blood Octopus](#)

[Chapter 707: Boiling!](#)

[Chapter 708: Sudden Changes](#)

[Chapter 709: Who Is It?](#)

[Chapter 710: Blood Construct](#)

[Chapter 711: The Final Strategy](#)

[Chapter 712: Breakthrough by Devouring!](#)

[Chapter 713: One Wave Subsides, Another Rises!](#)

[Chapter 714: The Crisis of Huangfu Rui!](#)

[Chapter 715: Crisis Averted?](#)

[Chapter 716: Dongfang](#)

[Chapter 717: He's....](#)

[Chapter 718: Not Yet the Time](#)

[Chapter 719: Powerlessness](#)

[Chapter 720: Another Enemy?!](#)

[Chapter 721: A Misunderstanding](#)

[Chapter 722: Underworld School](#)

[Chapter 723: Suddenly Meeting Huangfu Nan](#)

[Chapter 724: Dongfang Ming?](#)

[Chapter 725: Black Cloud Valley](#)

[Chapter 726: Crossing Through](#)

[Chapter 727: Mountain Protecting Barrier](#)

[Chapter 728: Mo Yanbai](#)

[Chapter 729: Conditions](#)

[Chapter 730: Going Deeper into Black Cloud Valley](#)

[Chapter 731: Serpent Engulfing the Clouds](#)

[Chapter 732: Battle of Dragon and Snake](#)

[Chapter 733: Violent Methods](#)

[Chapter 734: Mission Accomplished](#)

[Chapter 735: Gone!](#)

[Chapter 736: Unexplained Disappearance and....A Major Event](#)

[Chapter 737: The Mountain Over There](#)

[Chapter 738: A Mysterious Place](#)

[Chapter 739: Passing Through](#)

[Chapter 740: A Reunion Between Good Friends](#)

[Chapter 741: Extreme King Pill!](#)

[Chapter 742: Determined to Participate](#)

[Chapter 743: Gathering of Prodigies](#)

[Chapter 744: A Completely Unexpected Development](#)

[Chapter 745: Opening of the Pocket and the Appearance of the Extreme King Pills!](#)

[Chapter 746: Entering the Pocket and a Very Strange Restriction](#)

[Chapter 747: The Massacre Has Already Begun!](#)

[Chapter 748: Coming One After Another](#)

[Chapter 749: Meeting Another Friend](#)

[Chapter 750: A Blocked Path](#)

[Chapter 751: Li Yuchun](#)

[Chapter 752: One Against Many](#)

[Chapter 753: A Hero Saving the Maiden](#)

[Chapter 754: Battle Between the Space-types](#)

[Chapter 755: Battle In the Middle of the Small Ravine](#)

[Chapter 756: Unable to Withstand Even A Single Blow](#)

[Chapter 757: The Dreg of the Hornets](#)

[Chapter 758: That Figure....](#)

[Chapter 759: Meeting You Qingfeng Again](#)

[Chapter 760: Battling the Students of the Beast Taming School](#)

[Chapter 761: Illusions That Shock the Enemy](#)

[Chapter 762: The Might of the Beast Taming Ring](#)

[Chapter 763: Escaping From the Madness Ahead!](#)

[Chapter 764: The Big Bang](#)

[Chapter 765: Chased Down](#)

[Chapter 766: Another](#)

[Chapter 767: Extermination](#)

[Chapter 768: Boltgrass? Or Just a Figment of the Imagination?](#)

[Chapter 769: The Days Of Before](#)

[Chapter 770: The Other Side](#)

[Chapter 771: Convergence](#)

[Chapter 772: Even More Chaos](#)

[Chapter 773: A Strange Man and a Terrifying Needle](#)

[Chapter 774: Why's There So Many?](#)

[Chapter 775: Gathering](#)

[Chapter 776: Spatial Barrier](#)

[Chapter 777: Within the Fog](#)

[Chapter 778: 'Leaving' the Fog?!](#)

[Chapter 779: Leaving Without A Prize](#)

[Chapter 780: The Reaper Approaches](#)

[Chapter 781: Surprise Attack](#)

[Chapter 782: Battle in the Mist](#)

[Chapter 783: Spatial Maze](#)

[Chapter 784: The Killing Shadow](#)

[Chapter 785: Widespread Panic](#)

[Chapter 786: Change in the Pocket, Time to Go](#)

[Chapter 787: The Loss of Control and Destabilization of the Pocket!](#)

[Chapter 788: Two Portals](#)

[Chapter 789: A Decision](#)

[Chapter 790: A Chaotic Battle](#)

[Chapter 791: Battles Everywhere](#)

[Chapter 792: Bai Yunfei's Choice](#)

[Chapter 793: The Other Space](#)

[Chapter 794: A Crushed Stone](#)

[Chapter 795: An Encounter](#)

[Chapter 796: Waging Battle](#)

[Chapter 797: Equally Matched?!](#)

[Chapter 798: The Appearance of Someone Who Shouldn't](#)

[Chapter 799: Soul King](#)

[Chapter 800: A Powerful Enemy!](#)